SUMMER EDITION 1930

AMAZING STORIES QUARTERLY

IN CANADA - SIXTY CENTS

50

Scientifiction Stories by:

Miles J. Breuer, M.D.
Aladra Septama
John W. Campbell, Jr.
A. Hyatt Verrill

VOL. 3—NO. 3
SUMMER, 1930

AMAZING STORIES

Quarterly

Experimenter Publications, Inc.
B. A. Mackinnon, Pres. H. K. Fly, Vice Pres. and Treas.

CONTENTS

Prize Editorial (A Modern Father Speaks) 291
By E. R. Briscoe

Paradise & Iron (A Complete Novel of an Ultra Machine Age) 292
By Miles J. Breuer, M.D.
Illustrated by Wesso

Monsters of the Ray (A Novelette of Archeological Interest) 364
By A. Hyatt Verrill
Illustrated by Paul

The Voice of the Void (An Interplanetary Story) 390
By John W. Campbell, Jr.
Illustrated by Wesso

The Princess of Arelli (Depicting Some Interesting Possibilities of the Moon) 402
By Aladra Septama
Illustrated by Wesso

Your Viewpoint 432

Our Cover

Illustration by Morey

For this issue our cover represents a scene from the novel, "Paradise & Iron," by Miles J. Breuer, M.D., in which our hero from "outside" battles against the tight grasping tentacles of the "Squid," as our hero aptly names the ensnaring machine.

July 20, 1930

AMAZING STORIES QUARTERLY. Published at 184-10 Jamaica Avenue, Jamaica, N. Y. Entered as second-class matter at Jamaica, N. Y., under the act of March 3, 1879. Title registered U. S. Patent Office. Copyright, 1930, by Experimenter Publications, Inc. Editorial and Executive Offices, 381 Fourth Avenue, New York City. Subscription price is $1.75 a year in U. S. and Possessions; $2.25 a year in Canada and Foreign countries; single copies 50 cents each. Publishers are not responsible for manuscripts lost, although every care is taken for their safety.

NEW BOOKS at Magazine Prices!

Each of the following 50c books is of the large size, 8½ x 11½ inches, containing 96 profusely illustrated pages, bound in beautiful colored covers. The contents of any one of them is equivalent to the average 300-page volume, and in ordinary book form would probably cost you from $2.00 to $10.00. Get these exceptional bargains TODAY, *while we still have them in stock!*

YOUR STAR and What It Means to You

By Iris Vorel
International Astrologer

Explains exactly how to tell horoscopes—the Twelve Signs of the Zodiac and what they mean—our Solar System, Moon Signs and what they mean — your characteristics, both good and adverse—rearing of children born under the various signs—famous people born in each month—etc. Contains astounding forecasts of things that are going to happen to YOU; and also predicts the action of the Stock Market. Price, prepaid **50c**

How to Get Into the MOVIES

This is the most authoritative book of its kind ever published. In it 30 famous stars and celebrities reveal the secret ways to fame, fortune and success in the motion picture industry. This book answers 1001 questions about a motion picture career—enables you to analyze yourself scientifically to determine which phase of motion picture work best suits you—and directs you to the short cuts to success in that field. Written by Laura La Plante, Colleen Moore, Norma Shearer, Lila Damita, Ramon Novarro and dozens of other stars. Price, prepaid.. **50c**

RADIO TROUBLE FINDER & SERVICE MANUAL

Ever have your radio reception fail or become distorted just when a big program was on and you wanted to hear every delicate inflection of tone distinctly? That's when this big, new book is worth its weight in gold. In simple words and easy to understand charts and pictures, it shows you how to find and correct any radio trouble quickly. Just the book you need for improving the reception of your set, or for starting a profitable repair business of your own. Shipped, prepaid, to your home for only **50c**

FLYING FOR EVERYBODY

19 Chapters—More than 120 Photographs, Maps and Diagrams. This book is the one complete Aviation Manual which covers every phase of flying from the ground up. Condensed in its pages is the essence of years of experiences of Aviation's foremost authorities. No air-minded person should be without it. Price, prepaid, only **50c**

POPULAR MAGIC AND CARD TRICKS

Mystify your friends; charm the ladies; be the life of any party. Make glass bowls vanish, cards fly, coins disappear. Do hundreds of other magic tricks and games as easily as a professional. Over 200 described and illustrated in this big book on magic. Prepaid, only..... **50c**

NEW SHORT WAVE MANUAL

Experience the thrills of the Short Waves of hearing Europe, Africa or Australia direct as clearly as native stations. This big book, replete with illustrations and How-to-Build diagrams and plans, crowded with 28 chapters by Lieut. Wenstrom, Marshall, Spangenberg and other foremost S-W authorities, represents the last word in authentic S-W data. The most complete up-to-the-minute short wave manual ever published. Brings you more information than books selling at ten times its price. Shipped, prepaid to your home for only..... **50c**

RADIO AMATEURS' HANDIBOOK

Sometimes called the Radio Amateurs' Bible. 30 profusely illustrated chapters bring you 10 How-to-Build articles, with complete instructions and diagrams; new radio wrinkles, DX hints, data on the new tubes, answers to AC problems, and helpful, money-saving ideas for the radio service man. 96 illustrated pages. Large 8½ x 11½-inch size. Beautiful colored cover. Shipped, prepaid, to your home for only..... **50c**

1001 RADIO QUESTIONS AND ANSWERS

If you own a radio, you need this book. Everything you want to know about radio is in it, from "How to Kill Outside Radio Noises," to a clear description of the newest tubes and how to use them. If you have a question on radio, here is your answer and a thousand more. 96 illustrated pages. Large 8½ x 11½-inch size. Beautiful colored cover. Shipped, prepaid to your home for only **50c**

ANATOMICAL MANIKINS MALE & FEMALE

By Dr. David H. Keller

Book measures 6 x 14 inches. Contains 12 large plates of the human body, male and female, with complete descriptions of every muscle, nerve, gland, bone, organ, etc., including reproductive organs of male and female. Books of this kind ordinarily cost from $10 to $25 when bought through medical supply establishments. Price, complete and prepaid, only. **$1**

Also the Following at Only 25c Each

- How to Make It (working in wood, metal, cement, paint, etc.)
- How to Electrify Your Radio Set
- What Radio Set Shall I Buy?
- How to Build the Famous One Knob Set
- 101 Radio Hook-Ups
- The Neutrodyne and All About It
- Cookoo Nuts (A game in book form for parties)
- S'matter Pop (the famous comics in book form)

Buy Them at Your Newsdealer or Mail Coupon AT ONCE!

MAIL TODAY

EXPERIMENTER PUBLICATIONS, Inc.
Dept. 316, 381 Fourth Ave., New York, N. Y.

Gentlemen: Please ship me, prepaid, the books whose titles I have listed below. Remittance is enclosed.

.....

.....

.....

.....

Name.....

Address.....

City.....

State.....

AMAZING STORIES Quarterly

T. O'CONOR SLOANE, Ph.D., Editor — MIRIAM BOURNE, Managing Editor
C. A. BRANDT, Literary Editor — WILBUR C. WHITEHEAD, Literary Editor
Editorial and General Offices: 381 Fourth Avenue, New York City

A Father Speaks

By *E. R. Briscoe*

ONCE upon a time I was a boy. Now I have boys of my own. We are friends, they and I; but there is the gap of years between us, and often I am afraid that, in my dealings with these boys, I lead them to think I have forgotten the time when I was a boy myself and the way a boy feels about certain things. I am careful at times not to let them see how much sympathy I have with the things they are doing and should not be doing. The problem of how to deal with them is often a hard one for me; but, I can not help feeling that it would be harder still should I completely forget my own boyhood and, eventually, lose the boy's point of view.

Perhaps if I had not all these boys about me I should more easily forget, should think less often than I do about the different world in which boys live, feel less strongly than I do about the rights of the boys in the world, in which all of us, old and young, must live together.

When I was a boy I used to be rather in awe of men, particularly of men who seemed to me to have done especially notable things. I could scarcely think of some of these men as being made of the same common clay as myself; I could not imagine myself meeting them except with a reverent air and a deeper reverence of soul.

As a man, I have not much awe or reverence left for most of my fellowmen. Meeting a man, I am likely to think of him as a measurable quantity, as a creature with quite definite limitations. I measure the man and classify him, label him, and tuck him away in my thought as a considered fact. Most people, consciously or unconsciously, do the same. But I do not, I can not, so measure and classify and label a boy. With them I deal circumspectly and on them I pass few judgments. For the boy is one of the imponderables; he is not to be pigeonholed; he is potentiality—the yet unknown thing that is to be.

The man of fifty can be predicted, usually with much accuracy, from the man of forty. But who can tell what manner of man is hidden in the rowdy rascal of ten, what future of accomplishment, of power or of personality waits wrapped up in the gawky youth of fifteen?

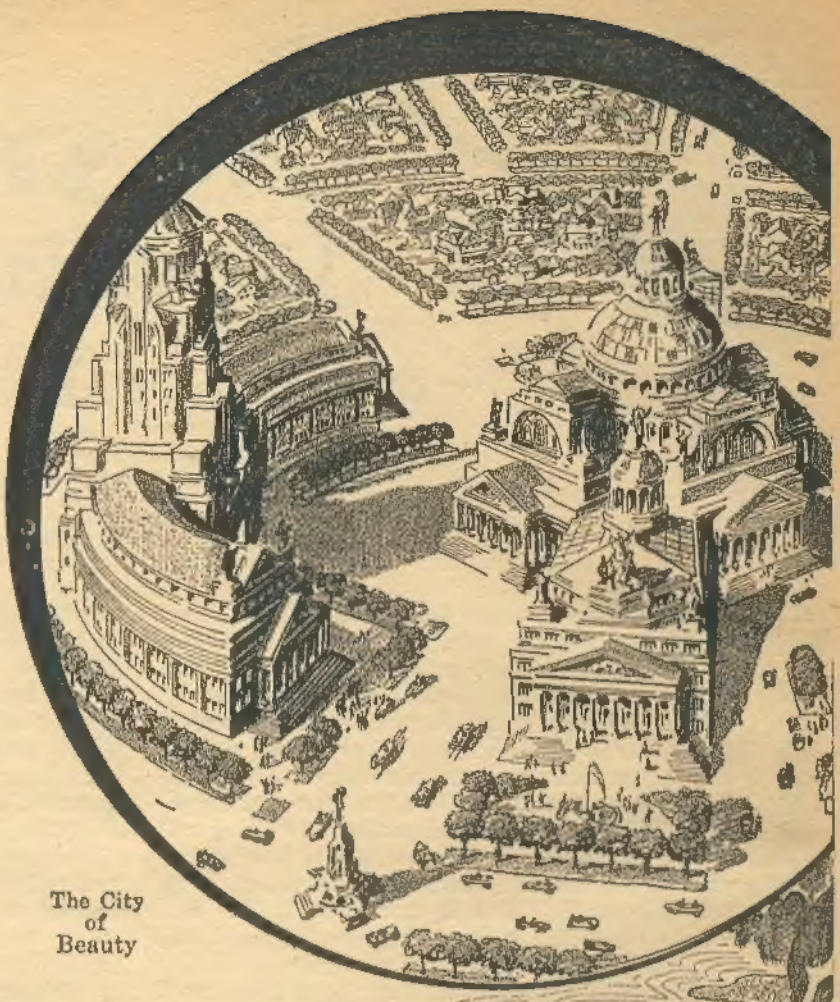
All my adult life I have wondered what the neighbors really thought of George Washington when he was a boy, or of Abraham Lincoln. Probably just about what you think today of your prosperous neighbor's boy. I have often wondered if the neighbors of Robert Burns saw anything essentially different in him than in any other hard-headed Scotch lad?

Take any boy, and what do we know of him, of things he may do, of the man he may become? Statesman, poet, prophet? How can we tell that he is not to be one of these—one of the men whom to know would be glory? Every child is an asset to be valued, also a sacred charge to be guarded and cherished lest evil follow the unforgivable crime of neglecting him.

$50.00 Will Be Paid for Every Editorial Printed Here
PRIZE WINNER
E. R. Briscoe
Route 2
Cooper, Texas
(*See page* 401)

The Next Issue of the Quarterly Will Be on the Newsstands October 20th

¶ *The early models of even a brilliant invention are at best only crude affairs, often within an exceedingly short time perfected beyond recognition. This is just as true of the airplane as it is of the automobile and the telephone and numerous other mechanical inventions that we now take quite for granted. For many years there has been much talk about building thought-machines. Even now there are calculating machines that quickly solve mathematical problems that would otherwise take eminent mathematicians and skilled computators months to solve. And constant improvements are being made on these mechanical "robot" mathematicians.*



The City of Beauty

Paradise and Iron

Airplane View of the Island

CHAPTER I

A New Kind of Ship

WHY anyone so old as Daniel Breckenridge, my grandfather's brother, should keep on working as hard as he did, was a mystery to me. He was about eighty-four; and a million little crinkles criss-crossed on the dry, parchment-like skin of his face where it was not covered by his snow-white beard. But he still went briskly about his duties as shipping manager of a great ship chandler's establishment at Galveston.

Just now he whispered sharply to me, and drew me by the arm behind some bales of canvas in the depths of the vast shipping-room.

"Look! There he is!"

He seemed to be trembling with intense excitement as he pointed toward the great sliding doors.

There, watching the men loading up a truck with a pile of goods consigned to some ship, was an old man, just as old and snowy and crinkled, and just as firm and active as my grand-uncle himself. I looked at him blankly for a moment. He was an interesting looking old man, but I saw nothing to set me off a-tremble with excitement. But my old grand-uncle clutched my arm.

¶ It is a far-fetched vision, perhaps, to think of a time when the thought-machine, which now can be worked with very little supervision, might some time get to a point where it can make suggestions for its own improvement—mathematically figured out improvements, of course—but it is not impossible. And if and when that happens, who can forecast the future of mechanical progress? In this complete novel, Dr. Breuer gives us, in good literary style, a wealth of absorbing elaborations on the possibilities of the machine age, which makes the story one of unusual scientific interest.

The City of Smoke

By

Miles J. Breuer, M.D.

Author of: "The Gostak Distims the Doshes," "The Stone Cat," etc.

Illustrated by WESSO

"Old John Kaspar, the Mystery Man!" he whispered again.

That suddenly galvanized me into action. I took one more good look at him, and got into motion at once.

"Do you think you could hold him here somehow until I get my outfit?" I asked. "I'll be back in ten minutes." It was now my turn to be tense and thrilled.

"It will take them longer than that to load up the truck," he said; "but hurry."

I shook hands with him hastily but fervently, knowing that I might have no further opportunity to do so, and then dashed out after a taxi. While my taxi is rushing me off to my room, I can explain all I know about John Kaspar, the mysterious octogenarian.

Forty years ago, back in the days when the gasoline industry was just being opened up, John Kaspar was the richest man in the world. His father had been a manufacturer of automobiles in Ohio and, foreseeing the importance of gasoline, he had bought up half a county of the most promising oil lands in East Texas. Before his death, oil was found on every acre of it. The son John, the old man at whom we have just been looking, was not interested in becoming a financier; he was working out some original ideas in automobile design. There were some wildly headlined newspaper clippings in my grand-uncle's collection, about John Kaspar's having thrown a reporter bodily into the ash-can because the poor fellow had made his way into Kaspar's shop and was looking too closely at some marvelous new invention on an automobile.

Then all of a sudden, John Kaspar disappeared! One morning the world woke up to the fact that he had been gone for two or three weeks. Investigation showed that he had converted all his properties into liquid securities, and it constituted the greatest single fortune the world had ever seen. With it in his hands, this young man, not yet twenty-five years old, was more powerful than the old Kings of France. This entire fortune had vanished with him. There was a tremendous lot of excitement about it in the papers and magazines; it furnished much conversation; running about and investigating, puzzling and wonderment; alarm that he might have met with foul play, and apprehension that he might have some sinister designs on civilization.

But no trace was ever found of him.

John Kaspar's closest friend was my grandfather, Kit Breckenridge, who has just recently died at the age of eighty-seven, having kept up his practice as a country doctor to the day of his death. The two had been roommates at college, and had been together a great deal in the years following their graduation. My grandfather, at the time, had been very much distressed about his friend's disappearance. To the day of his death he had lived in hopes that he would hear from Kaspar again.

The world forgot about John Kaspar and his vanished fortune long before I was born. I first learned of the story something over four years ago, when I was just beginning my work in Galveston at the State University Medical School. My aged grand-uncle had pointed out the mysterious old man to me, standing by the loading-door of the shipping room at Martin & Myrtle's.

"It's Kaspar!" he had said in a vehement whisper. "I can swear it is!"

Then he told me the story of the millionaire inventor's disappearance, back in the early years of the century.

"He first came in here several years ago," he concluded. "I could take an oath that it is John Kaspar. Your grandfather and I knew him more intimately than did anyone else."

He had studied him awhile—this was four years ago—and then shook his head.

"I wonder what has happened to him? He looks worried and sad, though he still seems to have his old iron constitution. There must be something strange going on somewhere——" My aged relative's voice trailed off reminiscently. After a moment he continued:

"When he first came in here, I hurried up to him with outstretched hand, joyful to see him again. He stared coldly at me, shook his head with an apologetic smile. He insisted that he did not know me, and I could not possibly know him. He was very courteous and very apologetic, but absolutely firm in the matter. Why does he hide his identity?

"He has been here twice since then. I followed his loaded truck both times in a taxi when he rode away. He comes to Galveston in a black yacht, black as ink. He has our truckmen unload the goods on his deck, and the instant the last package has touched the ship, he leaves the dock, with the things piled up on the deck.

"Where does he go? Where does he come from? What can he be up to, and where? And I can't forget that gloomy, worried look on his face."

My grand-uncle's account, and the sight of the wrinkled, but upright old man, with white hair and white beard, aroused my interest. And his pitiful eagerness to know more of his old friend aroused my sympathy.

I decided to go. I got together an outfit of clothes, weapons, preserved rations, first-aid kit, and money; and packed it, ready to seize and run at an instant's notice. My two years of service in the Texas Rangers gave me an excellent background for an adventure such as this promised to be.

I was in my Sophomore year at the Medical College at Galveston when we last saw the aged Kaspar come into the ship chandlers' firm for his boatload of supplies. Then for two years my emergency outfit lay packed and ready, inspected at intervals. I had graduated, received my doctor's degree, and was loafing around, resting and trying to decide what to do next.

THEN one day my grand-uncle drew me behind the bales of canvas and pointed out our visitor. I did not recognize him at once. As soon as I did, I jumped into a taxi, dashed to my room, seized my kit, which was packed in a suitcase, and hurried back.

My grand-uncle stood there watching for me.

"Follow that truck!" he said to the taxi-driver, which the latter promptly did, nearly turning me on my ear.

The truck led us to a dock at the eastern extremity of Galveston island.

The black yacht lay there right alongside the dock, just as she had been described to me. She was a trim, swift-looking craft, about a hundred feet long; but her black color gave her a sinister appearance among the bright white ships around her. And there also was the white-bearded old man walking up the gang-plank. He ascended to the somber deck, and without looking around disappeared down a hatchway.

Knowing that my time was short, I quickly paid off my taxi-driver and hurried up on the dock. Catching hold of the swinging board with my hands, I scrambled up over the edge of it and rolled down on the deck.

"Now I'm aboard the old hearse whether I'm wanted or not," I said to myself. "If it continues the way it has started, this is going to be a lively trip."

Then the astonishing fact came home to me that there was no one anywhere on deck. Ordinarily the deck of a ship leaving dock is a busy scene, with sailors scurrying about, officers giving orders, and passengers at the rail taking a last look back. This deck might as well have been a graveyard; in fact it had somewhat that effect on me with its somber black everywhere.

A big searchlight in the bows rotated slowly on its pivot until its lens was turned squarely on me, and I caught a distorted reflection of myself in its depths; and then it turned back into its original position. It gave me a creepy, momentary impression of a huge eye that had looked at me, stared for a moment, and then looked away again.

In a few moments the ship was slipping along at considerable speed between the jetties, and Galveston was only a serrated purple skyline astern. The small machinery on deck had become quiet; and there remained only the deep and steady vibration of the engines. No one had as yet shown himself anywhere on board. I picked up my suitcase and walked around the deck, up one side and down the other, from bow to stern. At first I walked hesitatingly, and then, as I continued to find no one, I stepped out boldly.

IT was a queer ship. Even though my knowledge of ships was limited to what I had acquired during a few years' residence in a seaport city, I could see that it was an uncommonly built and arranged vessel.

There was no wheel, and no steersman! The usual site of the wheel and binnacle was occupied by a cabin with some instruments in it; nor could I find anywhere any signs of anything resembling steering-gear. How was the ship piloted? Who was watching the course? There wasn't a lookout to be seen anywhere! Yet the ship had picked a tortuous course from its dock down the harbor and between the jetties.

A big, wide hatch in the waist led to the engine-room, if I might judge from the hot, oily smelling draft and the hum of machinery that came up through it. So I explored down there and looked the engines over. They were huge, heavy things, apparently of the Diesel type, but with a good deal of complicated apparatus on them that I had never seen on any Diesel engine and of which I could not guess the purpose. Every moment I expected to see a greasy engineer come around a corner or from behind a motor. My curiosity overcame my hesitation, and I gathered up the courage to search all the niches and corners down there, but found no one. Was I to conclude that the engines were running themselves, without care?

The fore-hatch apparently led into the hold, whose gloomy depths were piled with bales and boxes. Obviously, there was no forecastle. No quarters for a crew! Well, all the crew I had seen so far would not require much space for quarters. The captain's cabin was where it belonged, but there was no one in it; only tables covered with apparatus. Gradually my exploration of the ship changed into a frantic search for some human being.

When I paused in my search, it was dusk. The ship was tearing along through the water at an unusual speed. From the high bow-wave and the churning wake, I would have guessed it at thirty knots. Galveston was but a faint glow on the horizon astern.

There was one place that I had not yet searched, and that was the cabin just ahead of the middle of the vessel. This was the space usually reserved for passengers on ships of this size. Down there it was that the mysterious old Kaspar had gone. Unless I was to conclude that he was the only living soul aboard, that is where the officers and crew must be. If all the officers and men were shut up together in the passengers' cabin, even a landlubber like myself was compelled to pronounce it a strange proceeding.

I opened the hatchway and looked down. My flashlight showed several steps leading to a passageway several feet below. There were three doors on each side and one at the end; and the latter had a line of yellow light under it coming through a crack. That is where Kaspar was at any rate! I went down quickly, threw open one of the doors, and pointed a flashlight into the room. It was empty. The others were the same. I knocked loudly on the door at the end of the passage.

A chair scraped on the floor and the door swung swiftly open. There stood the strange old man, erect as a warrior, but pale with surprise.

"For God's sake, man!" he gasped. "What do you want here? How did you get here. You unfortunate man!"

He clasped his hands together nervously. For the first time it occurred to me that I probably looked dirty and dishevelled, from my scramble up the gangplank.

"For the love of Pete!" I exclaimed. "Who is running this ship?"

"If you only knew," the old man said in a melancholy voice, peering at me closely, "the powers that control this ship, you would implore me to take you back. But I am afraid I cannot take you back. I have some influence, but not enough to do that."

"But I'm not asking you to take me back," I protested. "Don't worry yourself about that end of it."

"You *must* go back before it is too late."

His voice quivered with earnestness.

"Your only hope," he continued, "lies in meeting some ship and putting you across on a boat."

"I'm not going back," I said shortly. "It was hard enough to get here the first time."

He studied me another moment in silence, and then stepped backwards into the room, motioning me in. I looked about eagerly, but my theories fell helpless. He certainly was not controlling the ship from this room. It had four bare walls, ceiling, and floor; a porthole, a bunk, and a washstand. A traveling bag stood in a corner; a few Galveston newspapers were piled on the bunk. That is all!

"Who are you?" he said patiently.

I related to him briefly who I was and why I had come.

"Then you're not a newspaper reporter nor an oil or copper prospector?" He regarded me eagerly.

I merely laughed in reply, for I could see that he was now convinced.

"But that does not alter the danger for you," he went on earnestly. "If we do not get you on a ship before it is too late, you will never see Galveston again."

"Sounds bad!" I remarked, not very seriously impressed. "Tell me about it. What will happen to me?"

He sat and thought a while.

"If it were possible to tell you in a few words," he said abstractedly, "I should do so."

He looked out of the porthole awhile, lost in thought. I studied his profile. Certainly the tall forehead and prominent occiput denoted brain power. Through the circular window I could see the waves rushing backwards between the ship and the rising moon. He finally turned to me again.

"So Kit Breckenridge is dead?" he said softly. "And Dan wanted you to come and find out about me? Good old Dan."

"My great-uncle Dan was very much puzzled as to why you denied your identity to him."

"It hurt me to do that. I was hungry for a talk with him. Can't you imagine how I should like to ask him about people and places? But how can I ever talk to my old friends again? I've often thought of trying it. But there would be endless complications."

"I'll respect your secret, sir!" I argued eagerly. "And I shall behave myself on your island, and keep out of trouble."

"No!" he exclaimed. His voice was troubled, and there was a pained look in his kind old face. "I cannot permit you to go to an almost certain doom."

"I've gone to 'em before," I said cheerfully, "and my skin is still all here. I've been in the Texas Rangers, and can take care of myself."

He shook his head. He had been straight and tall when he marched up the gangplank. Now he was bent, and looked very old.

"Now you have seen me and talked with me," he finally said. "You can be content to go back and tell Dan Breckenridge and your father that you have seen me, and that I am well and happy."

"Mr. Kaspar," I said, striving to conceal the impatience and excitement in my tones; "wouldn't I look foolish coming back with a story like that? They know that much already. Besides: you may be well, but you don't look happy to me. You're under some shadow or in some difficulty. I shouldn't be surprised if I could find some way of helping you."

"You cannot!" he groaned. "You are lost! I know the courage of youth. I am glad that it still exists in the world. But that will not avail you. It is not danger from men that you need fear. There are forces far more subtle and more terrible than you can imagine."

There was such an expression of worried anxiety on his face, and he seemed so genuinely concerned for me, that I regretted to be the cause of such distress. He sighed as I shook my head in reply to his last protest.

"I don't mind admitting to you," I added, "that if I were really anxious to go back to Galveston, waiting to meet a ship would not be my way of doing it. You

must indeed have been lost to the world for forty years if it does not occur to you that I might call an airplane by radio to take me back."

"Well, I'll have to find you a bed then, as it is getting on into the night," he said resignedly, and beckoned to me to follow him. He led the way down the passage and opened one of the doors. As I entered with my suitcase, he bade me good-night.

I FOUND myself in a small cabin with the usual furniture, a bunk, a chair, a washstand. The bunk was made up with a blanket, and I hopped into it at once, taking only the precaution to take with me to bed my service pistol, a Colt .45 automatic. The ship was quiet; the hum and vibration of the machinery were not disturbing; there was only the splashing of the water outside my room. For a long time I could not go to sleep. It was hot, and I was a little seasick.

I tossed around and pondered. The swift, lifeless ship terrified me, now that I was alone in the dark.

Finally the motion of the ship rocked me into a sound sleep. I awoke suddenly and at first was surprised to find the sun shining on me through a round window, and myself fully, though untidily dressed.

Then, recollecting myself, I jumped out of my bunk, extracted a toilet kit from my suitcase, and washed and shaved. I replaced my white collar and creased trousers with a flannel shirt, whipcord breeches and a pair of heavy, laced boots. I put the big service pistol back into the suitcase, but slipped a little .25 caliber automatic into my pocket.

By the time I got myself into shape, I was hungry, and went in search of food. I stole softly to the old man's door, and listened. Sounds of deep breathing indicated that he must still be asleep; my search would have to be made alone. Again I hunted thoroughly through the entire ship, the deck and its structures, the hold, the engineroom, and several cabins like the one in which I had slept. There was no dining room and no galley, and not a sign of food. Of course, if there were no people on the ship, it was quite logical that there should be no food.

For a moment, the after deck engaged my attention and made me forget my hunger. The space ordinarily occupied by officers' quarters was filled by masses of apparatus. Through the windows and doors I could see great stacks of delicate and complicated mechanism, such as I had never dreamed of before in connection with a ship. There were clicking relays and fluttering vanes and delicate gears; little lights would go on and off, little levers would jerk, here and there, in twos and threes and dozens, and then all would be silent and motionless for an instant.

Before I had regarded it very long, hunger drove me to a further search of the ship. Everything was clean and orderly. A peculiarity of the black paint on everything struck me; it had the appearance of the japanning or enameling that is usually found on metal machine parts; it was more like the finish on an automobile than like the paint job on a ship; it gave the suggestion of being machine-processed, perhaps by air brush. And all over the ship there were various bits of mechanical activity: here water running from a hose; there a rotating anemometer; yonder a pump sliding and clicking back and forth. It looked for all the world as though an efficient and well disciplined crew had left but a moment ago.

The venerable old man appeared about eleven o'clock.

"I must ask your pardon for having kept you hungry so long. It is a long, long time since I have entertained guests, and I forgot. I could not go to sleep till nearly morning, and now I have overslept. Come, you must be hungry; though I have not much to give you."

He led the way to his cabin. I looked it over again carefully, thinking that perhaps on the previous evening, during the excitement of the conversation, I might have overlooked the mechanism by which he controlled the ship from his cabin. But there was nothing there.

THE most surprising thing about it all is for me to think back now, and realize how far even my imaginative and astonishing explanation fell short of the actual truth.

He opened the suitcase and set out some preserved fruit, meat, and bread for me; and a bottle of carbonated fruity beverage. In the absence of other evidence, the few little jars of food that he had were eloquent enough testimony that he was the only man on the ship besides myself.

When we came out on deck again, it was nearly noon. Kaspar put his hand on my shoulder.

"Last night I urged you to go back," he began. "I was tired after a strenuous day, and I allowed you to dissuade me from my purpose. Here is your opportunity. We can signal the ship over there, to take you."

"I'm not going back," I said calmly. "I know it is rude of me to force myself on you, and I apologize; but——"

"My dear boy, that is foolish. You know that my only concern is for your own welfare. Personally, I like your company. You remind me of my young days in Texas. For other reasons, that you could never guess, I should like to take you along. But, for your own good, your career, your friends and loved ones——"

"You speak as though this were my funeral," I interrupted.

"It is certain that you will never get back. Knowing what I know—not even many of my own island people know it—I can see clearly that you, of all people, will be in serious danger upon the island."

"Why can't I come back to Galveston with you on your next trip?" I urged.

"Who knows where you or I shall be by that time? I may never live to take another; and you—inside of a week, a young fellow of your type would be a marked man on the island."

"What *is* the danger?"

"I am not even sure myself. I only know that many brave and brilliant people have disappeared forever. Your world needs you; it needs brains, courage, and skill, and you seem well gifted with all of these. Our island does not need these qualities."

His argument did not sound convincing to me; it looked too fantastic to be real. For that matter, has anyone ever been convinced by spoken warnings of a vague danger? Has any old man's warning ever stopped a young man's headlong rush?

"Listen!" I exclaimed. "You have said that you do not mind my company personally. I am therefore going to stick to you."

"But, Davy! I cannot have it on my conscience that I was the cause of you—the cause of a horrible end for you. I am troubled enough about the others, for whose doom I do feel responsible. Come——"

On the previous night, all alone in my bunk in the darkness, I had felt some misgivings and some fear. Even an hour before, what with solitude and hunger, I might have taken advantage of an opportunity to flee. But this old man's face and bearing showed that he was carrying some heavy burden of trouble. A first glance showed that there was wisdom, intelligence and ingenuity there; and the most careful scrutiny could show naught but kindness, benevolence, and sympathy. The mere sight of his face strengthened my resolve to see this adventure through.

Kaspar sighed, as though he were glad that he had done his part and that it had come out this way.

"You're a good boy," he said. It sounded very affectionate and quite old-fashioned. Then, after a few moments' silence:

"You do not have a wife and children at home?"

"Nobody!" I shook my head vigorously at the strange sound of it.

"I suppose it is all right," he murmured, mostly to himself; "One person more or less on the island—what does it matter?"

We met no more ships, though several times we saw smoke in the distance. A number of times we sighted land; now high and rocky, and again flat and sandy with tropical vegetation. From the direction in which we went and the tremendous speed that the boat was making, I concluded that we would soon be in the Caribbean Sea. After I had given up hope of making the old man talk, I sat and watched him staring out over the water. No question about it: he was totally oblivious of any responsibility for navigating the ship.

Toward six o'clock in the evening of the strangest day I ever spent, I saw a light blue line of haze, straight over the bows. This grew darker and more solid as the minutes went by; slowly it broadened and darkened and spread out on both sides of us. So great was the speed of the ship, that it was still twilight when we drew close enough for me to see a row of pinkish granite cliffs in front of us, extending as far as I could see on either side, with a haze of black smoke high in the sky behind them. A volcano? I wondered. The tropical night was closing swiftly down as the ship tore through the water at unabated speed.

Nervously I stood on the deck and searched for some sign of a harbor or a landing-place. Every moment I expected the ship to swerve to one side or another. I began to get worried—for the ship plunged straight on toward the wall of cliffs.

CHAPTER II

An Island and a Girl

As the darkness rapidly gathered, three searchlights in the bows blazed out, lighting up the rocky wall ahead into an intense relief of brightly lighted cliffs and inky black shadows. Straight ahead of us there was a cleft in the rocks, an irregularly vertical band of Stygian blackness, extending from the water up as high as the rays of our searchlight fell. Then, I suddenly grasped the remarkable fact that though the breakers roared on both sides of us, we were in comparatively quiet water; and on ahead was a quiet strip extending right into the darkness of the fissure in the rocks, whereas on either side of it were the foamy white rollers beating against the rocks.

There was, in fact, a huge cleft in the granite structure of the island—for I assumed that it was an island—extending down below the level of the water as well as upwards; and as the rocky bottom sloped away from the shore, this cleft furnished a safe and excellent channel through a dangerous area. In another moment we had slipped into the depths of the gorge.

It occurred to me that to a watcher from out on the sea, it would have seemed that our ship had disappeared suddenly, as though it had been swallowed up. The appearance of the island to anyone approaching as we had done, was bleak, desert, and inhospitable, the last place in the world to invite a landing. And now we were slipping down a secret passage, and were quite hidden from the outside. The whole procedure had the appearance of having been cleverly arranged to conceal whatever the island contained. My temples throbbed with excited anticipation.

Kaspar stood erect and motionless, just forward of the deckhouse, gazing ahead. I judged from his attitude that he was expecting to land soon; so I ran down into the cabin and brought up my suitcase and found as I did so, that my hands and knees were shaky from the sudden and severe strain on my nerves of the previous quarter of an hour. The sudden fright and equally sudden relief left me weak and perspiring.

The luminous rift of the sky above us began to widen; within twenty minutes, the tops of the rocky walls at the sides were low enough to be visible in the illumination of the searchlights; and the channel had widened considerably. The noise had sensibly diminished, and the speed of the ship continued to decrease. Soon the walls became irregular, interrupted by black clefts, then gradually dwindled down to scattered piles of rock. Now there was a beach, white and smooth, no doubt sand: on the left, level to the dim, dark horizon with a glow of the sea in the distance; on the right the narrow strip of bright beach shone in strong contrast with a dense, black wall, which I knew must be a forest.

On ahead, a number of lights glowed brightly, from which long, glimmering streaks of reflection reached toward us. Lights meant people! Kaspar's people! In the course of a number of minutes, I was able to make out a row of brilliant lamps on poles, at the edge of a little wharf built out into the water. I scanned it eagerly with my field-glasses. I could make out a good deal of machinery on the shore, cranes and loading apparatus, and dark, irregular bulks, with wheels and cables. There was also a little group of people on the dock.

I was young and impressionable enough to have gotten a thrill out of even a conventional visit to any foreign port. Imagine then, how I quivered, after my strange day on the mysterious ship, to find myself about to land on an island which was evidently off the established paths of travel, and which already was beginning to promise unusual and mysterious features.

While the ship was slowing down and slowly easing over toward the dock, I had about fifteen minutes in which to study the scene carefully. Only with the corner of my eye did I observe how two steel hoops dropped from the ship over posts on the dock, fastened to chains which spun out from the ship and then reeled back in, drawing the ship to within six or eight feet of the dock; and how the gangplank descended. I looked further on.

The wharf was of wooden planks, and but a little longer than the ship; evidently built for this ship only, and without facilities for permanent docking. On my left, a couple of heavy trucks were backed up toward the ship, with derricks on them, which immediately swung their hooks and cables up over the ship when the latter approached. On the shore, beyond the planking of the wharf were several other big vehicles in motion, backing into position in a row; and one emerging from the darkness beyond the limit of the lights and cutting across the lighted space. Among the big machines were scattered some very small ones; they were indefinite black blotches, and I could make out neither their structure nor their use; they merely gave the impression of being intensely active. A roar and a clatter rose from the mass of machinery; and there was a confusion of huge movement and black shadows.

Not a building of any kind was in sight anywhere. A hundred yards ahead, the intense blackness against the more luminous sky, with occasional flashes of reflection, must have been a forest. To the left, more cliffs towered in the distance.

All of the machinery was opposite the left half of the ship. A line formed by continuing the gangplank straight out from the ship, divided the illuminated ter-

ritory in half, and the left half was a dense, roaring, iron bedlam; God knows what it was all about. There, at the edge nearest me, stood a towering, clumsy thing on caterpillar treads; behind it were humpbacked tractors and things with whirling wheels and gesticulating cranes.

The right half of the dock was clear and empty, except for the little group of people. On beyond them a few automobiles stood beside the road that led backward into the darkness. The people, a tiny, huddled group, looked quite incidental and subsidiary to the huge, rumbling machines.

THERE were about a dozen of the people, both men and women, young and old. One swift glance in the brilliant illumination told me that, and showed me that they were neatly and carefully dressed in elegant, rich-looking clothes. As we drew closer I saw at the front of the group a pretty, dark-haired girl and at her side a stately old lady with snow-white hair. Both had their heads bent backward in their effort to peer eagerly upward at the ship's deck. Then the gangplank thumped down on the dock, and Kaspar walked down without the least change in his measured tread. I picked up my suitcase and followed him; I must confess that it was a little timidly and at some distance.

I remained in the background, leaning against a lamp-post at the edge of the dock; the shadow of the lamp's base kept me in comparative obscurity. I hoped to avoid attracting undue attention to myself, at least until all the regular greetings were over. Kaspar and the majestic old lady came toward each other; first they clasped hands and leaned toward each other in a brief kiss; and then they stood for a few seconds looking into each other's eyes, hands clasped and not a word spoken. Thereupon there was a swirl of dresses and scarfs; Kaspar had a pair of little arms around his neck and a resounding kiss planted on his cheek; and then the impetuous young lady held him off at arms' length and gurgled: "Old granddaddy's back!"

"By Jove!" I thought to myself. "I like her looks and I like her ways!"

Kaspar looked around for me, I suppose wishing to introduce me. But the others in the group were too quick for him. They crowded around him and shook hands and greeted him joyfully. It was evident that he was a beloved man. I could understand but little of what was said, because the clatter of the machinery was too loud at the point where I stood; but the expressions on their faces, clearly lighted by the lamp over my head, spoke louder than words. There was a burly, red-haired man, who might have been a building-contractor or a sea-captain dressed up in society clothes, who seized Kaspar's hand with the grab of a gorilla, and whose Irish features registered such joy and relief that Kaspar's return might have meant the alleviation of all his troubles and the lightening of all his burdens. There was a slip of a young lady in a gorgeous fluffy-ruffly cloud of a dress with a marvelous head of red hair; and she approached Kaspar a little timidly and in awe, but smiled radiantly and seemed genuinely happy to see him back safe. And a young man in full evening dress of the most elegant cut and material, with perfect shirt-front and most delicately adjusted tie, approached in great respect and with the utmost perfection of social grace; but he too was happy to see Kaspar.

"Boy!" I gasped under my breath, looking at him from the top of his silk hat to the tips of his polished pumps; "to think that I came here in whipcords and laced boots, with pistols and a camp-cooking kit!"

Kaspar glanced back at me once or twice, as though apprehensive of having neglected me; but I nodded back that it was all right as far as I was concerned; and he continued to receive greetings while I watched him, giving an occasional glance at the machinery unloading the vessel. The five people whom I have already mentioned seemed to be especially close to Kaspar, for they remained at his side. They were talking animatedly together, and occasionally their voices were carried to me.

In fact, I noted that the mechanical din was lessening somewhat. Every now and then some vehicle would sweep around and disappear in the darkness, up the road. Unloading had stopped, and I surmised that only a few personal packages had been taken off, and that the ship would soon go to some more permanent berth.

As I was watching the last crane-load swing from the deck into a truck, a most creepy looking mechanical nightmare came sputtering by with a noise like a motorcycle. It dashed by so quickly that I had no chance to observe it closely. It looked like a huge motorcycle, seven feet high, with a great, box-like body between the wheels, in which the driver must have been enclosed; and around this box were coiled many turns of black, oily-looking rope. The box was black and looked like a coffin stood on end, and rope was wound in a great coil about its upper end; and two glaring searchlights surmounted it. I don't see how anyone could imagine a more inconsistent, unnatural-looking thing.

The people talking in front of me were startled by its appearance; that was obvious. Their heads went close together, and I could see the burly Irishman slowly shaking his great red shock of hair, for all the world as though he were worried about something again. Finally Kaspar turned and motioned to me.

I came forward a few steps and approached the group. First I was presented to the white-haired old lady, who regarded me wonderingly, but spoke nothing, beyond telling me, with a manner of stately politeness, that she was pleased to make my acquaintance. In the meantime the bright-eyed girl behind her kept watching me intently, except when I was looking directly at her.

"Davy Breckenridge got aboard with me in search of adventure," Kaspar said, by way of explaining my presence; "and I could not frighten him off."

Next I found myself facing the girl. The light behind me shone directly on her; and with an opportunity to get a good look at her I found my original interest sustained and increased. In fact, I had already wasted more extra heart-beats on her than I ever had on a girl before, and I had not even exchanged a word with her. Her wide-open eyes and parted lips betrayed the curiosity and wonderment that I must have aroused in her. She seemed to be between twenty and twenty-five, and came up with an active, springy step. In contrast to the other brilliant and flouncy young lady, she wore a dress of some plain, gray-brown stuff that might have been gaberdine, open at the throat, and with a skirt somewhat longer than were being worn back home just now. I could see that she was enjoying it all immensely, for her face broke out into a glowing smile as Kaspar spoke:

"Mildred, I have brought a young visitor with me, Davy Breckenridge. Davy, my granddaughter, Mildred Kaspar!"

He bowed and stepped back, with the courtly, old-fashioned way of letting the two who have been introduced occupy the center of the stage, so to speak. Uncertain as to whether an introduction in this society included the shaking of hands, I watched, but when Miss Kaspar extended hers, I took it, nothing loath.

SUDDENLY and unexpectedly, a black shadow raced between us and there was a clank over our heads. Kaspar started, looked up, and involuntarily continued

"Look out!" she cried. "It's coming again!"

stepping back. I also looked up. A big, black crane arm was reaching over toward us from the caterpillar-treaded hulk a score of feet away. It hung high in the air, and its chain and bucket, a half ton of dirty iron just off the ground, was plunging directly at us.

There was a little scream from one of the ladies behind Kaspar, and a united scramble to get out of the thing's way. I was not in its path, I soon noted; its swing would just miss me. But Miss Kaspar, in front of me, was directly in its path; in another second it would knock her over and grind her up. For a mere instant I was paralyzed with surprise. In a moment I recollected myself, but the plunging mass was already within two feet of Miss Kaspar.

There was only one thing to do. I took a good grip on the little hand and jerked her swiftly toward me, and at the same time stepped, or rather leaped backwards. I got a momentary glimpse of the look of amazement on her face as she was carried off her balance, but I was compelled to look behind me to keep from stepping off backwards into the water. However, I was able to guide myself to the lamp-post and back up against it; and I caught the staggering girl into my arms, for otherwise her momentum might have carried her on off the edge of the dock. It was a delicious armful; but I had no time just then to enjoy the thrill of my first experience in that line. I hastily let go and stood her on her feet, and looked for the swinging shovel.

There was six feet of space to spare between us and the line of its swing. Kaspar and the three people with him stood on the opposite side of its path, motionless as though they had been suddenly petrified; and there was a straggling line of people back toward the cars, also petrified. Miss Kaspar was looking at me with a puzzled expression on her face, but my gaze at the swing-

ing bucket made her turn. It reached the end of its swing in a few seconds, and was coming back.

It came toward us now with a creak, over our heads, and its path was further toward the water—nearer to us. The pair of huge iron jaws was open and turned toward us; and it was coming fast.

"I wonder what's the idea?" I grumbled. "Has the fellow gone suddenly crazy?"

I had been trying to figure out, in swift flashes of thought that seemed to hang slowly in fractions of a second, whether the operator of the machine was trying to reach the pile of freight on our left, or whether he had lost control of the machine, or had parted with his wits. When Miss Kaspar saw it coming, she turned toward me with a little scream.

It came on with gathering momentum, while I was trying to figure out a way of dodging it without jumping into the water. There was no use trying to run ahead of it or to get across its path; it was moving faster than we could move. A dozen feet away were Kaspar and his people, open-mouthed, paralyzed with fear, but unable to stir to help us. I had almost made up my mind that it would have to be a plunge into the water, when I got another idea.

Without a word—there was no time for it—I seized Miss Kaspar around the waist and lifted her off her feet; I remember making a mighty effort and then being surprised at how light she felt. With my left arm around the lamp-post, I swung her and myself out over the water, bracing my feet against the edge of the dock. The bucket swung by with a rush of oily-smelling air. I breathed a sigh of relief and was about to swing her back to her feet, when she plucked at my shoulder and cried:

"Look out! It's coming again!"

It had stopped with a clank and was swinging swiftly back. By this time the girl had begun to get heavy, and my left arm around the post, which carried the weight of both of us, was beginning to ache. She noted my efforts to ease the strain and tried to reach past me to get hold of the post.

"You can't do that," I said, "but it will help if you hang on to my neck."

She did so at once, without hesitation. I wonder that I did not lose my head and drop off into the water from sheer excitement.

I was revived suddenly by a hot pain in my left arm and the sound of my sleeve tearing. The bucket had swung by again and grazed my arm. Its next swing would bring it outside the line of lamp-posts and brush us off into the water. I felt a keen appreciation for the feelings of the bound man in Poe's "Pit and the Pendulum" story.

"It's a ducking for us," I said. "Can you swim?"

She laughed.

"I'm at home in the water," she replied.

"Down we go then!"

I stopped so that she could slide down and then lent her a hand to lower her into the water; when I heard her splash I started down myself. However, the big, black shovel was so close to my head that I got frightened and let go, and fell several feet into the water. I went under for a considerable distance, but came up readily and saw Miss Kaspar clinging to a pile. I reached for my hat, which was floating near. We were between the dock and the ship, and could see nothing but the glare of the lamp above us with the blackness of the dock on one side and the hull of the ship on the other, also black as Erebus. The gangplank was directly overhead.

"This is worse than a trap!" I exclaimed. "We've got to get out of here quick!"

I watched her anxiously until I saw her strike out easily and gracefully, apparently but little impeded by her clothes. By a natural impulse we headed toward the stern of the ship, away from the machinery. In a couple of dozen strokes we were clear of the wharf and the ship, and out in open water.

"Now, where do we go from here?" I asked, as we paused to look back. She turned around to look at me, and laughed. There was just enough light from the distant lamps so that I could see the water trickling down over her face from little wisps of hair. She was positively bewitching; the light gleamed brightly from the row of pearly teeth, and her eyes sparkled in fun. At that moment I did not know the cause of her laughter, for I was puffing hard keeping myself afloat in my heavy clothing. Later I learned that it was my tendency to lapse into the latest metropolitan idiom that had furnished the amusement.

"We are safe now," she said. "Fifty yards to our left is the beach, with only a few rocks between us and the folks."

As we swam for the shore I kept my eyes on the dock; but the machine that had caused the trouble, and its crane, were not visible to me. I was thoroughly winded when we arrived at the beach, for my clothes and accoutrements were indeed a heavy load to keep on top of the water. Miss Kaspar stopped at some distance from the shore, with only her head and shoulders out of the water.

"Now you go on ahead," she ordered, with what seemed to me an overdone sternness; "and keep to your left. I shall follow you."

"What a queer code of ethics!" I exclaimed. "It's up to the hero to see that the rescued lady is safely out of the water before he gets out."

"If you don't go on, we'll be here all night. And if you dare to look back, I'll never speak to you again!" This time there was a note in her voice that sounded as though there might be tears near at hand.

"Oh what a mutt!" I groaned at myself. To her I shouted:

"All right! I'll learn after a while. It's only the first hundred years that I'm slow." Another peal of laughter behind me testified that all was well again.

THE black shadows among the rocks made the way a little treacherous; but it was not long before I came suddenly out of them and to the edge of the dock. Kaspar and his three companions were at the edge of the dock where we had jumped off, looking intently down at the water; six or eight others were moving slowly back from the cars toward the water. The big, ugly machine was gone; in fact only four loaded trucks were left of the mob of machinery that had been there only a short while before. The people spoke not a word. Their rigid attitudes, their white faces and tight lips alarmed me. The big, red-headed man had his fists clenched; and in a moment he began pacing back and forth on the dock. Kaspar stood with his head bowed, looking completely crushed.

My appearance with Miss Kaspar behind me was like a thunderbolt among them. She gave them a silvery little hail. Kaspar clutched out with both hands, and his eyes stared wide open out of the snowy expanse of his beard. Mrs. Kaspar held out her arms; it seemed that it was to me, but there was a swish behind me and a shower of water and Mrs. Kaspar was holding a wriggling, wet bundle. It was hard to tell from which one of them the squeals of joy came.

The big Irishman stopped in his tracks and stared with open mouth; and the elegantly dressed young man, though struggling manfully to preserve his dignity, was showing his agitation by rubbing the back of one hand in the curved palm of the other. There was a

kind of astonishment about them, as though we had risen from the dead. Only the freckle-faced young lady with the sunset hair seemed to exhibit joy unalloyed, by dancing up and down and sidewise. Kaspar laid his hand on his granddaughter's shoulder, but the embrace of the two women showed no signs of loosening. He finally turned to me and held out his hand:

"Davy, now that you have saved our baby from that awful thing, nothing can come between us."

His voice trembled, and the hand that I held trembled.

"I can't see that I did much," I answered with embarrassment. "That was a commonplace little accident." Although in my mind, I was wondering if it really was an accident and commonplace.

In the meanwhile, wraps and scarfs had been requisitioned among the crowd and the two ladies had hustled Miss Kaspar away. Kaspar roused himself and again moved with that almost military air of his.

"Here are two more friends I want you to meet, Davy. This is Mr. Cassidy."

The big, red-headed man grabbed my hand with a powerful sweep. He must have been very much moved, to let a little brogue slip away from him; for never again after that did I hear him use it.

"Ye'rr a foine bhoy, an' quick an' brave." he said, from the uttermost depths of his throat. "Never in my life have I been so sick as during those few moments when our little one was in danger."

"Thank you. I don't think I've done anything."

Then came Mr. Kendall Ames, turning his head back to look after Miss Kaspar as he approached me. He seemed hardly able to pull his eyes off her. The perfection of his manner and the faultlessness of his attire combined into one harmonious effect, that hushed my usual tendency to facetiousness and commanded my unadulterated admiration. Such a product on a tropical island.

Though I could detect no flaw in his perfect speech and behavior, except possibly a slight pallor and the slightest of tremors, still it seemed that he was just a little constrained and embarrassed.

"When I express to you my gratitude for your wonderful act," he said softly, in a well modulated voice, "I am merely voicing what hundreds of others will feel. You have saved our most popular lady from a terrible fate."

"I am sure that you exaggerate," was all that I was able to get out of myself.

But they were not exaggerating. Some real emotion possessed all of these people. There was something beneath the surface here. If this occurrence with the machine had been merely accident, why were they all so tense about it?

However, I did not have much time to speculate about it just then. The day had been hot; but the night was cold, and I began to shiver in my soaked clothes, and my teeth chattered. Also Kaspar discovered that my left arm was bloody. I had been holding it behind my back, until he took it and examined it. The sting of the salt water in it was making me writhe. He raised it to the light in grave concern.

"It isn't much," I said. "Just the skin scraped off. If you can find me something dry to wrap up in so that I won't shiver my joints loose, I'll have this arm dressed in a jiffy."

The three of them watched me with great interest as I opened my suitcase, took a bandage from the first-aid kit, and did a fair job of dressing with one hand.

"Bad omen!" I laughed. "The first thing I use out of my outfit is the first-aid kit."

In a moment I wished I had not said it, for over Kaspar's face came that same brooding, gloomy look that he had worn most of the afternoon on the ship.

Some robes were produced for me to put over my shoulders, apparently taken from automobiles. I was to ride in Ames' car, as Kaspar's would only hold the three of them, while Mr. Cassidy had already left with his daughter.

"That's the red-headed girl, I'll bet!" I thought to myself.

Ames was very eager, and conducted me to the car as though I had been a royal guest. I felt like the hero of a movie drama. There in the car was another young man, dressed with the same splendor as was Ames; and there followed another formal introduction. I can laugh now, but I could not then. It was all quite grave and earnest: I, soggy, bedraggled, with a bandaged arm and a blanket over my shoulders like a Choctaw chief, and feeling tremendously clumsy and out of place in all this drawing-room courtesy; and bowing to me, extending his hand, and gushing forth great volumes of gratitude was Mr. Dubois in evening dress and with manner so perfect that he would have been a model for the evening crowd at the Ritz café.

The car had no steering wheel, and no one drove! Ames tinkered around with something on the instrument board when he got in; and in a few moments we were off.

We seemed to be running through flat, open country, over a paved road. My recollection of the early part of the ride was that it had been through dense blackness with rushing echoes about—a forest, no doubt. Now, moment after moment, more lights became visible, until there were great masses and long avenues of them.

CHAPTER III

The "City of Beauty"

"WHAT city is that?" I asked eagerly, forgetting my wet clothes and the cold wind. Both of the men seemed surprised at the question.

"Why—that is—*our* city!" Ames protested in the tone of a person making a superfluous explanation, "where we live."

"I mean, its name?" I persisted.

"Its name?" Ames seemed puzzled. "Why do you ask for a name? Walter, have you ever heard its name?"

Mr. Dubois shook his head in courteous silence.

"What island is this, then?" I asked.

"I'm afraid I do not know its 'name' either," Ames replied. He was apologetic and anxious to oblige, but helpless. "You see, we never had occasion to speak of it in such a way as to require a *name*."

"*Where* is it then?" I demanded, growing more surprised every moment.

"Where——?" he seemed totally at a loss.

"Which way and how far from Galveston? Or where in relation to Cuba or Central America?"

"I'm sorry," said Ames, in a queer, embarrassed tone. "I know nothing of those places. We are all so occupied with pursuits of our own that we are not interested in—what you speak of. It would serve no good purpose to go into those matters."

"You are a stranger," volunteered Dubois. "We've never had a stranger here before. It isn't considered the—ah—proper—ah—taste, you know, to show an interest outside the island."

His reply, which gave me the impression of having been spoken in the fear that someone would overhear it and make trouble for him if it wasn't properly made, silenced me for a while. They had been so cordial and sincere, until I had begun to ask questions, that I had at first gotten an impression of a high degree of culture and intelligence; and now this sudden seizure of embarrassed constraint, along with the strange limita-

tion of their mental horizon, gave me a vague impression of mental abnormality.

Soon we were driving up a broad, paved street, lighted by rows of electric lights; and illuminated windows were visible among a wealth of black trees. Being driven about a strange city at night is always confusing. I had impressions of meeting numerous headlights and dark vehicles; there were people fitfully revealed for a moment by moving lights, and glimpses of people upon verandas among trees. For a couple of miles there was block after block of the same thing. Finally we drove up to the curb behind another car, from which the Kaspars were alighting. Kaspar led me through an arched hedge, across a shadowy front-yard garden, into the house. The young men drove away, courteously wishing me good night, and promising to see me tomorrow.

The house astonished me. Instead of having traveled nearly a thousand miles across the Gulf of Mexico, I might merely have walked over into one of the better residence sections of Galveston or any other American city. The house was of glazed face-brick; there were mahogany furniture, electric-light fixtures, a phonograph, velvet rug, a piano. On a small drawing-room table were several books and a newspaper opened across them.

In the middle of the big living-room stood Miss Kaspar covered from head to foot with a cloak; about her head was a scarf through which showed wet spots.

Yes, she was beautiful. During my drive, I had recollected the thrilling feel of the slim body in my arms, and I feared lest my quick glance in the garish lighting of the dock had left too much to my imagination. But the tempered illumination of the room showed me the soft cheeks delicately colored with a bloom that the sea-water had not affected, the brightest of brown eyes, and the red lips that arched in a smile of welcome. As my gaze swept eagerly over her, the smile faltered, and a flush came and went. But she threw her head back with a little toss, and the smile came back, radiant as a summer sunrise, and the brown eyes looked into mine.

"I couldn't let them shoo me off to bed until I had thanked you for saving me from that horrid thing, and welcomed you to our home," she said in a soft, Southern voice, extending her hand to me.

She spoke no other words, but the smile was given so generously, and the eyes met mine so frankly, that I was quite taken off my feet. By the time I had recovered sufficiently to stutter an acknowledgment her grandmother had hurried her away.

"Horrid thing!" she had said, as though there had really been some serious danger. Obviously she was taking the incident very seriously.

"You had better go to bed too," Kaspar said to me. "After your ducking and your cold ride, you need to be careful. I must hurry to a conference with some people who are anxious to see me. Here is your room. In the morning, you will probably be up early and want to look about outdoors. Yonder is the way out to the veranda, and we shall meet you there."

I looked after the departing old man in an agony of curiosity. Would I not have the opportunity of asking a single question?

A mahogany bed, high with soft, white bedding, a chiffonier, in the corner a lavatory with hot and cold water, two brilliant landscape paintings on the wall—such was the place in which I would spend my first night on a savage and tropical island. This was the rough life for which I had prepared myself with sleeping-bag and pistols! I was reluctant to accept the realization that I was in a city that was unknown to the world and not down on the maps and in the travel books. However, no other conclusion was possible, for the cities of this region, excepting those of the American zone on the isthmus, were dreary, miserable places, not worthy of the name of city.

I AWOKE to see the sun shining brilliantly on a thick mass of foliage outside my window. The air that came in was cool and pleasant. As I began to move about, my arm felt sore and stiff, and was caked with dried blood. However, I dressed it afresh, and got out my razor and shaved. Ruefully I surveyed my silk shirt and cream-colored trousers; they were hopelessly unfit to appear in. There was nothing to do but to put on the laced-boots, flannel shirt, and whipcords, stiff with dried sea-salt. I knew I should feel uncomfortable and conspicuous in them among the dress-coats and delicate frocks, but no more so on account of my clothes, than on account of a sort of inferior feeling in the presence of their pretty manners and culture.

"Breakfast!" said a small placard, hung from a push-button over a small, mahogany table. I was hungry enough, and the button's invitation to be pushed was irresistible. I pressed it, whereupon a panel opened in the wall, from which proceeded the sound of whirring gears; and in two or three minutes a tray appeared, on which were eggs, bacon, coffee, and rolls. It traveled toward me on a canvas belt over a revolving roller. I made short work of the food, for I was overpowered by eagerness to get outdoors and see the town by daylight.

Then I eagerly made my way out on the porch and looked around. I saw a broad, paved street, lined with great masses and billows of luxuriant tropical foliage into which the houses were sunk almost out of sight; here and there a fawn-colored wall, a red-tiled roof, or a row of gleaming windows peeped out of the dense verdure. Again it struck me that it might be the wealthy residence portion of any city in the south of the United States. Had the black ship gone in a circle and brought me back to Florida or Louisiana? No, that was impossible, for I had watched the course too intently during the previous day, and it had always continued southeast. Undoubtedly I was on some unknown island in the tropics; for nowhere in the United States would people talk and act so queerly as these people did.

It was a rich and beautiful picture. Palms, ferns, and conifers seemed to predominate among the flora; thick, dark-green, waxy leaves and light, lacy fronds were plentiful. There were great, cream-colored flowers shaped like a jack-in-the-pulpit, as big as my head; big, scarlet hoods and spikes; white, buttercup-like flowers as big as my two hands, with purple centers.

I got out on the concrete sidewalk and started up the street on a little walk. However, before I had gone a hundred yards, I thought of the unusual appearance that my salt-crusted, rough-looking clothes presented in such an elegant residence section, and my timidity drove me back toward Kaspar's house. Just before I reached it, at the gate of the neighboring house, there was a flutter of white, and there stood the freckle-faced, Titian-haired young lady of yesterday evening.

"Ooooh!" she exclaimed. "Good morning! You surprised me!"

"Good morning," I replied, trying to be as courtly as I had seen Ames and Dubois act, but feeling silly at it. "You are Miss Cassidy?"

"I am Phyllis—Phyllis Cassidy. How is Mildred?" she looked toward the house.

"I haven't seen her this morning, but she looked all right to me last night."

I chuckled to myself at having unconsciously stated what I so warmly felt; for Miss Kaspar certainly *had* looked all right to me the night before.

"Come, I'll go over with you. That was perfectly grand of you to save her!" she gurgled ecstatically. "I've read about brave things like that and seen them on the stage—but to think that I should ever see it real—and to talk to a man who dared to do such a thing!"

She drew a deep breath of delight.

"And everyone was terribly frightened that awful things would happen."

"You have a beautiful city here," I interrupted, for I was getting embarrassed. "What is its name?"

"Its name!" Her flow of words stopped in surprise. "The name of the city? I do not know if it has a name. Sometimes we say: 'The City of Beauty'."

"And what island is this?"

"What island? You want a name for the island too? You queer man. Why should it have a name? It's just 'the Island.' It is very large, and I've never seen all of it and shouldn't want to see all of it. There are woods and mountains and ugly black and oily places——"

"*Where* is this island?" It may have been rude to interrupt, but otherwise no progress was possible. I could see that she had vast possibilities as a rapid-fire conversationalist.

"*Where?* Why *here!* Where *could* it be?—But father warned me that you might talk like this, and so I'm not shocked. You are a stranger. We do not discuss things about the island. It is not nice. There are so many other things. I've just had a big tapestry hung at the *Artist's Annual;* you know tapestry design is my serious work. That made my father very proud. And see this little medal? That is the swimming honor for the Magnolia District, and this is the second year that I've held it——"

About there I sank in the deluge of words; but she prattled on. Finally, I figured out something with which to interrupt again, wondering, however, how long she could keep it up if she were not interrupted.

"You have some rather amazing machinery here," I remarked. "I should like to see more of it."

Her delighted expression faded instantly, and she shuddered.

"Machines are disgusting things," she said, curling up her little freckled nose. "We do not talk about them. But I'm not shocked at you. Daddy told me not to be, because you do not understand the island. Just think how lucky you are, coming today. This afternoon is the Hopo championship ride. I am so excited about it, because I know Kendall Ames will win it."

A rapt expression came into her face, and she clapped her transparent white hands childishly.

"You're going, aren't you?" she asked eagerly.

We turned into Kaspar's gate, and there on the porch was Miss Kaspar. And at once I lost interest in Phyllis and Hopo, whatever that was.

"I suppose," I replied mechanically, my eyes on the figure of Miss Kaspar standing on the porch.

"Oh, you must!" She put her hand on my sleeve and started off on another long flood of talk. My conception of courtesy compelled me to stand there listening, with her hand on my arm, and groan inwardly while Miss Kaspar turned and walked into the house, disappearing from my sight without a word to me. If it all looked as I felt, it must have been a ridiculous picture. I wished Phyllis at the bottom of the sea. Her childish prattle had kept me from seeing Miss Kaspar again. She followed Miss Kaspar into the house, and I wandered disconsolately about the yard. I thought that it was very strange that Miss Kaspar had not spoken to me; in fact she had acted as though she had not seen me at all.

I SPENT most of the forenoon wandering about the yard and through the house. I wondered what had become of everyone, and why I had been thus left to my own resources. I found the house a mixture of the commonplace and the marvelous. Familiar, ordinary furniture, such as I have already mentioned, contrasted with the automatic cooking going on in the kitchen by means of timing-clocks and thermostats and without human attention. The "house-cleaning" device was especially interesting to me.

I was attracted to the drawing-room by a humming noise; it came from a black enameled affair like an electric motor, just beneath the ceiling. It was moving slowly about the ceiling, dragging something through the room after it; and as I watched I noted that it was covering the room systematically by means of a sort of "traveling-crane" arrangement. The things hanging from the motor were light hoses with expanded endings, and the surprising thing about them was that they moved and curled about this way and that, like an elephant's trunk or a cat's tail. They reached here and there, poked into corners, under chairs, and around objects; and I could hear the sound of the suction as their vacuum cleaned up the dust. When the room had all been cleaned, the apparatus receded into an opening in the wall, and hid out of sight.

"If this is the way they keep house," I thought, "I can understand how they can raise such flowers as Phyllis for tapestry design and swimming championships."

It was nearly noon when Ames appeared, clad in a gorgeous scarlet jockey uniform, with shiny boots and golden spurs, and in his arms a great bouquet of flowers. I was in a distant corner of the lawn, and watched him as he stood bowing to Miss Kaspar, who appeared in response to his knock.

"I trust that my fair lady of Magnolia Manor is enjoying good health," he said with pompous graciousness. "I am on my way to the Hopo field, and if you will accept this token from me and wear one of the flowers, I know it will bring me victory."

I could not hear her reply, but I could see that she thanked him formally. Then Ames saw me and came over to me.

"If you have no afternoon suit with you," he said looking me over, "you are welcome to one of mine. You and I are of about a size. I'll send one over."

I had to admit that it was considerate of him to think of it. But I felt resentful because I had to accept a favor from him; for what was I to judge from what I had seen, except that there must be some intimate relationship between him and Miss Kaspar?

"Lunch is ready!" Miss Kaspar called to me in a voice that sounded coldly polite; and she did not seem to notice me as I came in.

No one waited on the table at luncheon, at which the four of us sat. Everything was on the table when we sat down, and we left the things there when we were through; and the next time I glanced at the table they were gone, removed, doubtless, by some mechanism. I had already seen enough to be convinced that the servant problem did not exist on the island. The only servants were machines.

"Ha! ha!" laughed Miss Kaspar, but would not meet my eyes. "I see that you have spent a pleasant morning. Phyllis is a jolly little girl, isn't she?"

I was taken aback. Where was the Miss Kaspar who had given me her hand the evening before? She looked just as lovely as ever; but she had no eyes for me at all, and that engaging cordiality and frankness that had impressed me far more than her beauty were gone. But then, who was I, to expect to be noticed by her,

when Ames had brought her a bale of flowers as big as herself? My sphere had always been action and not women; a horse on the range, or something doing in a laboratory were familiar to me; but with women I was clumsy and incompetent. The present reminder of that fact was the most unpleasant one I had ever had. Ames seemed to be the real hero among the ladies; and Miss Kaspar was obviously the fortunate lady.

Just then there was a click and a rush of air at one side of the room. A panel snapped open and a package dropped out; and the panel clapped loudly shut again.

"Clothes for you from Kendall Ames," Kaspar announced. "I imagine this is something new to you. Ames puts them into a tube at his home; they go to a central distributing station which sends them here."

I went resignedly into my room to put on the clothes. The interest seemed to have been taken out of things for me. But I intended to go with them to their Hopo, or whatever it was; at least I should have an opportunity to see more of the people of the island. When I came out again, there were several young people on the porch, and more of them in a large car at the curb. They were ready to go to the scene of the sport, and had come to take Miss Kaspar with them.

They were interesting folks. The young men wore dark coats and light trousers, and were very courtly in speech and manner, quite in contrast with the direct and forward manners of the youth that I had been accustomed to. The girls wore light, fluffy dresses in pale shades of blue, orange, yellow, and pink; and they were full of smiles and curtsies and little feminine ways that charmed me very much. I confess I preferred them to the blunt and callow ways of our modern girls.

Amazement surged up in me again. Here I had set out for a tropical island, expecting to find jungle and savagery; at most some squalid mixture of Indian and Iberian. Yet, here was a freshness and delicacy of human culture, a flower of human beauty, a development of the fine things in human looks and manners, of which I had never seen the like in the most favored urban circumstances that I had ever known.

THE young people sat for a moment and chatted trivialities; while some who had remained in the car played on a guitar-like instrument and sang. Their voices were well trained and their playing was clear and soft. They seemed in every way clean and beautiful young people; and with the deep-green lined street, the bright houses and brilliant flowers, it all seemed rather like a dream of beauty.

"I'll get out Sappho for your first," Miss Kaspar cried to her grandfather; and the affectionate glow that lighted up her sunny face, as she glanced at him, caused a pang within me for being left out of things. I had to remind myself that last night's rescue did not necessarily give me any special rights nor privileges; and that I ought to be thankful for the kindness that had been bestowed upon me last night. She hurried out of the back door; and "Sappho" turned out to be a greenish-black roadster, with wheels four feet high, an extraordinarily large radiator appropriate to hot climates, headlights set in the top of the hood—and no steering wheel! The machine fascinated me so that I stood about it curiously instead of mixing with the group of young people.

In fact, I was a little nettled at the people. They seemed to take no particular nor unusual interest in me. Upon introduction they were very gracious; but they immediately took me for granted as one of them. No one asked me where I came from, nor what my country was like, nor how I liked it here. Like a group of frolicking children, they seemed intent on the interests of the moment, and accepted everything as it came. So, I decided to ride with Kaspar in his Sappho.

I waited for some minutes for Kaspar to appear. Then I walked all around the curious vehicle, and I finally decided to get into the car and wait there for Kaspar. So I climbed in and sat down, with a queer feeling at the complete absence of the steering wheel and gear-shift levers. However, on the dashboard were a great many dials; and something was ticking quietly somewhere inside the machine.

Then there was a "clickety-click" and a whirr of the motor, and the car moved gently away from the curb. It swerved out into the street, gathered speed, and then turned to the right around a corner. It slowed down for two women crossing the street, and avoided a truck coming toward us. It gave me an eerie feeling to sit in the thing and have it carry me around automatically.

Then it suddenly dawned on me, that here I was alone in the thing, on an unknown street, in an unknown city, racing along at too high a speed to jump out, and rapidly getting farther away from places with which I was familiar. How could the machine be controlled? Already I was completely lost in the city. How and why had the thing started? I had been exceptionally careful not to touch anything, and was sure that no act of mine had set it off. But I was rather proud that I did not lose my head; I leaned back to think. This was not my first emergency.

The car was carrying me rapidly through a beautiful residence section of the city. I could not help looking about me. It was a veritable Garden of Eden, and all the more beautiful for the added touch of human art. The lawns were smooth and soft, with half-disclosed statuary among the shrubbery, or fountains at the end of vistas. Homes spread over the ground or soared into the air like realized dreams, without regard to expense or material limitations. But, every few minutes my mind came back with a jerk to my own anomalous position.

I examined the dials on the instrument-board closely. There were ten of them, and they had knobs like the dials on a safe-door, or like the tuning dials on a radio receiving set. Some of them had letters around the periphery and others had figures. I looked for something that said "stop" or "start", but there was nothing of the sort, nor even any words of any kind. There were a number of meters, but a speedometer was the only one whose use I recognized. The whole proposition looked about as impossible to me as a Chinese puzzle.

The more I thought about it, the more I thought that my only hope was to try manipulating the dials. That was the only way to learn something about managing the car. I did so: I twirled a knob at random and waited expectantly. Nothing happened. At least, not immediately. After a few moments, however, the car stopped, turned around, and started off in the opposite direction. I should have gotten out of it while it stood still for an instant; but for the moment my curiosity was whetted, and I wanted to try the dials again to see what would happen. Anyway, before I recollected myself, the car was speeding in the opposite direction at too rapid a rate to permit my getting off.

If I had hoped to get back to Kaspar's this way, I was disappointed at the first corner, where the car turned to the right, drove around a block and was soon spinning along in its original direction.

"You're a stubborn jade, Sappho," I grumbled aloud. "We'll have to see what we can do with you."

I now perceived where I had made my mistake: I had not noted which dial I had turned nor how I had

turned it, when I had reversed the car, and I was unable to repeat the movement. So, the next time, I carefully turned the first dial to the letter "A". There was no effect at all. I moved the second dial to "A". A curious fluty whistling followed; it proceeded from the hood, and varied up and down several octaves of the musical scale, with a remote resemblance to rhythm and melody. Before it died down, I sank back and gave up. A little reflection showed me that with ten dials and twenty-five letters or figures to a dial, there were several million combinations. It was hopeless.

FOR a moment the scenery distracted me again. I was bowling along comfortably, and did not seem in any particular danger.

The buildings I was passing seemed to have grown in response to a creative artistic impulse just as luxuriantly and as untrammeled as the dense tropical vegetation among which they stood. Dream palaces they seemed, with colonnades and sweeping arches and marble carvings gleaming in the sun.

Such a city could be possible only by means of vast wealth, highly advanced culture, and unlimited leisure on the part of the inhabitants. Where did the wealth come from? I could not see any place where any business was being transacted nor any industry going on, although my ride covered every section of the city that afternoon. I did pass through a small and quiet shopping district; but here there was no display, and its purpose was evidently not that of selling and making money, but rather that of supplying needs and desires.

Gradually an uncomfortable feeling began to get the best of me. In vain my reason told me that there was no real danger, and that I was having a good time. I felt hopelessly at the mercy of the machine, and I did not like it. I began to yield to an unreasoning panic; it made me think of how my hunting-dog had behaved the first time I had tried to give him a ride in an automobile.

But my common sense and practical experience kept insisting that automatic machinery was not always dependable. The thing might spill me somewhere and break my neck. It might carry me to some distant part of the island, and then run out of fuel so that I would be unable to get back. The thought of being lost in some wild, unknown place began to make me desperate. Last night's episode at the dock made me suspect that all was not smooth on this island; that there may be people somewhere who were unfriendly toward this highly cultured community, to which Kaspar belonged. Suppose the machine should carry me in among them?

A medley of the most unpleasant grinding and rasping noises came out of the machinery. I could have imagined that it was gnashing its teeth at me. It increased its speed to a terrific rate, until the wind stung my face, and a sinking feeling came into my stomach, whether from fear or from the motion, I do not know. Then it quickly fell back into the ordinary speed again. My next effort caused a sudden stop that threw me into the windshield. I saw stars and things went black for a moment; and then I was traveling along again at thirty miles an hour. I tried it over a dozen times, producing hurried turns around the block, noises, jerks and skids, with numerous dangerous performances; but never again was I able to make it stop.

I was soon worked up into a state in which I would have been willing to risk everything in order to get back to Kaspar's home. I was frantic to get out of the thing. Yet, I could not quite make up my mind to jump. The recollection of some fractured skulls from similar attempts that I remembered attending at the John Sealy Hospital deterred me. The pavement looked too hard. I spent an hour in a state of anxiety.

I had almost made up my mind to try jumping and take my chance, when I noticed that the car was headed out of the city. First we went through a park—a beautiful landscaped place, with flowering trees and shrubs whose like I had never seen before, lagoons crossed by graceful bridges and covered with gay boats and bordered with frolicking bathers, with smooth lawns on which were in progress games that looked as though they might be golf, tennis, baseball—and there ahead was a gateway. The paved road beyond led between open fields.

My fears were being realized! I was being carried too far away to suit my better judgment. And, as if in response to my resolve to jump as soon as there was soft ground at the side, the car speeded up to a good forty-five miles an hour.

During the few moments that it took me to get up my courage, the car made a couple of miles along a lonesome road. Far behind, another car came out of the gateway and down the road after me. In all directions, flat fields stretched away. To the right, half a mile away, flowed a broad river. The fields might have borne cotton or potatoes; I was going too fast to discern which. Here and there, large, trestle-like machines were bridged across the rows of plants and seemed to be working at cultivation, though I could make out no people on them. On ahead was a stream flowing at right angles to the road, and toward the river on the right. It may have been a large creek artificially straightened, or a canal, for its banks were straight and regular, and the quiet, swiftly flowing water seemed to be quite deep. The road crossed it on a concrete bridge.

Ah! There was my chance. The bridge railing was only a wheelguard, not over two feet high. A jump into the water was my best opportunity for an escape from this scrape.

"Now Sappho, you demon, we'll see!" I gloated, and climbed out on the running board. There I waited till I was just opposite the nearer bank of flowing water. It would require a horizontal jump of six feet to clear the rail, which was easy for me.

I jumped. I was not able to manage a dive. It knocked the breath out of me, and for a moment I was dazed and helpless. My body tore through the water sidewise and whirled round and round, as though the quiet stream had suddenly become a whirlpool. I thought my head and lungs would burst before I fought my way to the top and gasped for breath. I located the bank and struck out for it. I could feel my clothes rip and tear in a dozen places, as by brute strength I overcame their obstruction to my strokes. I rolled out on the bank and lay there panting.

Up on the road, two men were getting out of a car, obviously the one I had seen behind me. They came toward me. I stood up and got ready for them; I was ready for anything human. One of them looked a particularly bad customer; but I was only thankful that I was on solid ground and away from any kind of a machine.

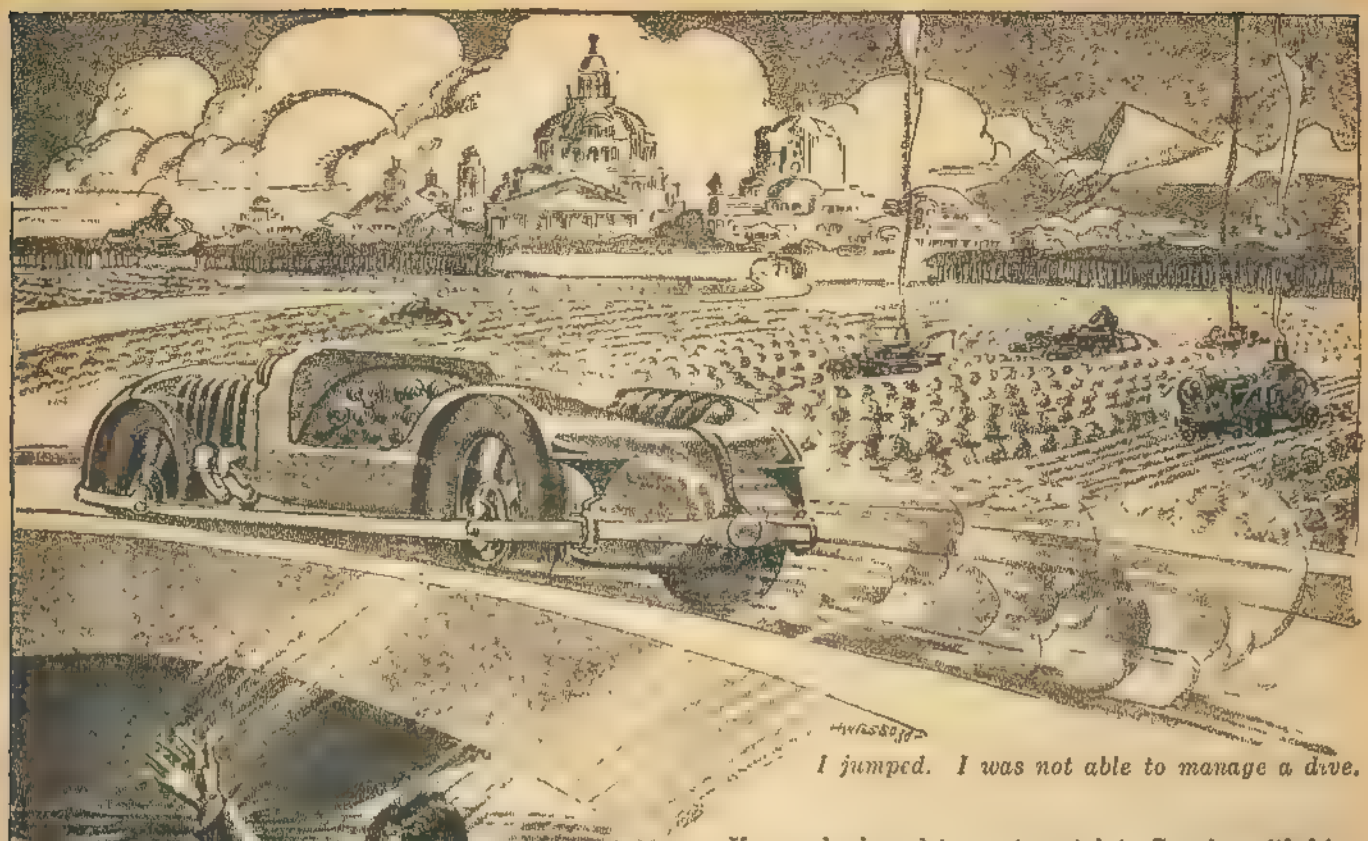
Then, with a gasp of relief, I saw that they were Kaspar and Cassidy. And on ahead stood Sappho, drawn up quietly by the side of the road.

"Good jump, boy!" shouted Cassidy. "No one in this town would have dared it."

He laughed, but his laugh was forced, and his face was pale and drawn. Kaspar grasped my hand and said nothing.

"I'd like to know what in blazes is going on!" I demanded impatiently.

"You've had a particularly narrow escape from some sort of oblivion that we don't even understand ourselves," Kaspar said; "and that is about all I am able to tell you."



I jumped. I was not able to manage a dive.

Kaspar beckoned to me to get into Sappho with him, which I did with some trepidation. Kaspar managed the car smoothly back into the city. He was silent; not a word did he say; and when I tried to speak, he turned warning looks toward me, so that I desisted, though vastly puzzled. However, I kept a sharp eye on his hands as he worked the dials to start the machine, and stored my observations for future use.

As we came into the city, the afternoon was turning into evening, and the streets were crowded with people. As we pushed on through, we saw a big parade going by. Automobile-floats decorated with flowers went up the street in a long line, some of them very beautiful indeed. Then came a truck with a floral throne on which sat a man and a woman, crowned and hung with wreaths of flowers. As they went by, great roars of applause went up and banners were displayed containing a maroon field and a white magnolia flower.

"It seems that Ames has won the championship," remarked Kaspar, and his remark lacked enthusiasm.

Indeed, it was Ames and Miss Kaspar on the floral throne!

Why did it cause me a pang of depression to see them? What I had done last night for Miss Kaspar was a small matter. And even if it had been a big matter it would have given me no claim on her, no excuse to presume on her regard.

I was wet, shivering, and physically miserable, with clothes hanging off me in rags. It was difficult to get through the crowded streets in the increasing darkness, though I must admit that the performance of the car in finding its way without human guidance impressed me as remarkable. It was pitch dark when we reached Kaspar's house, and he slipped me into my room unobserved.

"Say nothing about this to anyone," he admonished. "Also, let me warn you very earnestly, to stay absolutely away from machinery unless one of us is with you. You are too important to us now to have something happen to you. And—think this over: do not interpret literally everything you see. Be patient. The time will come when you shall understand all of these things."

CHAPTER IV

Athens or Utopia?

THE following day, about the middle of the forenoon, Ames came sauntering over to the Kaspar home.

"Now that you are one of us," he said to me, as casually as though I had merely moved over from another part of town, "you must get started going about with us in our activities." He leaned against a pillar of the veranda, powerful and graceful in his white ducks, a magnificent specimen of young manhood.

"It is very kind of you to receive a stranger so cordially into your midst," I replied, trying to speak in a tone of gratitude that I was far from feeling.

It seemed that these people was assuming that I was going to stay among them forever; and perhaps they were right. How I could ever get away I hadn't the least idea. Ames' presence was uncongenial to me anyway, because he had a previous claim on Miss Kaspar.

There she sat on the settee with her grandfather, avoiding my eyes, which of course made me look at her all the more often. Her long, downcast lashes, her straight nose and clear-cut mouth made her look like a royal princess. A wave of resentment surged over me for having to accept favors at the hand of a man who had found this girl before I did. But I strove to overcome it. There was nothing to do, however, but to behave courteously, and try to fit in with their manners and habits—and to keep my eyes open.

"We're arranging something good for you this afternoon," Ames continued; "something in which you can take part. What can you do—tennis, Hopo, polo, golf——?"

"I hardly know one from another," I replied. "I've had to work all my life. But, if there's nothing else to do here, I can learn. Or, why can't you folks go ahead and play, and let me watch?"

"We couldn't do that!" Ames exclaimed, as though leaving me out would be an unthinkable sin against hospitality. "Besides, today is a special occasion. Perhaps you can swim, then?"

"Well, yes," I replied with interest; "that is the one thing I can do. No one has beaten me across the Galveston channel yet, and my challenge is still open."

I stopped suddenly, embarrassed at having referred to my own country, and hoping no one had noticed it.

"Very good," Ames said with gratification; "with swimming we can arrange a pretty little event. You will enjoy it." He seemed happy in having found something in which I could participate. Phyllis became quite excited over it; her eyes sparkled and her breath came rapidly.

"I'll explain it," Ames continued politely. "Tomorrow night is the annual ball of the Arts Guild, a splendid affair with a grand march and quadrille. The grand march is always led by the winner of the Painting Prize, who this year is a lady, Janet Keen. Therefore, she chooses six ladies of honor from among her friends; and it is a pretty little custom to choose the gentlemen escorts for these ladies of honor by some athletic contest. This afternoon we shall make it a swimming competition, and you shall have the chance of winning one of the ladies of honor."

He spoke earnestly and enthusiastically, with perfect seriousness. I worked hard to suppress a smile. Phyllis was so intensely stirred that she got up to join us, skipping and clapping her hands. To me, the event outlined by Ames looked childish, a device of the idle rich to secure diversion. These people looked mature and intelligent enough to be doing something worth while. But, I suppose it was human. During the days of chivalry, grown-up, bearded men discussed the relative beauty of their fair ladies by pounding each other's armor with axes and lances, and rode about the country looking for damsels to rescue from dragons, when they should have been working at some useful job.

"And we'll have a picnic luncheon in the park!" Phyllis cried. "We can meet at the Paneikoneon. That means that I shall have to hurry!"

She darted into the house, and I could hear her calling over the telephone. I gathered that there was a definite little group, which was a sort of society unit holding together for its activities; and that Phyllis was calling this group together.

"Meet at the what?" I asked of Ames.

"The Paneikoneon is the building of all the arts. Tomorrow night's party and today's fun is for people who are chiefly artistic, and it is natural to meet there."

"You ought to look through the place," Kaspar suggested to me; "You will find it interesting, perhaps even astonishing."

"Why, yes!" exclaimed Miss Kaspar. "You mustn't miss seeing the Paneikoneon. You will be delighted at the pictures."

"I don't think you've ever seen anything like it anywhere, no matter where you've been," Kaspar said. "There are thousands of paintings and statues. You will catch your breath when you see the art that this island has developed within two generations."

"I am eager to see it," I admitted. "The art of a people reveals their nature and character more truly than their history."

The remarkable people of this island interested me immensely; and if their art told as much about them, as did ancient Greek sculpture or medieval painting about the people who produced the statues or paintings, what revelations were in store for me today?

It was rather a surprise to come in contact with art in this city. I had rather expected to go about looking at amazing automatic machinery. Or, I had expected to have the lazy leisure to cultivate the society of the brown-eyed vivacious granddaughter of my host. Why could I not get her out of my head? Ah! The idea struck me suddenly. Was Miss Kaspar also one of the "ladies of honor"? And could I compete for her society by swimming against the others? That was an exciting thought! I had no doubt that I could easily walk away from them in the race, for I had clearly proved to an entire city, that I was a remarkable swimmer. But perhaps as an engaged girl she would not be free to receive the attentions of anyone who might win the opportunity by physical prowess. All I could do was to wait and see. I looked at her again. She was talking to Phyllis, and the glint of the sun on her cheek through a wisp of brown hair sent an excited thrill through my every nerve. I developed a sudden and keen interest in the afternoon program.

THEN I looked at myself. Again I was in a coarse shirt and whipcord breeches, wrinkled and crusted with salt; one sleeve was torn and had dried blood-stains on it. The suit that Ames had so kindly loaned me the day before was now a bunch of rags, completely ruined by my leap into the water. That would have been embarrassing enough had the suit been my own property, but the fact that it wasn't, made matters worse. I took Ames aside.

"I was in a little accident yesterday," I explained, "and the suit you so kindly loaned me is a total wreck. I am sorry; and if you will give me some idea as to the cost of the clothes I shall reimburse you for them."

He stood still and looked at me for some moments with a puzzled expression.

"The damage to the clothes is an accident, and you are under no obligation to me on account of it." He looked at me and smiled pleasantly, and continued:

"You seem to be in about the same position that you were in at this time yesterday morning. I'll get you another suit of mine, until you can have some made for yourself." He departed toward the telephone, while Kaspar smiled at my bewilderment.

"Kendall is quite right," Kaspar came to my relief. "All he has really done for you was to go to the trouble of wrapping and sending the clothes."

"You mean that they cost nothing?"

"Cost? We do not use that word. He can get all he wants, and so can everyone else. There is plenty on the island, and all are welcome to it." Kaspar said it proudly.

A light had suddenly dawned upon me. I had been having a queer impression of frailty and helplessness in the actions and appearance of these people. Like a baby in arms, was the vague idea I had. Now I saw! They never had to work. They were never driven by necessity, never haunted by the shadow of want. They only played. They had no conception of danger, privation, and pressure. They were petted and pampered children.

And that was how Miss Kaspar differed from the others! Her face showed grave lines of thoughtfulness and trouble, beneath and between the sunny smiles. And then, to think that she was dedicated to a human ornament like Ames! Even yet, I felt like sailing in and showing him who was a better man with a lady. But, when I thought of the courtesy and hospitality that had been shown me, I hesitated. Under such circumstances, it would be humanly inexcusable.

"Why does that make you look so woefully serious?" Miss Kaspar laughed, waking me out of my reverie.

"Oh, does it?" I fenced, playing for time to frame an answer. My heart gave a leap, for I was glad to be noticed by her. "Perhaps I wish that my own country were such a paradise. I have always been taught that only through toil do we gain strength and make progress; and that without work, a people is lost."

"We're not lost," laughed Miss Kaspar. "There is plenty to do."

"Yes, to pass the time," I admitted. "But I cannot imagine one of these flossy young men making a living—or one of these girls cooking a meal or sewing a dress."

Miss Kaspar laughed heartily; I wondered if it wasn't merely to hide some deeper reflections of her own.

"Don't you like girls that cannot cook and sew?" she asked slyly.

"I confess that I am curious to know who is going to prepare the picnic lunch," was my reply to that.

"Oh yes!" she exclaimed, in sudden recollection. "Your talk has been so interesting that I nearly forgot. We must plan the luncheon, and then we can have it sent to the park. Come, Phyllis."

"There will not be time enough to send it," Ames reminded. "We'll have to stop by the central kitchens and get it."

"And I'll go along," thought I to myself. "I want to see these automatic cooking machines."

Miss Kaspar and Phyllis had their heads bent over a printed card and were marking it with pencils. I went into the house, and finding that my clothes had arrived from Ames' home, went into my rooms to change. I was excited at the prospect of having a good look at some of the marvelous automatic machinery which was doing all of the work of the city and yet managing to remain behind the scenes and out of sight. And their talk of a great Paneikoneon full of pictures was hard for me to grasp. How could a small, unknown island have produced a school of art and enough paintings to make such a huge collection, at the same time that they had developed this vast system of machinery? In fact, they seemed to be more interested in the social-athletic event of the afternoon than in anything else in life. And at the thought of that, my heart pounded again. Was there really a chance of winning Miss Kaspar, even for a formal dance? If I did, would she talk to me? She was certainly leaving me out in the cold now, while Ames acted as though he had a first mortgage on her.

When I came out I found that Dubois and his sister had arrived and were waiting for me with Phyllis and Ames in the latter's car. We drove a number of blocks through streets alive with traffic and brightly clad people, and stopped in front of a large building done in massive Egyptian style.

"Here's where we stop for the lunches," Ames announced.

I FOLLOWED the two men through the massive entrance into a small room furnished like a drawing-room. Ames had the printed card that the girls had checked, and proceeded to pick off the items, moving little switch-levers, of which there were hundreds on one of the walls, each with a printed legend beneath. I watched him a moment, and then slipped through a door down the corridor, and wandered around in the vast halls full of machinery.

The astonishing, unbelievable thing about it all was that there were no workmen there. All these vast stacks of machinery worked busily away, entirely alone and without human attention. I soon came to where Ames' orders were being filled, if I may put it that way. A number of metal cases about the size and shape of Gladstone bags were traveling along on a belt, and packages were being lowered into them. I found a place where there were great kettles and much steam and the most savory of odors; and another where fruits were being put into cans by automatic machines. Little packets were being wrapped and cartons filled—I had seen similar things in packing houses and food factories back home. These machines did not look radically different; but the amazing things worked all alone, without human attendants.

The two men, with whom I came, did not like my prowling about among the machinery, and everybody was more cheerful when we drove away. Soon they were prattling merrily away like a group of children, of Ames' victory of the day before and of Miss Janet Keen's prize painting. First one and then another would turn to me and tell me something about the building of pictures, anticipating my delight on seeing them for the first time, hoping that I would not omit to see this or that, till I began to be convinced that there was indeed something remarkable in store for me.

The Paneikoneon turned out to be a great mass of buildings in Gothic architecture, of a yellowish stone which provided a pleasingly warm variation from the usual cold grayness of Gothic buildings. The soft voices of the young people echoed down the vast halls as we passed rapidly through immense rooms full of astonishing statuary. I had never taken much interest in sculpture, but here I saw things that made me pause and look. To this day I remember vividly the figure of a girl of about sixteen, poised on one toe, arms spread as though in imitation of a bird taking wing from a tree in front of her. The cold marble looked as though there was life beneath the surface, and seemed ready to leap into dance or burst into song.

We found the famous Miss Janet Keen absorbed in work at an easel, in a roomful of pictures on an upper floor. She was overwhelmed and carried away, *willy nilly*, by the enthusiastic picnickers; and we swept from

one room to another, picking up various members of the group and gathering numbers as we went.

I was amazed at the number and quality of paintings that I saw during those few moments, and certainly the art reflected the locality. There was a brilliant profusion of color and a luxuriance of natural forms, that gave me the same rich and varied impression as did the city itself. There was no dumb drudgery of Millet or tragedy of Meissonier; it was all like happy children playing in the sun. Today, many months afterwards, if I permit myself to recollect those halls full of pictures, I am overcome by a surging flood of nameless emotions, delightful, puzzling, consuming.

How was it possible for this one city to produce such an immense and wonderful collection?

Automatic machinery, of course! Wealth consists of the products of labor, but it has been measured in terms of human labor. Here the people had control of vast amounts of labor, labor that knew no fatigue, had no limitations, required no wages—the labor of automatic machinery. They had freely at their disposal the equivalent of the labor of millions of skilled and powerful workmen, without involving the degradation of a single human soul in the monotony of toil. As a result, all the people were able to devote themselves to the higher pursuits for which men have longed in vain during the ages when necessity compelled them to labor.

Here was another Athens! Here was a nation that had developed intellect and beauty to a degree that bid fair to rival that of the old Grecian city. However, in that Athens of old, which has done so much to mold the thought and taste of the world, there was a sad moral blot. The leisure that made possible the accomplishment of its artists, statesmen, and thinkers, was achieved only through the labor of millions of slaves. Of these toiling, driven, suffering multitudes, history has nothing to say, nor of the share which they deserve in the glory of Greece

In this modern Athens there was no such disgrace. The slaves doing the drudgery behind the scenes were not human beings, but machines—not the lives of a hundred human beings sacrificed to make possible one sculptor or philosopher, but only iron and oil, gasoline and electricity making beauty: the beauty of human bodies well and gracefully nurtured; the beauty of paintings, statuary, and music; the beauty of high and noble human thought.

As we drove along through the city from the Paneikoneon to the park, I gazed with earnestness and fascination at the people in the streets, looking into their faces and expecting to see something godlike there. And my companions in the car left me to my thoughts, appreciating the fact that the Paneikoneon had impressed me deeply. Only when the exuberant crowd began spreading cloths on the grass and I was introduced to a couple of dozen of them in turn, did I begin to take notice of things about me. I noted that the young people seemed to enjoy carrying water and moving benches and doing little physical tasks. I tried to help, but finding myself in the way, joined a group of the older people sitting thoughtfully by.

As the lunch went on, I tried to talk to Miss Kaspar. Patiently and persistently I sought to get near her and strike up a conversation, but always, and apparently by accident, I failed. But I knew she was deliberately avoiding me, for in no other way could she have escaped my systematic efforts. Why did she treat me this way?

FINALLY—to me it seemed after several hours—Ames and Dubois arose and sauntered toward the water, motioning to me to join them. Others got up and followed toward the dressing-rooms to don bathing-suits. Here was my chance, thought I. I would steer the conversation toward the swimming contest and around to the question uppermost in my mind: Would Miss Kaspar be one of the candidates? Not wishing to make my purpose too apparent, I started far from the subject, intending to make a roundabout approach.

"What sort of swimming strokes do you use here?" I asked.

"Most of us prefer the Australian crawl," Ames answered.

Dubois seemed to resent that, and quickly turned to me.

"There is no doubt in my mind," he said, "as to the superiority and greater popularity of the Schaefer sprint. Schaefer is still living here, though too old for active athletics."

Now I would rather have had my turn at the conversation; but it seemed that I had unwittingly opened a controversial subject.

"Some people prefer it," Ames said with studied casualness; there was excitement beneath, but he tried not to show it. "But the winners are the ones who use the crawl."

"I can use the sprint and beat anyone on the crawl," Dubois said in a voice that sounded thin and tense. I shrugged my shoulders and gave up my conversational plans. Perhaps I would be rewarded by seeing a real fight.

"I'll take you on!" Ames almost shouted.

"I have a bay mare, trained to the Hopo field, that I'll stake on the result!" Dubois offered.

"I'm willing to make a little bet, but I'm not interested in horses just now," Ames replied.

"Then Mildred Kaspar. The loser stays out of the way for a month."

"No thanks!" Ames shook his head. "I'm not taking any chances there."

"I'll bet you a Supervision day, then. The loser takes the winner's next Supervision day."

"That's good." Ames seemed pleased. "Mine comes tomorrow, and I'd like to get out of it."

To me, it was all quite startling. First, I was surprised to see these apparently highly cultured people get so excited over the trifling matter of a swimming stroke. Obviously, physical excitement was a rare thing here, where there was no fighting, no labor. Then, the wagers—the idea of betting a girl rather stirred my resentment. Yet, as money meant nothing to them, they had to have something to arouse their interest and provide a motive for action. Finally, the word "Supervision" rang curiously upon my ears. It smacked of industry and machinery in some way. I wondered if they took turns in supervising machinery? If so, it seemed that it must be an unpleasant task.

By this time they were all in bathing suits at the river's edge. I was amazed at the powerful muscles and wonderful physical development of these people. The little preliminary swimming and diving also impressed me, and made me think that I had better look to my laurels in the coming race. Then Ames and Dubois swam off their match, and both of them showed themselves to be accomplished athletes.

For a moment my interest was diverted from the big contest and Miss Kaspar. Ames won the race and was mightily cheered by the rest. Dubois took his defeat gracefully and cheerfully and shook hands with Ames.

"Remember, tomorrow is my Supervision day," Ames reminded.

Thereupon Dubois changed countenance and became very glum, nor was it possible to arouse him from it during the rest of the day. Supervision must be something very unpleasant, I thought. But events followed rapidly.

One of my questions was answered almost at once. The first of the "ladies of honor" for whom the swimmers were to contend, was placed on an improvised dais made of a pile of park benches. She was pretty in an old-fashioned way, and was presented as a Mrs. Howard. Her husband was in the group. If a married woman was eligible, certainly Miss Kaspar would be. Possibilities were getting better.

Two of the men tumbled a big red buoy into a launch, and anchored it out in the middle of the river, a good quarter of a mile from the shore. A red flower was stuck into the top of it. At the sound of a whistle, a half dozen swimmers plunged into the water amid cheers and chaffing. The applause continued while one of them forged ahead, got the flower, and brought it back. Dripping and breathless, he presented it to the girl on the dais. She accepted it like a queen, and they went off together arm in arm, with a great show of comradeship, cheered by the crowd. Another girl was raised on the dais, and the crowd took it all very seriously.

Again I watched as the swimmers plunged, and the winded victor brought his flower to the girl on the dais. Then came Phyllis's turn. She seemed to be quite popular, judging by the number of young men who leaped into the water for her. Also I noticed that Ames was staying out of these races. And, suddenly, there was Miss Kaspar on the dais.

I was very much in earnest now. Perhaps the sight of Ames in the group that was getting ready, roused me. Any qualms about paying attention to an engaged girl were removed by the sight of the largest group of contestants that had as yet tried for any of the girls. I looked at Miss Kaspar. She did not seem to like it very well and did not pay much attention to what was going on; but the sight of her tightened my muscles and sent a thrill of determination through me.

I dove mightily when the whistle blew, and struck out with my best crawl stroke. For a time my head was down, and the whole world consisted of splashing water. After a while I lifted my head and looked quickly about. The unpleasant realization was forced upon me, that physically, I was no match for these people at all. Though I was putting forth my utmost efforts, they were leaving me behind, easily and rapidly. I was very resentful at them, because all their lives they had nothing to do except to train for athletics, and therefore had me at a disadvantage. However, I kept grimly on, for I could not afford to look foolish now.

Suddenly I was astonished to find myself passing one after another of them. One more spurt and there was no one ahead of me. I risked the loss of enough time to look back. They had all stopped swimming and were staring blankly ahead. I looked, expecting to see something sensational there, but there was nothing. Nothing that would explain this panic at least. I was more than half way to the buoy, and could see the flower on it. Near it, floating down the middle of the river was a mass of brushwood and green foliage. It was bearing down directly on the buoy. In fact, as I watched it, it drifted against the buoy, and carried it with its red flower along downstream.

I kept on, for I wanted that flower. The others remained where they had stopped. Then I saw that the floating material consisted of two great logs which had been sawn squarely off, and the white, clean ends, and the sawdust sprinkled bark showed that they had been cut recently. They were fastened together by an iron chain, of which a short piece with a broken link hung down to the water.

Then the black tug came into my line of vision. I had not noticed it before. It was coming on rapidly, and as it approached, the other swimmers retreated to the shore.

As a bit of dare-deviltry, I swam after the logs, climbed upon them, and waved the red flower to the folks on the shore. They all stood motionless as statues. I chuckled as I imagined how shocked they all felt to see me behaving without any respect for a machine. For, as the tug churned up to the logs and hooked on to them, I stood calmly and watched the procedure. There were no people on the tug; in fact it was too small to contain any. After I had gotten a little ride back up the river on the logs, I scrambled through the leaves and branches to the opposite end, dove off, and swam leisurely to the shore. While I swam, I pondered.

WHY had they suddenly stopped in the middle of the race? And fled to the shore? Especially after they had been so intensely excited about it from the first? I wondered whether there were not some grave danger, and whether I had unconsciously run some serious risk. Yet, they had never made a move to warn me or call me back.

As I pondered on it, two explanations occurred to me, and subsequent experience showed that both were correct. One was that these people, though remarkably intelligent along artistic lines, were really intellectually topheavy; they were not quickly resourceful, nor able to act in emergencies, simply because they were so pampered by the machines, that they had never had the training that necessity gives. The other was that the sawed logs and chain were an indication that there might be machinery around; and then the tug appeared. Machinery was disgusting, and not fit to appear in polite society.

Not a word was spoken when I got out of the water. They all regarded me with faces that seemed filled with awe. They fell back and permitted me to pass through the middle of the group, dripping and exultant. I felt a sort of contempt for them. It occurred to me that at the head of a hundred determined savages I could capture their whole city.

A voice in the crowd—I was relieved that it was not Ames—said almost apologetically:

"They ought to swim that over again."

"What!" I exclaimed, in alarmed indignation.

"It wasn't exactly regular," said the courteous voice whose owner I did not see.

"The conditions were to get the flower. I've got the flower!" I exclaimed angrily, now more in earnest than anyone else. In fact, I acted worse than they did. But, one glance at Miss Kaspar, who was now radiant with a wonderful smile—the same girl that had given me her hand on the first evening—astonished me and steeled me in my determination not to yield the point.

"Of course," explained some other person whom I could not locate, "the flower was but a symbol of the best swimming, and an accident interfered."

"I didn't see any reason why everyone couldn't finish!" I looked around, but no one would meet my angry glance. All stood silent and reproachfully downcast.

"The devil take your flowers!" I shouted, dashing the pretty thing to the ground. I went to the bathing houses, resumed my clothes, strode over to where Miss Kaspar sat, took her arm, and led her away, just as the previous swimmers had done. The others never moved nor uttered a sound; I could not tell whether they were afraid of me or merely disgusted with me. Anyway, a half hour later they seemed to have completely forgotten the whole business, and treated me as though it had never happened. Was it a high type of tact and courtesy, or was it a species of mental deficiency? I could not tell.

"Davy!" said Miss Kaspar, in a soft, frightened tone of voice, "That was a reckless thing! Why did you do it?"

"I wanted to talk to you. You kept avoiding me. Now you must talk to me!"

"You *wanted* to?" Her voice was different than it had been all day. "Truly did you? I thought you wanted to talk to Phyllis."

"So, that is why you have been so distant——?"

"You and Phyllis looked so happy and intimate coming down the street so early yesterday morning——"

"You don't believe that now, do you, Mildred?"

"No, Davy. You have proved your words. But, you will have to go on with it and be my partner in the grand march."

"Ha! Ha! You talk as though it were some sort of punishment for me. I'd lick the black tug barehanded for the privilege of that dance, or whatever it is. I'll take good care of you for Mr. Ames."

"For Mr. Ames!" She shrank back as though a thunderbolt had struck near her. "What do you mean by that?"

"Why—I—I understand you were engaged."

"The idea! I'm not engaged to Mr. Ames, nor to anybody. Whatever made you think that?"

As I thought back, I had to admit to myself that there never had been any real tangible reason for believing such a thing. My own morbid imagination had read a significance into a number of meaningless circumstances.

In an instant the universe changed. I would have liked to give a whoop and jump high into the air, and come down and dance a highland fling. With a great effort, I remained on the ground and acted calmly. I met her eyes. Not a word was said, but a great deal was understood. Then she gave a little toss of her head and a smile, as though to shake back her hair, and with it the constraint that had existed between us.

"Now," she said, "I'm really looking forward to tomorrow night. And when we get home, I want you to bring me your khaki shirt. The sleeve is all torn from the crane, and I want to show you that *some* girls on this island can sew."

CHAPTER V

A Machine-Devil

ON my first and second mornings on the island I had spent a long and dreary wait, wandering about the house and grounds until someone had appeared. On this, the third morning, I found Mildred out in the garden busily snipping flowers off a vine.

"I had to get up early today. These flowers are for the ball tonight, and they keep better when they are cut in the morning," she explained. I accepted the explanation, without inquiring too deeply into the real reason for her being out so early. I was merely glad she was there.

However, the mention of the famous "ball" about which everyone was so excited, brought me up with a start.

"I am afraid of tonight's ball," I remarked in an effort to keep up a conversation which must be kept up; and the words came to my tongue with that strange fatality which sometimes makes our most superficial conversation express our innermost secrets. "I am not much of a society man."

"Now!" she said reproachfully, "that is just because you have to be my partner. I knew you would try to back out." At the same time, a merry laugh and a twinkle in the brown eyes belied the words.

"Will there be many there?" I asked.

"It is usually not a crowded affair. But the ball is held in a most wonderful place. The pavilion and its grounds are beautiful as a dream. There are special dresses and light effects and clever dances. It always thrills me through and through. You came at a lucky time, for it might be a year before you had this opportunity again."

Others apparently thought the same. As we walked to the veranda with armfuls of white, waxy flowers, Phyllis came skipping up.

"I can hardly believe that you haven't seen the pavilion yet!" she cried as soon as she was close enough to be heard. Apparently everyone's first thought on awakening this morning had been the ball. "I wish I were you, and seeing it for the first time!" She gurgled ecstatically, in her childish way.

When I had heard the same thing from several other people whom I met later during the day, I gradually developed a good deal of curiosity and eagerness to see the evening's event. I smiled as I thought back to the days in Galveston when my great-uncle and I had planned the outfit for this trip.

"It seems that since I've come to the island," I said to Kaspar later, "I've become *some* sheik. All I think about is clothes to wear——"

Kaspar laughed heartily.

"That's right!" he said. "I know better than to expect a young fellow to go to a function like that unless he had exactly the correct thing on. We'll drive to town and get you some."

"It takes a lot of nerve on my part to ask for things that way——"

"No. You must feel just as free to take them as you would to pick fruit off our trees. It amounts to the same thing."

So, that afternoon, we drove to the neat little shopping district, Kaspar and Mildred and I. I went into a store, which was really a "store" and not a selling institution; and there I was furnished with all of the clothes and accessories that I needed to fit me to take my place among the young men at the "ball" that evening.

HOWEVER, I soon found that I was only a side-issue in this shopping expedition. Mildred was carrying on the principal program. She went into store after store, while Kaspar and I waited in the car outdoors. He sat with a grave face and a merry twinkle in his eye; and I watched the street and the people fascinatedly. Mildred was flushed and excited about it. By the time we reached home, the pneumatic tube was discharging a perfect deluge of bundles.

In the evening, a couple of dozen young folks, on their way to the ball in their cars, stopped for us at Kaspar's home.

I noticed that Ames was not among the group. He had been cordial enough to me on the way home after the swimming contest, and I did not believe that he had anything personal against me. Yet I believed that he took Mildred seriously, and felt very much hurt about being deprived of her on this special occasion. I ought to have felt sorry for him, but I didn't. Someone in the group brought word that he was coming to the pavilion later in the evening. At least, I could not help admiring the delicate tact of his methods.

Then Mildred came out. I had not seen her all afternoon, and now she fairly took my breath away. And now I saw the purpose of the forenoon's shopping campaign. A torrent of surprised compliments and delighted congratulations broke out from the crowd of visitors. It was evident that this was the first time they had ever seen her in anything but plain gray-brown, and that they were happy at the transformation.

There were twenty in the group, young and old; and we drove in four cars. As usual, Mrs. Kaspar remained at home, but Kaspar and Cassidy came along.

They went everywhere, keeping a protecting eye on Mildred, and possibly on me. That in itself was a sort of sinister hint of danger, that kept up a background of worry to everything I experienced.

The car in which I was riding, with Mildred, Kaspar, Cassidy, and a half dozen others, was in the lead. We were some three hundred yards from the pavilion, and could already hear strains of music, when the little accident occurred. As an accident, it was quite trivial and insignificant; but the reaction of the people to it surprised me and set me to thinking. We met a car coming from the opposite direction, and our car swerved to the right side of the road. There was a crunch of the pavement, and a lurch that threw us about in our seats. The roar of our machinery rapidly died down to silence, and the car stood motionless, tipped to the right side. I thought at first that an axle had broken or a wheel had come off.

The cause of my astonishment, however, was that everybody sat still and did nothing. Their chatter was hushed for a moment; they looked about with helpless faces, in perplexed silence. But no one stirred. They all behaved as though they had been bound hand and foot. I stood up and looked about. Kaspar's face was inscrutable. My eyes met Cassidy's; he shrugged his shoulders and his face momentarily broadened into a grin; but his eyes told me nothing.

Finally I jumped out of the car and ran around to the side where the trouble seemed to be. A piece of pavement had given way and the wheel had sunk into the soft ground so that the axle rested on the ground. A little stream of water flowing alongside the road showed what was responsible for the cave-in.

"Three or four of us can lift this out easily," I suggested. I had in mind the powerful shoulders and muscular arms that I had seen during the swimming match.

The other carloads of young people coming along behind us stopped for a moment, and then passed us and went on. There was only a short piece of smooth, brilliantly lighted road ahead, leading to the pavilion. I walked back and forth, down the road toward the pavilion and back toward the car, hoping that it might occur to them that the short walk that remained would be a pleasant variation. But they accepted no suggestion. They sat as helpless as rag-dolls, and I did not feel like saying anything directly. I was thoroughly disgusted. Evidently Cassidy noticed it. He laughed, but it was a forced sort of a laugh.

"You're a young fellow that's used to taking care of yourself," he said, with an effort at speaking casually. "Well, that isn't necessary here. This machine automatically signals for help when it gets into trouble, and we have nothing to do but wait."

And wait we all did. Within five minutes' walk of the pavilion, the group sat as though they had been marooned on a desert island. I noted the small radio antenna over the top of the machine and heard the humming of coils as the signal went out.

Finally the big noisy truck came. As far as I could see, there was no one driving or controlling it; but there was no way of making certain of that, as men might possibly have been hidden on it. I wondered if these people had such an aversion to their working class, that they could not even bear to look at a mechanic or laborer. In a business-like way, the relief truck hooked a chain under the axle of our car, and raised it up with its derrick. We finished the short remainder of our trip quite smoothly.

After the scene I had just witnessed, the vivacity and activity with which the people leaped out of the car and trooped up the steps of the pavilion were surprising and inconsistent.

Edgar Allan Poe dreamed dreams of beauty too transcendent for mortals to behold; and the scene, I now beheld, seemed to be one of the places of which he wrote. The pavilion was in a grove outside the city, beside the broad river. The building was long and low and white, with façades like the Parthenon. In the moonlight it did not seem quite real and solid; it seemed rather to float on the great billows of shrubbery embroidered with brilliant flowers. Tall rows of slim trees stood guard around it, and here and there and everywhere, huge, exotic flowers gleamed and glowed in the moon's rays. As we approached, long glimmers from the moon came toward me across the distant water. I could just see the soft glow of light between the columns from within the building. The strains of music drifted over, soft and low. I could have believed that I was approaching some enchanted fairyland.

Within, the floor of some red wood with purple veins was polished smooth as glass. There were ladies in fluffy, pale-tinted gowns that seemed unreal in the vari-colored glow-lights. The gentlemen were graceful and courtly. The music was not obtrusive in volume, but ever-present and gently suggestive of rhythm; and more effective in stirring one into movement than any lilt I had ever heard. The dancing was instinctively graceful and beautiful. As the dancers glided about in the changing lights, the movements, the colors, and the music affected me like some drug.

BUT I myself was not part of it. The others belonged in the picture; I couldn't fit into it. I was a detached spectator. For this there were many reasons. I felt awkward because my practice in dancing had been meager. Possibly once a month in the intervals of hard work, I had taken some equally hard-worked teacher or stenographer to a dance. The personal beauty and grace that I had developed by years of hard riding on the ranges and in recent years by bending over books and laboratory experiments, did not compare favorably with that of the people about me. They were without exception fine looking.

There was a little informal and desultory dancing to begin with; but the main interest was centered in the preparations for the "grand march." Partners sought each other out and looked for their positions. Everything was ready to start except that they did not like to go ahead without Ames. As far as I could learn, he had no essential part to play; but he was such a prominent member of the group, and they were so accustomed to having him present that they felt lost without him.

"He has no reason to be late today," Dubois grumbled, "after I've taken his Supervision and he has had nothing to do all day."

"That's right," said someone else, in an awed tone. "Ames escaped his turn at Supervision today. Nobody's ever done that before."

"I wonder if something hasn't happened to him," asked Phyllis in a frightened whisper. "That was a dangerous thing to do."

I remember how admiringly she had spoken of him on the first morning; and from her tone now, I suspected that she was more worried about Ames than was anyone else.

The impatient group broke up for the moment. There was a little dancing, and people drifted outdoors to pass away a little more time of waiting. Mildred ran to ask her grandfather if she could.

"He has made me promise faithfully to ask him about every little step I make," she explained, half-ashamed of the childish position in which she was placed. "For some reason he is very much worried about me."

As I waited for her, I happened to wander past where a group of boys in a circle were excitedly discussing something. Their naive gestures of excitement were a welcome relief from the perfect culture of their elders. As soon as I got near enough to catch a few words, I suspected that they were talking about me; and my curiosity got the best of considerations of conventionality. Without thinking what I was doing, I listened.

"I wonder if he will also have to do Supervision?" one boy asked.

"Of course he will! Everybody does!" was the dogmatic reply.

"No, Kaspar's family does not; and he is in Kaspar's home."

A boy of about sixteen just opposite me waved his fist in indignation. I liked his sturdy looks.

"Silly!" he snorted contemptuously. "Supervision! I want real work to do. I want to make machines, like Kaspar did."

There was a sudden lull in the talk, as of astonishment, of fear. Then an older boy's reproof:

"You fool! I hope no one heard you. These things have ears everywhere. Do you know that they got Higgins day before yesterday?"

Then a very small boy piped, as though repeating a lesson learned by rote:

"Our first duty is to the machines!"

Mildred came by and hurried me away.

"Your eyes look as big as saucers," she laughed.

I tried to compose my astonished exterior, but calming the whirling astonishment within me was not so easy. The thoughtless words of children will often let the cat out of the bag, while the carefully acquired habits of adults keep secrets safely. Here was another confirmation of my suspicions that the people on this island were not as completely happy as external appearances might seem to indicate. These people did not understand all this vast machinery; they could not operate it nor keep it in repair. Somewhere on the island there must be others who did so; and in some

As the tentacles waved about me and coiled and bent, I could hear a continuous clicking coming from them.

way they seemed to hold these grown-up children of the City of Beauty in their power. There was lurking fear in the eyes of the boys, and in an occasional unguarded glance of the elders.

"There's Ames now!" someone shouted.

We pushed our way out on the broad staircase of the curved balcony. A car was hurrying toward us, up the broad sweep of pavement bordered with shrubbery and electric lights on concrete pillars. On the opposite side of the drive were parked many cars in a dense crowd. There were numerous shouts of pleasant bantering as Ames was recognized in the brilliant illumination of the electric lamps. His car drove into an empty parking-space, and he got out and started across the stretch of pavement toward us.

Then there was a rattle of an exhaust off to the right, and a whirl of machinery up the road. A horrible looking thing on wheels dashed up and made directly for Ames, focussing on him its glaring headlights. He stopped as though rooted to the spot. A more frightful looking thing has never been imagined in all the lore of sea-monsters and dragons. It was the same thing that I had caught a glimpse of that night on the dock, or another thing just like it. Its general form was that of a huge motorcycle, with a great coffin-shaped box seven feet high between the wheels, at the top of which were two goggly headlights. Only, the first time I had seen it, it had seemed to have some sort of black ropes coiled round and round the box. Now these were unwound. They waved about, felt around, coiled and uncoiled, and grasped at the empty air; ten or a dozen huge, black tentacles, filling the air with sinuous, snaky masses.

Right in the middle of the road, in plain view of a couple of hundred people, it reached for Ames and wrapped a black coil around him. He stood as though struck paralyzed, though I could see him tremble. It began to drag him toward itself. In another moment, as I looked about me, I was alone. The people were all fleeing pell-mell into the building.

FOR an instant I was puzzled as to what to do. But Ames' face, bright white in the glaring light, in the uttermost agony of fear, convinced me that he was in some sort of danger. I started toward him in big jumps, at the same time opening a heavy pocketknife that I carried. As I reached him, I felt the coil of a tentacle about me, and was surprised at the strength of it. However, with a quick squirm I managed to duck out of its grasp. I grasped Ames' arm and slashed away with my knife at the coils about him.

As the tentacles waved about me and coiled and bent, I could hear a continuous clicking coming from them. When I cut at them with my knife I struck something hard, some metal. It seemed that my knife first went through a layer of something soft, rubber perhaps, and then slipped in between metal plates; and I could feel it catch and cut through wires. As it went through, a purple spark followed it, and a spark bit into my hand. Thus, while my body and arms struggled with the monster, my mind grappled with the astounding revelation, that this was not some animal enclosed within the box, some sea-monster as I had supposed. These snaky, twisting tentacles were mechanical things, built up of metal discs and wires, and carrying a high-frequency current.

Again I ducked out of the grasp of a tentacle. One already hung limp. I shook Ames, but he was completely unnerved. He had made no struggle whatsoever. I have no doubt, and have none to this day, that with a little determined effort he could have gotten loose and escaped up the steps. But he gave up from the beginning.

Then I heard a scream from Mildred, and a great bellow from Cassidy:

"Davy! Stop! Come here quick!"

I saw no choice except to obey, especially as two more tentacles closed around me. I dropped and twisted in an effort to get loose, but they had me in opposite directions, one closed against the other; and my efforts were of no avail. So, with the main force of two hands, I opened out the grasp of one of them. It took all my strength to do so, and I am known as a strong man. I bent it back with a twist, and heard it snap; it dropped away from me and hung limp, and there was a smell of scorched rubber. With a common wrestling trick, I escaped from the remaining coil and ran up the steps.

As I turned to look back, Ames was on a side seat of the machine with several coils around him, and the thing was carrying him off down the road. The day before I had admired him for his athletic prowess. Now I cursed him for a stupid fool to let himself be carried away like a sack of potatoes.

I got back to the dance, none the worse except for some slight disarrangement of my clothing. Kaspar and Cassidy took me sternly in hand. I did not know that Kaspar could be so severe. I felt like a schoolboy caught throwing paper-wads.

"I have warned you," he said. "If you persist in being rash, you will not only succeed in having yourself destroyed, but will upset some cherished plans of ours."

"What in Sam Hill is going on?" I exclaimed. "What's happening to Ames?"

Cassidy answered me. Kaspar was hurrying away to see if Mildred was safe.

"I am not sure. Perhaps his failure to appear at Supervision today has something to do with it. I do not suppose we shall ever see him again."

"But, who's doing it?" I demanded. "Who's in the machine? And who's behind it all?"

"That is the tragedy of the people of the island," Cassidy said sadly. "That is the burden our people carry for no fault of their own. But we cannot talk about it here. There are mechanical eyes and ears everywhere, and I'm not ready to be taken away yet."

The next jolt I got was to see the dance going on as though nothing had happened. People were mingling and chatting, sitting at tables with iced-drinks, with all the appearance of festive gayety. Only when I came close to them, I saw that they were pale and staring, and that they carried on a forced conversation, like the people of a defeated city after a battle. The grand march went on. Mildred came toward me with hand outstretched, her usually brown face as pale as milk.

"It's time for us to march," was all she said. Not a word in reference to the nightmare that had just occurred. But, with her finger on her lips and a grave look in her eyes, she gave me to comprehend that she understood my impatient curiosity, but that now I must go on with the game.

I found myself wondering whether anything really serious had happened after all. Might it not have been some sort of a joke, or some sort of a game acted out? But no, there was that look of pale horror on Ames' face, and the panicky flight of the people into the pavilion. The sudden starts of terror in unguarded moments here and there could not be acting; they were basic emotions breaking through, because they were too strong for even the most perfect of social training and discipline. I came across Dubois alone at a table.

"Couldn't you explain to me what happened to Ames?" I pleaded. "This mystery is driving me crazy."

All he did was to put his head down on his arm and turn away. He sat that way motionless and without

a sound, for so long that finally, out of sheer embarrassment, I got up and moved away. And only a few moments later I saw him dancing merrily again. And behind a screen there were two women over Phyllis, who was all crumpled and shaking with sobs.

How these people could go on with their gayety, with the appearance of enjoying themselves, I could not comprehend. With great difficulty I forced myself through a few dances. When I caught sight of the sixteen-year-old lad with the determined face, who had played the part of a heretic among his fellows a little earlier in the evening, I maneuvered him aside, hoping to get some information.

"I'd like to know who it was that captured Ames—who runs those machines—what do they want of him?" I asked all at once.

He became excited. He looked about to see if anyone could overhear, and moved to an open space, motioning me to follow.

"Serves them right," he exclaimed. "They'll all be taken some day, every last one of them. They putter around with art and waste their time on sport; and dance—bah! I'm sick of it. I want to work. I want to do things. I want to make machines."

He looked furtively about him again. A frightened expression came into his face, and with a mumbled apology de dived away.

I SOUGHT refuge in an obscure corner, in order that I might think.

It was evident that the people had become so accustomed to being waited on by machinery that they were helpless and had no initiative in personal matters.

And yet, this machinery that took care of them, produced fear and disgust in their minds! Though utterly dependent on it, they considered it disgraceful to notice it, and unpardonable social *gaucherie* to mention it in conversation.

Then, another thing: Machinery requires attention. *Someone* has got to understand it. Somewhere there must be hundreds, thousands of mechanics to operate it, care for it, and repair it. They should form a large proportion of the population. And in this stratum of inhabitants, which was the only one I had thus far seen, engineers ought to plentiful. Why had I not met an engineer? Were the mechanically occupied persons considered outcasts by these artist-sportsmen? Was it a disgrace to be connected with machinery? Did not the mechanically-minded people associate with the artistically-minded? Was there war between them?

For it was apparent that sometimes the machinery injured people, and favored them with other unpleasant and alarming attentions. These things could not be merely accidents. I had seen enough now to be certain that somewhere behind them was malevolent intention.

I could come to no other conclusion than that the people who operated and took care of the machines were a separate class, lived elsewhere, and did not in any way associate with the aristocracy with whom I mingled. The artistic aristocracy were the masters, and the mechanics were the servants. My yesterday's beautiful picture of an ideal community tumbled sadly in ruins. For these masters did not live the completely happy life that I had at first thought. For one thing they seemed to have degenerated from being so constantly pampered, so that they had no fighting ability, no courage. Furthermore, it seemed that their servants, the mechanics, possessed the power to terrify them, carry them away, perhaps to kill them. Ames had no doubt been "taken" as a disciplinary measure. But why had they attacked Mildred? What had she done? And why Kaspar's dark hints as to my own danger, even while we were still on the ship? What had I done?

And there was that Supervision! The word implied power and authority, and yet these people spoke of it as though it were some compulsory and unpleasant burden. Everyone I knew trembled with that word on their lips.

For a third time I tried to get information concerning the meaning of the gruesome scene I had witnessed. I asked Kaspar as we were starting homeward from the ball. The two of us had fallen back and were walking behind the others on our way to the cars.

"It is in the interest of your own safety," he reminded, "that you do not speak too loud. I am anxious to help you. I cannot even tell you the real reason for my interest in you just now, for fear of spoiling things. I shall try to find some opportunity of explaining things to you as far as I can; but I assure you that it cannot be done here and now."

He said it very gently and very kindly; but there was nothing left for me to say or do.

As I thought it over, I could not help feeling that for many reasons there was more chance of getting my questions answered by asking her, than from anyone else. Yet, I was a little unnerved when it came to asking her, especially when I thought of the strange reactions of the others to my inquiries.

She and I lingered outdoors after the others had gone into the house. She seemed quietly happy.

"Did you enjoy it?" she asked.

"Beautiful," I admitted; "almost too much for me. But some of the doings about got my goat."

She remained staring blankly at me for a moment, and then broke into a peal of chuckling laughter.

"You have some strange ways of saying things," she laughed. "Say something like that again."

"I am very much puzzled about tonight's happenings," I explained, "but I am afraid to ask questions——"

"You may ask me," she said with a smile that shone in the moonlight. "I won't get shocked."

I was so relieved to find my path clear thus far, that for the moment I could not think of the first question to ask.

"Who—?" I finally began, but suddenly a soft little hand covered my mouth. Then, as suddenly, it drew back, and its owner stepped away, abashed at what she had impulsively done. Just for a moment she was embarrassed; and then she threw back her head with that characteristic little toss that delighted my heart.

"Wait!" she whispered. "Not here. I almost forgot. We might be overheard. Wait right here."

She flew into the house. I waited there in the moonlight, with the gleaming foliage about me, for fifteen minutes. I surmised that she had run in to ask Kaspar permission for something she wished to do. And there dawned on me the answer to one question that had been ringing in my head: why was it that she seemed to stand out from the others? At least one cause for that was, that she was always ready and anxious to do some service for others. Then she came flying out of the house again, and I surmised that her breathlessness was due more to excitement than to exertion.

"Tomorrow morning at nine o'clock be ready," she ordered with great glee. "Have on your rough brown clothes and heavy boots, and prepare for adventure. And don't forget what you wanted to ask me."

CHAPTER VI

The Gulls' Nest

BY nine in the morning, Mildred had driven Sappho out in front of the house, and was sitting in the seat, waiting for me to come out.

A charming woman is always a fresh source of delightful surprise. Mildred in her "outing" things

was just as refreshing a change from Mildred of the "ball gown," as was the latter from the Mildred of the gray-brown gaberdine. To see her in a tight jacket and short skirt of greenish-brown and a pair of boots aroused a strange, deep enthusiasm within me. Her own eyes danced with excited anticipation. They surveyed me as I came toward her.

"I feel self-conscious in these things, after my two days in society clothes," I apologized, looking over my rough whipcord outfit. She smiled brightly as she saw me glance down at my left sleeve which she had sewn for me. I wondered if she had noted the bulge under my left arm where I had slung my big service pistol under my shirt. I had debated whether or not to carry it; but recollecting Kaspar's numerous dark hints of danger I formed a resolve never to go very far without my pistol, my hand ax at my belt, and my field-glasses over my shoulder. From then on I stuck to this rigidly.

"Hello Sappho, you old ash-can!" I shouted, slapping the fender. "You played a wicked trick on me the other day!"

"You mustn't speak roughly to poor little Sappho," Mildred interceded. "She has been a faithful friend in the Kaspar family."

As if in reply, Sappho gave a little jump forward as I was getting in, for Mildred was already setting the dials; and in another moment had started at a dignified rate down the street.

"I am all eagerness to know where we are going and what we are going to do," I said as we got started.

"I told you all that I possibly could, last night," Mildred replied enigmatically, as though someone were listening. "I think it would be wisest to say nothing until the time comes."

I was so surprised that I looked at her and opened my mouth as though to speak, and then looked all around to see who was eavesdropping. But she looked at me so sharply and quickly, as though someone were in reality listening, that I closed my mouth again and said nothing. I contented myself with looking at the great masses of foliage and flowers that buried the beautiful residences along the street on which we drove.

A couple of miles out of the city we came to a fork in the paved road. One continued straight ahead, to the west, and was lost on the horizon among flat, green fields. The car, however, turned into the one which branched off to the left, southwards. I was just sufficiently oriented to know that it led in the direction of the coast where I had first landed on the island, and was without doubt the same road by which we had entered the city on the first night.

For five or six miles we went through a perfectly flat country, covered with marvelously well-tended fields and apparently perfect crops. I took advantage of the opportunity to ask and receive some instruction in the operation of the car. There were direction dials and distance dials; and the route was planned like an equation in calculus. The method, however, required memorizing rather than understanding, unless one enjoyed wrestling with the abstract operation of integration that was involved.

For several miles we drove through a leafy tunnel, and then, as suddenly as we had entered, we emerged into the blinding sunlight. Ahead of us were granite cliffs, and beyond them, the sea. A broad turn of the road around the base of the cliffs brought us into the little harbor where Kaspar and I had landed from the black yacht. But now it was deserted. The little plank dock with the paved road leading to it were the only signs that lent a human value to the lonely place. Near the dock we stopped to get out of the car. Mildred twiddled the dials on the instrument board, whereupon the car turned around and drove back along the road by which we had come, disappearing in the gloom of the forest road.

"I'll never get over the uncanny effect of seeing these machines go about by themselves," I said. "Why couldn't it stand here and wait for us?"

"The place where we are going is a secret. We don't want even a car to know about it," she replied with perfect seriousness. She spoke as though the car might be an intruder into our little company of two; and the fancy pleased me. My father, who was a country practitioner in east Texas, often spoke of his cars as faithful creatures, as though they might have been living things, conscious of his gratitude.

"Soon," she continued, "we'll be able to talk all we want. But now come on. We have a lively walk ahead of us."

We turned to the right (or west), following the shore line, walking on the packed sand strewn with granite boulders. Finally we got in among the cliffs, and into a small canyon. We began to go upward, and our way soon formulated itself into a steep pathway. Mildred led me along at such a swift pace that I had no breath left with which to ask questions; I hurried along behind her, wondering what could be her purpose in bringing me here. At least, I thought, looking upward, we shall get high enough to get a good view out over the island. I was very eager for a bird's-eye view of this strange country. Now and again I caught a glimpse of the sea, and then of the forest in the distance. In some places it was really dangerous climbing.

Finally, after pushing upward for a good twenty minutes we reached the top, so unexpectedly that it surprised me. We were in a bowl, partly of sand and partly of bare granite, about the size of an ordinary dwelling room. We arrived at the edge nearest the sea, from which we could look out over the intensely blue ocean, and almost straight down at its lacy border of white foam where the waves broke on the pink granite. To the east and west the coastline extended to the horizon, a broad strip of yellow sand, occasional groups of cliffs, and back of them the forest, dense and dark. To the north I could not see, for there the cliffs forming the edge of the bowl rose a dozen feet higher than our heads. From the middle or bottom of the bowl I could see only sky.

"This is the Gulls' Nest!" panted Mildred. "Nobody knows of it but grandfather and me. He found it when I was a little girl. Look!"

She scraped away the sand from the middle of the floor, and revealed an iron trap-door with a ring.

"I was surprised when grandfather gave me permission to bring you here," she continued. "He even reminded me to teach you the combination of this."

She opened the door, revealing a small cellar in the rock, containing a supply of preserved foods in cans, jars and bottles.

"It is to be used in case of emergency only. Grandfather is always expecting emergencies."

"Dear old grandfather!" she went on earnestly. "He understands. You cannot imagine the torture of the past three days. How I have ached to ask you things about where you came from, and what your people are like, and what they do; and yet not daring to do so. Sometimes it has almost driven me frantic to pretend, that like the others, I did not care. They shut their eyes to the fact that you come from The Outside. I am so glad that we have a place where we can talk——"

AND so, instead of asking questions, I answered them. She seemed so hungry to know about the outside world that I did not have the heart to obtrude my own curiosity. Nevertheless, my mind was full

of questions, and I watched eagerly for an opportunity to ask them. Why is it that the island people do not dare to talk about the outside world? Why this fear of being overheard, even where there could not possibly be anyone to overhear? What had happened to Ames, and why? Who was behind that mysterious abduction? Where were the engineers and the people who tended and repaired the machinery? Where were the shops and factories and warehouses? And, I was restless to look to the north, out over the island, past this granite wall behind me.

But for an hour I talked of Galveston, and of the countless other cities dotted over our broad land, teeming with their millions of people. I talked of rich and poor; of laborers and soldiers and police; of wickedness and charity; of railroads, airplanes, and ships—of all the things she had never seen nor heard of. She listened with wide-open eyes fixed on me, scarcely breathing, and then I knew for a fact, that these things had been unknown to her. Therefore, it was not surprising that my own curiosity faded in the thrill of imparting the things that to her were so strange and startling.

"Why! It's nearly noon!" Mildred suddenly exclaimed in surprise. "We didn't bring a lunch, and it wouldn't do to draw on the emergency things. We'll have to hurry home, or we'll starve."

"I'm already doing that now," I said. "But——?" I turned toward the blank wall to the north of us.

"Ah, I know. You would prefer starvation to missing seeing something." She laughed archly. "Well, I knew you would want to look out over the island."

She led the way along a path at one side, to the top of the wall at the north. From this I beheld a perfectly amazing view.

Immediately below, over a wild and desolate area of granite cliffs, I could see a dense, dark forest. Beyond it were broad, green fields through which wound the shining river and far in the distance a ridge of hazy blue mountains. For all I could tell, the island might extend in that direction for a thousand miles. On my right, toward the southeast was the city. A City of Beauty it was indeed, with its red roofs and many-colored buildings, its gleaming domes and graceful towers, only partially seen for the cushions of green among which they rested. All around the city, along the flat bottom lands of the river valley, were the level, green, cultivated fields. Around these was the forest, like a belt. One glance told me that without a doubt, these thousands of acres had been cleared of timber and reclaimed from the virgin jungle, by the hand of man. Here was a vast work, whose achievement must have been thrilling history.

On my left, toward the northeast, was the jungle, impenetrable, dark-green, with a million scintillating reflections on its surface, stretching for miles and miles toward the blue horizon. And on that horizon, a couple of points to the west of northwest, hung a dark, dense pall of heavy smoke. It was a gloomy, depressing smudge that caused a discordant note in that spreading and luxuriant paradise.

"What!" I exclaimed. "A volcano?"

Quickly I reached for my field-glasses, and as I swung them around to the dense nucleus of the smoky smudge near the horizon, my surprise was so great that I nearly lost my balance on the narrow ridge. For there were black shapes and towering masses of buildings, belching chimneys, and a typical skyline of an immense industrial metropolis.

It looked as though it might be twenty miles away. A white ribbon of road led from the City of Beauty toward that black nucleus, sprinkled with swiftly moving dots of traffic. It was an artery carrying a busy black stream between the two cities. The sight of it brought back all the fire of my curiosity again.

"A city!" I exclaimed. "So there are other cities on the island?"

"Just the two," Mildred answered. "That is the City of Smoke!"

"Smoke is right!" I said, with much feeling in my tones.

"That is where the machines are," she continued. "That is where they make all the things for us. That is probably where Kendall Ames is. Those are the things you wanted to ask about."

She looked around as though afraid someone would overhear her, and then recollected herself and smiled at her absent-minded betrayal of the force of habit.

So that was it! Beauty and comfort were so important that everything involving dirt, noise, smoke, and unsightliness had to be put into a separate and distant city. By what arrangement did the aristocracy in the City of Beauty live and lord over the thousands that must be toiling over yonder? To such a degree had they carried their fastidiousness that they could not even bear to see a workman or to talk about him. All they could endure was smoothly running machinery.

ON the face of it, one would think that these would be characteristic of a hard-hearted and cruel race. Yet these people in the City of Beauty did not look like that at all. To me they appeared merely light-hearted and thoughtless.

"And Supervision?" I asked.

"Yes, that is where they go for Supervision."

"What is it? What do they supervise?" I asked eagerly.

"Machines. They all take turns going there. Except me. I have never been to Supervision."

"You mean that your people supervise the work that goes on over there in that smoking beehive?"

"Yes. That is what they do."

I put that away for future digestion. I could not quite reconcile a good many things I had seen. In the meanwhile, there was another interesting point.

"How does it happen that you are an exception, and that you do not have to do supervising?" I asked.

"I seem to be specially favored on account of my grandfather. He invented and made those machines. He owns all this country and the cities. He brought me up differently than the others have been brought up. He taught me things about the great world in which you are struggling so hard to be something. But there are still many things that I would like to know, and he thinks I am still a small child and that I cannot understand."

"I've got to see that place," I finally said. "I am going over there to look it over."

She regarded me for a moment in horrified silence.

"I knew you would! It is just like you!" She stepped back and looked me over gravely. "But you mustn't go!"

"Well, well. Why not?"

"Why!" she gasped. "That is a terrible thing to do!"

"I've gone into other cities, as black and smoky as that one. It all washes off when you come out."

"But I can't let you go——" She hesitated and stopped; and then put her hand on my sleeve and looked at me appealingly. This, of course, stirred my determination tenfold. I would have gone through the fires of hell for that, and for the brown eyes looking up at me, and the little quiver around the corners of the mouth.

"Yet, you wouldn't think much of me if I didn't go, would you?" I demanded, with what I felt to be a sheepish grin.

"We cannot stand here and argue," she said sternly. "It's time to go home and eat. Come."

"Wait," I urged. "We've got a lot to say yet; at least I have. If hunger is your only reason for going back, leave it to me. That's an old problem with me."

She looked at me dubiously.

"We'll have to get down to the ground, though. Lead the way down."

In silence she led the way down the path, among the sand and boulders, and in her attitude I read some annoyance but more wonderment and curiosity. When we had clambered down to the level ground, we distinguished Sappho standing at the side of the road, near the dock, waiting to take us home.

"Sappho will have to be patient and wait for us," I remarked jocularly, pleased with my little fancy of personifying the machine. Mildred tossed her head and said nothing.

My idea was first to look about and see if there was any prospect of catching some fish to make a lunch on. I looked carefully through my pockets, through the car, over the dock, and along the shore, but found nothing that would serve as either hook or line, or as a spear. So, I turned to the forest, which was much more in my line; I felt confident that there I could find something to eat. A walk of a hundred yards brought us to the dense growth of underbrush and tangled vines at the edge of it. I asked Mildred to wait for me near the road.

"And do not be afraid if you hear me shoot," I added.

"Oh, I know about shooting. Grandfather has some rifles and has taught me how."

My training with the Texas Rangers had taught me to proceed through a thicket with scarce a sound. I kept my eyes open for edible plants; and my ears told me of small animals moving about near me. After I had squirmed along for a dozen yards, I found the growth more open; so I got out my pistol and looked around. I chuckled at the ridiculousness of it—shooting rabbits with a pistol firing a bullet as big as my thumb. Ahead of me was a large hollow log, big enough to afford a hiding place from which I might take a shot at some passing creature that looked promising as a luncheon. I stepped into it, and there was a sudden flurry and a number of diminutive grunts; something brown wriggled at my feet. Mechanically, I brought down the butt of my pistol heavily upon it, before my consciousness had time to figure out what it might be. It squirmed and kicked a few times and lay still.

I dragged it out into the light. It was as big as a large rabbit, but looked rather like an awkward squirrel, with a curved snout like a pig. I had never seen anything like it before; but I was sure from my general knowledge of game that it was good to eat.

"An agouti!" said Mildred when she saw it. "Poor little fellow."

I was very much amused by her expression as she watched me build a fire, skin the animal, cut it in convenient pieces and roast them on spits of green branches. At first she was somewhat disgusted by the proceeding; but that soon gave way to a fascinated interest, and at the end her hunger compelled her to watch the browning and savory pieces with considerable eager anticipation. Before we had finished eating, and taken our fill of water from a stream which she showed me, she was quite transported with delight. This was a totally new experience for her, and obviously a delightful one.

For me there was also some satisfaction in it. It was some consolation for the awkwardness which I felt among these people, to know that I could look after myself in a pinch and that this flower of an exalted civilization was to some extent dependent on me; that she considered me some sort of a hero.

When luncheon was over, we turned back up toward the Gulls' Nest, with an unspoken mutual understanding. That was the only place where free talk was possible.

"Now tell me," I said, as soon as I could get my breath on the concave top of the cliff, "whom do I see to arrange about going over there?"

"But you don't understand," she said in a voice that almost had tears in it. "There is no way to arrange to go there. There is no one to see."

"Humph!" I grunted. "That means I'll just have to pick up and go. It looks like a long walk. Will you help me some more in learning how to run a car?"

"I'll go with you and I'll drive it for you!" she cried, with a sudden earnest inspiration.

"You're a little brick!" I exclaimed; and, to my own astonishment, I detected a warm tone in my voice that I had never heard there before.

She stared at me a moment and then burst out laughing. It was my turn to stare.

"I'll never get used to your queer ways of putting things," she said. "Little brick! I'm a little brick! Please say some more things like that."

"So you'd like to go with me?" I pondered aloud. "No. That won't do. There must be some sort of danger there. If I knew what it was we might consider your going. But I'll be back soon."

"You must not tell anyone that you are going——"

"You mean they might try to prevent me?" I asked incredulously.

"No. But you have no idea how vulgar the machines seem to them. It must be kept so secret that I must tell you good-bye and wish you good luck here and now. We can't down there."

She held out a little hand to me.

I looked down into the big brown eyes turned up to mine, and the world went round and round with me. Slowly, very slowly, my arm stole round her shoulders and another round her waist. Slowly our heads drew together. She was so still that she seemed not to breathe. Her eyes closed and her head lay back on my arm. Slowly I kissed those soft red lips, whose smiles I had watched so often playing round the sunny teeth. While the waves roared below and the great birds soared above, I once more held that little body close to me, and with great calmness, as though I had a thousand years to do it in, I kissed her. My whole world was changed by that one long kiss.

"I love you!" I whispered.

She opened her eyes and looked up at me with an expression of radiant happiness; her hair and eyes and the curve of her cheek gave a sort of melting impression, and then she buried her head in my shoulder.

"That means you're mine forever?"

Her head nodded "yes" without looking up.

"And that you're going back to my world with me?"

"I want to do that above everything else, Davy, dear." She looked up at me and her arms went about my neck. "I want to get out of this empty, useless life."

"You were very beautiful last night," I whispered.

"I tried to look pretty for you. Did you guess that?"

ALL at once time seemed to have stopped for us. It seemed that but a few moments had passed when it occurred to me to look at my watch. It was late in the afternoon! Mildred looked worried.

"We must hurry," she exclaimed. "Grandfather will be dreadfully worried about us. Come. That was a wonderful good-bye."

So, with my arm about her, we started for the path that led down the cliff.

"Be very careful, Davy dear, that nothing happens to you," she said in a low, earnest voice. "You are my whole world and life to me now."

"What could happen?"

"I don't know. But they have already gotten many people and we have never seen them again."

"There!" I said triumphantly. "That is my reason for going there. I want to solve the mystery. What happens to all of your people?"

"Yes," she agreed; "I am so anxious to know that I am willing to let you go——" She stopped suddenly, with a catch in her breath.

There stood Kaspar, panting heavily from climbing up the path. We dropped apart and stood looking at him in embarrassment. He smiled.

"Bless your hearts, children; do not let yourself be disturbed by an old man like me. I was very much worried about you, however. So many things might happen. But this explains it." There was a merry twinkle in his eyes.

"But what is that I hear, Davy, about your going somewhere?" he suddenly demanded in great earnestness. We confessed to my plan to visit the City of Smoke.

He stood for many minutes, gazing at me in silence, and his white-bearded face was inscrutable.

"As I remember the young men of the world which I left, when I also was young," he mused, "there would be little use in my trying to talk you out of that. It is the same spirit that brought you to this island; and now I am glad that you came. But why must you risk your life unnecessarily, just as you have found happiness for yourself and given it to others? Listen: things are shaping up now so that it may soon be possible for you to take another kind of trip—back to your own country."

"That news," I replied, "would not have interested me this morning as it does now." I could not erase a broad smile of happiness from my face, nor could I resist a fond glance at Mildred. "But I must solve some questions before I leave this island."

Kaspar shook his head.

"It is a great worry to load on an old man's heart. Perhaps if you could think, as I can, of numerous others who have started out, as you wish to do, to learn the secrets of that grim City of Smoke and have never returned, you would think twice."

"If the ones I have seen are fair samples, I do not wonder that they have never returned," I sniffed contemptuously. "I don't get paralyzed every time I see a machine, and lie down and let it carry me off."

Kaspar put his hand on my shoulder and said earnestly:

"Then wait until I have shown you something in the City of Beauty that you have not yet seen. Tomorrow I shall take you with me to see some people whom you will respect more than those you have already met. I have been watching and studying you from the first time I saw you. Now I know you are qualified to enter the Circle. Will you promise to wait for twenty-four hours?"

I promised.

CHAPTER VII

I Become a Rebel

I SPENT many hours in a species of intoxication. My head was light with the joy of what had happened. Suddenly, unexpectedly, within a few days, something beautiful had come into my life that stirred me and made me restless with a fire that I had never known before.

So, for the first time since I had been on the island, I awoke quite late in the morning. Kaspar and Mildred were already waiting for me. I looked wonderingly and inquiringly at them, with their hats on, as though ready for a journey, and at Sappho waiting out in front. Mildred bade me good morning with a warm light in her eyes that sent my composure whirling head over heels.

"Today we are taking you to a certain Committee Meeting," Kaspar explained.

I had forgotten all about that. I started, as I felt an embarrassed flush spread over my face; for the thoughts of Mildred and our newly discovered love had driven all else out of my mind.

"I—I—I'm sorry if I kept you waiting very long," I apologized.

"There is no hurry," Kaspar said, with his kind, patriarchal smile. "In my opinion you are eminently excusable for forgetting such a trivial thing as a Committee Meeting under the circumstances."

"And what sort of——?" I began.

Kaspar held up a warning finger.

"I must remind you that we dare not say too much," he admonished. "Here we never know when the slightest whisper may be picked up and carried over a wire!"

Again that sudden jolt! How many times already, just as I was beginning to feel that the island was a paradise of civilized progress and beauty, came that sudden, sinking hint of some terrible, overpowering thing hanging over it all!

This elaborate secrecy, and these hints of a "Committee" told me that even in the City of Beauty, among these fair and talented children of joy, there were things going on that were not apparent on the surface.

Soon the city was far behind us. The river was our companion on the left; and on our right was a broad, flat, green stretch, as carefully tended and well kept as the finest of lawns. I enjoyed its level, peaceful, solitary beauty.

"What is this? A golf course?" I inquired.

"This is the Hopo course," Mildred explained. "No one plays until afternoon. Then you will see many horses and riders. It is half a mile wide and ten miles long."

"It must take an immense amount of labor to keep it looking as neat and smooth as this," I suggested.

"The machines attend to it. There are a great many special mowing and rolling machines caring for the Hopo field."

She seemed to dismiss all concern about it quite readily from her mind, taking the fact for granted that the responsibility was to be unloaded upon the machinery. My mind kept dwelling on the vastness of the work required to keep these thousands of acres as green and cropped and flat as the trimmest lawn in front of a residence. I would have liked to see the machinery that did it.

MILE after mile we drove. At first the fresh greenness was pleasant, but eventually it began to seem endless and monotonous. However, the girl at my side would have kept the desert of Sahara from seeming monotonous. Then, quite suddenly, we stopped.

We hadn't arrived anywhere. At some time we had left the road, and now on all sides of us were endless flat, green stretches. On the east and west, the greenness merged into the horizon; no City of Beauty was visible. On the north was the gleaming blue river far in the distance; and on the south the difference in color of the verdure indicated that there must be cultivated fields some distance from us. Beyond these, a dim, purple line on the horizon, was the forest. We dismounted from the car and I stared about in surprise. However, I was beginning to learn to say little and observe much.

Kaspar sent the car back. Never would I get over the wonder of it, though now I was seeing it every day:

a few twists of the dials, and the machinery began to hum in rhythmic cadences of change, while the empty car swung about, turned backward toward the city, and sped away, dwindling to a small dot in the distance. As we watched it depart we saw several other cars approaching.

In the meanwhile I pondered on the reasons for sending the car back. Why could it not stand here and wait until they were ready to go back? Wasn't it a waste of fuel and machinery? The idea of waste did not seem to occur to anyone here at all. The wealth of natural resources and the vast available mechanical facilities were utilized lavishly and riotously, without a thought of economy. And I began to attach some suspicion to the car itself.

We started out on foot, continuing in the direction in which we had driven. There were dark figures of people ahead of us; they looked infinitely tiny in the vast spaces. Before long we made out a considerable group of them; as we drew near, I decided that there must be about fifty persons gathered together and as many more coming on behind.

"It is now safe to talk as we wish," Kaspar began.

I looked about me and decided in my mind that the factor that made it safe was the fact that nowhere was there any machinery in sight, nor any possibility of concealed wires, microphones, periscopes or cameras. Nothing but flat lawn and sky. Kaspar continued:

"However, just now there won't be time to explain things to you fully. And they must be explained fully, or you would neither understand nor believe them. I am planning on finding a time and a place at which this can be done; I shall make revelations that will astound you. We cannot waste the time of those people talking about things that are familiar to them."

"I note that most of these people are strangers to me," I observed.

"You have heretofore met only those that live in our section of that city and whom we meet almost daily. The people present here are from all over the city. They constitute a committee of such few of us as have retained the power of independent thinking. I might term it a Revolutionary Committee."

"And do they always meet here?" I asked.

"There is no regular meeting place. We change from one to another, with a view to safety and secrecy. This place is good because we can see the approach of any vehicle from a long distance, and long before anyone observing us can guess what we are about."

People recognized and greeted the Kaspars constantly, and I could not help remarking the respectful deference that was paid to the old man. There were a few women in the group. By far the most of the persons were men of past middle age, with a good sprinkling of the very aged, as was Kaspar. Young men of my age and younger were relatively scarce, but I saw a few. I was presented to a great many of the people. All of them seemed keenly interested in me, listened intently to the peculiarities of my speech as compared with theirs, and looked me over with a great deal of curiosity. But they all greeted me warmly and seemed glad to have me present.

New arrivals continued to appear for a quarter of an hour and then the vast stretches of lawn in all directions were clear. The people gravitated together without any signal, and the meeting began. They sat in rows on the grass, quite close together, making a compact group, a tiny clump in the midst of the vast green distances. I was not surprised to see the place of the presiding officer filled by the burly figure of Cassidy. He called the meeting to order in a low tone of voice.

"We cannot proceed with any business," he began, "until all present are satisfied as to the eligibility of a new person among us. John Kaspar will introduce him.

Kaspar rose and beckoned to me. He led me up to the front, beside Cassidy. He turned and addressed the assemblage:

"For our struggle against the encroaching domination of the City of Smoke, we have in our ranks much experience and wisdom, but we are sadly lacking in youth and daring. When I think of the young people of this island chasing shadows and losing all spirit of self-determination my heart grows heavy. Here is a young man from the Outside, the grandson of a boyhood chum of mine. We need him among us. From the moment that I first saw him I have watched him closely, telling him nothing, but keeping him on probation. Every step of the way he has demonstrated his courage and his quick-witted self-reliance. In our desperate stand against the mechanical powers he will be a valuable ally."

He went on and told of how I had followed him and gained my way aboard the yacht; of my rescue of Mildred on the dock, at which there were horrified gasps, and a girl sitting near Mildred, similarly clad in gray-brown, put both arms around her; of my escape from the car speeding toward the City of Smoke; and of my stand against the machine that had abducted Ames, at which there was a good deal of nodding of gray-haired and white-bearded heads in admiring approval.

Then Cassidy spoke:

"I shall also vouch for him and I am proud to have him present. I wish he were my own son."

HE paused a moment in thought. I wondered if it were because his own child could certainly not be classed as mentally capable of taking part in the movement represented in this meeting.

"And we need him," Cassidy continued. "Our ranks ought to be increasing but they are growing thinner. We lose our members faster than we get new ones. Only three days ago Houchins junior disappeared; they got him as they got his father before him. Out of all of the thousands in the city, it is hard to find new recruits for our ranks. The people are being put to sleep by comfort and luxury; and their souls are being taken away, as well as their bodies. Davy Breckenridge will be valuable to us, not merely because of his youth and daring, but also because of his knowledge and experience. In his own country he has done valiant deeds, and he has had a training in the practical needs of tasks such as we have set ourselves."

Then he put to vote the question as to whether I should be accepted into the group. The vote was enthusiastic in my favor; hands went up and people shouted "Aye!" Then he turned to me.

"The will of the assembly is that you be one of us, and I welcome you." He held out his hand.

"I'm sure that I appreciate the honor very much," I said hesitatingly; "but before I know what to do about it, I shall have to understand what it is all about."

Kaspar spoke.

"Pending the time when I can take you up to the secret little meeting-place that you know about, and tell you the long and complex story that is involved, let me ask you if you can see sufficiently with your own eyes the decadence and blindness of the present generation, the increase in power and terror of the machines, and the certain doom ahead of our poor people unless something desperate is done? Do you not feel willing to help and wait for explanations until they are possible?"

"Yes," I replied; "I have seen enough to know that something is wrong, and that some sort of help is needed. I am devoured with curiosity to know what it is; I am kept awake nights wondering about it. Yet

A half dozen motorcycles were approaching, coming on like the wind.

I see the wisdom of your reasons. At least I can say that I am very much interested."

"Besides," Kaspar said, "you, yourself, are in considerable danger. By your very act of following me on board the ship, then by your deeds that night in the dock, and again on the river with the logs, and above all, that night at the pavilion, you have attracted attention to yourself as an unusual person and an undesirable one to the reigning powers. I knew you would, the first time I talked to you that evening on the ship, before we had gotten out of sight of Galveston. They are after you and they may get you at any moment."

"If I can judge by what I see," I replied, "they'll have to hustle harder than they ever hustled before if they want to catch me. They won't find me letting myself be carried away like a sheep. And if they do get me, I'm going to get in a few good licks first, and I'd like to start right now. Just give me a few hours to get this business studied up and straightened out. Then I can get you people started to working properly, and you'll lick them whether I'm with you or not. I've watched this business, and I've got it figured out already that your adversaries have all the possible material advantages, but that somehow they lack the personal equation; they do not seem to know how to follow up their opportunities."

Cassidy was delighted and he wrung my hand.

"I knew you would be valuable to us," he shouted.

"Well, I've got something for you right now," I continued. "When you said that you needed young men, you said a mouthful. I know a young fellow who belongs right here, and you'll never be complete without him."

I turned to Mildred:

"Do you remember on the night of the grand march at the pavilion, I waited for you near a group of boys, and there was a tall boy with a square chin and steady eyes, and you saw me speak to him later——"

"Oh, that is Perry Becker!" she interrupted.

"Perry Becker!" "Yes, I know him!" "He's too young!" several voices exclaimed at the same time.

"Nothing of the kind," I answered impatiently. "He's sixteen. If you wait any longer, he will decay like the rest of them. You need more like what he is. Get them while they still have spirit."

"Correct!" shouted Cassidy; his bellowing voice carried in this emptiness and the tones of the others sounded faint beside his.

"Perry Becker will help us find other young fellows of his age and way of thinking," I suggested.

"We'll have him at our next meeting——" Kaspar began.

Suddenly I heard a sputter and a rattle and a roar in the distance from the direction of the city. There was a sudden hush among the gathered people. Before my eyes everyone turned pale. One after another of them rose and looked toward the city, whence the uproar came.

A half dozen motorcycles were approaching, coming on like the wind. They advanced in a rank, abreast of each other and about a hundred yards apart. In a few seconds they changed from tiny dots on the smooth grass to hurtling, smoking masses, bearing down precipitately upon us.

A panic, wild and terrified, seized upon the gathered committee. Everybody got up and ran; they scrambled over each other to get away, in all directions, like a flock of little chickens. In a few seconds the orderly Committee Meeting had melted. There was a fleeing, helter-skelter mob, scattering over the green levels, running precipitately, stumbling, falling, getting up again; there were several acres of panicky runaway figures. I shouted after them:

"Hi! Come back! That's foolish!"

I shouted until I was hoarse, impatient and irritated.

"What a bunch of fools!" I swore to myself.

I turned around. I found Mildred holding my arm in her two hands and staring defiantly around. Kaspar and Cassidy stood behind me. Kaspar was calm, so calm that it looked wrong. Cassidy had torn his collar open and was glaring belligerently in a semicircle, and swinging his doubled fists, that looked like a pair of pile-drivers.

In another moment the machines had whizzed by and turned into disappearing dots in the eastern distance. They were tiny things, not over three feet high, and there certainly were no people on them.

Cassidy stood and stared after them for several minutes. He turned to the rest of us with a blank look, and then under his breath he released several expletives, which heretofore I had not been aware were in circulation on the island. Finally he leaned back and laughed. He laughed until he roared and the tears came.

"It is mostly our guilty consciences that caused the rout," he explained, and laughed again.

"That is only the regular green-patrol of the Hopo field," he went on. "But we are nervous and jumpy. Look!"

He pointed toward the city. Several more dark bulks were slowly approaching.

"They come by every third or fourth day. There come the mowers and rollers. Those little things go on ahead to assure a clear track and lay out the course. 'Leading-machines,' we have come to call them. They are in common use for all automatic mechanical work."

It was not long before the scattered people recognized their mistake and came trooping back, looking quite sheepish; though many of them were big enough to have the sense of humor to laugh. Cassidy continued to laugh for a long time. The burly, phlegmatic fellow must have been under a severe nervous strain. At the time of the emergency he had been cool and steady, ready to deal with the situation. That he was unnerved afterwards made me sure that much more had been at stake than merely his own skin. I knew such people well.

I had not laughed at any time. It did not look funny to me; it looked pitiful. If it had been a real attack, they would have been hunted down like rabbits, to the last individual. And they had actually acted as though they had expected nothing else than to be killed on the spot. What sort of a terrible mystery was here?

WHILE the group re-formed the ponderous mowers and rollers went by. There were a dozen of the towering, clattering hulks spread out in line, advancing down half the width of the field, each bigger and noisier than the biggest road-machine I had ever seen in western Texas; and they proceeded irresistibly, reminding me in their inexorable advance of tanks. Behind them they towed great truckloads of mowed grass. Nowhere about them were any human beings visible. When they passed they left lawns as smooth and flat as a table top.

When Cassidy opened the meeting again for business I rose and addressed him, hastening to get ahead of anyone else.

"Do you really want me to help you?" I inquired of the whole assembly.

"Sure" said Cassidy positively. "I can speak for one and all present."

"Then I am glad this happened," I continued. "It has pointed out to me the thing that you need worst if you are to succeed. It is a simple thing, but you've got to have it or you won't last long."

Not a sound broke the silence. All eyes were bent eagerly on me."

"And that is *discipline*. Without some type of formal discipline you are lost. In order to make discipline possible you need some form of organization. The only one I can suggest, because it is the only one I know, is the military type. But I can assure you that it is effective and practical. If I teach you, will you drill and play the game? Do you wish to begin right now?"

A forest of waving hands was eagerly raised in the air.

So Cassidy and I went up and down the rows, picking out the most likely ones to form the beginning nucleus of an organization. Rather quickly we located nine young fellows out of about twenty, and then it was more difficult. Finally we had sixteen men who looked promising as material for leaders. I noted during our selection that Mildred and the young lady with her in similar dress were talking very excitedly and watching us eagerly. Toward the end, when I called the sixteen out in front, the two girls came up to me.

"Aren't you going to let us in?" they asked disappointedly.

I was puzzled as to what to do. In my military experience woman had no place. Yet here it looked rather logical. After a conference with Kaspar and Cassidy we made up a squad of girls, with a view to a separate organization of women, to receive similar training.

I requested the other members of the group who had not been chosen as recruits to remain behind me and watch what was going on, urging them to try and learn as much as possible about it, for their turn would come before long.

I took my twenty-four recruits and taught them how to form a straight line and to stand at attention. At

my first command of "Attention!" most of them were rather astonished at the preemptory and businesslike tone of voice. But there is reason for the tone of military commands, and it worked. For once these *blasé* people took something seriously, and in a few minutes they were working hard. With sharp commands I put them through "Forward, march!" and "Squads, right!", exacting rigid compliance with the regulations.

There, on the vast, flat, green spaces, with the little knot of spectators behind me, I put my tiny line through its maiden evolutions. I did not hesitate to jerk out my commands with proper sternness, and to use top-sergeant methods on the sluggards. For they needed it. Their lives sadly lacked rigid training. They did not like it, but I had to give them credit for being game. They apparently saw a glimmer to the effect that it was necessary and good for them, and they took it all like the good sports they were. They came out of it much better than they went in. I think that they learned more that forenoon of real, deep human values, than they ever had known in their previous lives; while to me it meant considerable satisfaction that their intentions were serious, and that they were going to work, even if it came hard.

After the drill, the meeting continued in an informal manner for a while. I directed everyone present to write down everything he had learned as quickly as possible, in order that he might retain it correctly and pass it on accurately to others; for I wanted each one of those present to begin drilling a platoon of his own without delay. Cassidy was chosen as the head of a committee to select and judge new recruits. Before the meeting was over, the matter of training was an organized machine, that could proceed under its own power, independent of me, except for the matter of teaching a few leaders.

I was a little amused at the surprise and relief of the recruits who had been drilling, after I had given the command "Dismissed!" They had never seen anything like it: one moment I was on a rigidly stern pinnacle above them; and the next I was mingling with them cordially and democratically. But they were wonderful folks. They did not say much about it, though I was sure all were thinking hard.

"There must never be another panic like this," I said to the assembled people. "From now on, you must drill every day. The Hopo fields, the eastern beaches, anywhere you can find places where you are safe from observation, must be your drill grounds. In the meanwhile, I shall study the main features of your situation and analyze them, to see where I can be of further assistance to you."

Noontime came and the meeting had to break up. As we walked over to where our cars were coming to meet us, we saw an occasional Hopo rider with his long mallet, swinging along as the vanguard of the afternoon play. Many of the people shook my hand and seemed happy over my efforts. Everywhere among them was enthusiasm; each one seemed as though he had just discovered something new and wonderful. Cassidy walked beside me.

"Looks good to me, boy!" he said. "I knew you'd do something. I've got genuine hopes now."

"Well," I mused; "I'll be glad when I know what it's all about."

"In a day or two you shall know. Kaspar will tell you the whole story. It is a difficult thing to tell to a stranger. In the meanwhile, be careful how you talk and where you talk. We need you now."

"I'll be careful," I promised; but I kept wondering to myself how in thunder a thing like this could be managed without a lot of talking to people.

"You seem to have stirred things up," Cassidy went on; "Thus far our meetings have been a wonderful comfort and mutually sympathetic. But there had been no objective; we didn't know how to go about doing something definite. Now, it looks to me that delivery from our slavery to the machines and the end of the degeneration of our people are near at hand. I have real hopes of breaking away from the City of Smoke. Oh, will the time ever come when we can cease to worry about our best friends? Do you realize that at this moment we are not sure that tomorrow Mildred will not disappear to an unknown fate?"

"We've got to get down to business," I said, gritting my teeth at the thought. "I foresee trouble, and there is lots to do. People are going to get hurt. Have you ever thought of that? Your people aren't prepared for anything. This afternoon you must pick me out a dozen bright people, and I'll start out a bunch in first-aid training so that we could turn them loose as teachers; and another bunch preparing supplies."

Cassidy nodded reflectively.

"And what do these people know about taking care of themselves in case the service of the machines should fail them?" I went on. "How many can rustle up a meal and cook it, or prepare a night's shelter? How many could raise something to eat for an unproductive period? Does anyone know anything about weapons?"

"You make me ashamed of myself and of the whole island," Cassidy admitted. "For so long have we been accustomed to living without any need of these things, that it has never occurred to us that it might be otherwise. These are all forgotten arts. Yet, I can see that the time is apt to come when we shall need them. There are probably some racking experiences ahead for us. But better that than this slavery. Davy, we've needed you badly to stir us up."

"If you find me people, I shall teach them," I proposed eagerly. "I'll help you get organized. Your people are excellent material, and take to it well. With a little training and organization, you can work against your apparently powerful enemies with some show of hope on your side. I'm enthusiastic about getting to work at once. In fact, I'm thankful for having something real to do. This social stuff was beginning to get the best of me."

ALL of that day, while I watched the people, talked to them, and worked with them, there was a hidden undercurrent of thought in my mind. There, ever present, was that black, smoking city, with its white thread of a road stretching over here toward us, teeming with hundreds of busy, speeding vehicles, like a pulsing artery between two centers. I remembered that fork of the road where we had turned off to the left on the previous morning; that other branch went straight ahead, inviting and beckoning with mystery. It was the road to the City of Smoke. What was there in that gloomy metropolis? Why was it kept such a secret? I had promised Kaspar that I would wait twenty-four hours. That twenty-four-hour period was now over.

Then, one night at midnight, I was awakened from my sleep by an unusual commotion in the Kaspar home. People walking about, queer, catchy and strained voices penetrated thickly to me. I threw on some clothes, and opening my door, cautiously looked out. I saw Phyllis sobbing in Mildred's arms and Mildred, pale and wild-eyed, trying to comfort her. Kaspar was walking nervously back and forth across the room, and Mrs. Kaspar was in a big chair with her head bowed on her hands. I stood and stared awhile, and finally came out among them.

"This is the worst blow of all," Kaspar groaned. "Without him we are lost."

"Who? What has happened?" I demanded.

"Cassidy is gone. They've got him!" Kaspar groaned and sat down.

I am afraid that I used an ungentlemanly word. I stood for a few moments struck dumb. But there was nothing I could do there. I turned and walked back into my room, where I began picking things out of my suitcase and packing a haversack to carry slung over my shoulder. My determination was made.

CHAPTER VIII

To the City of Smoke

DURING my life I had gone through enough danger and excitement to have developed the ability to lie down and snatch a few hours' sleep in the face of an approaching crisis. Not knowing just what was ahead of me now, I took care to get into bed and relax completely, so that I might gather strength and poise for my coming adventure. Also I had the much more common ability to wake up exactly at a previously determined hour.

In the morning I was awake at sunrise, feeling fit and alert. Dressing was a matter of a few moments, and I ate a double breakfast. I wrote the following note on a large sheet of paper and pinned it to the middle of the rug:

> I have gone to the City of Smoke. I am leaving quietly because I cannot bear dissuasions and leave-takings. I promise to take good care of myself; and when I return I expect to bring with me some knowledge that will be useful to you in your struggle. I hope that I can find Cassidy and be of some use to him. I know that you will not mind my using Sappho, for my purpose is the good of the cause.
>
> Davy Breckenridge.

I took with me my pistol and ten spare clips of shells, the hand ax and field-glasses, a canteen, a flashlight and extra batteries, and some dried emergency rations. I debated for a while whether or not to include my blanket, but finally left it behind, because its bulk would impede my movements too much.

I left with only one regret, and that was that I had not yet heard Kaspar's explanation of what the war was about. A better knowledge of what was going on would have been to my advantage in getting about the strange city, and in gathering information to help these people in their stand against their oppressors. But, I reasoned that my present plan was best; for since Kaspar was afraid to talk openly around here, it would take a half a day or more before suitable opportunity could be found to tell me his story, which he stated was long and complicated. I was unwilling to risk any such delay; things might happen to prevent me from going. If I was to do Cassidy any good, I had better start quickly. Though, how I could find him in that vast hive, I had no idea.

I had to confess that at certain moments my project struck me as somewhat foolhardy: starting out alone into a city totally unknown to me, and where I had certainly received ample warning that danger awaited me. However, there was a good deal to discount this danger. What these soft and luxurious people considered a danger might be little more than superstition. And I intended to be careful, to keep a sharp lookout ahead of me, and to know what I was getting into before taking each step. This was to be a sort of scouting or reconnoitering expedition. I had no clear or definite plans. Each stage would have to be guided by what I had already found.

Turning these things over in my mind, I stole out of the house and opened the garage doors. My instructions in running the car were far from complete, and my practice meager; but I had handled it enough by this time to feel sure that I could get to my present destination with it. The sight of the jolly little roadster resting there in its stall put me into high spirits again. I spoke to it in the jocular manner that I had fallen into:

"All right, Sappho, you old coffee-grinder; we'll slip off by ourselves this morning."

My derogatory epithets were pure fun, for the car was trim and swift-looking, and its machinery in the most perfect order, as far as I could tell by its sound and its performance. I continued to talk to it as I got in and studied the dials. I went to work carefully to set them. It was like working the combination of a big safe. There were four for directions, and a distance dial to set each time between them, while the left hand handled the speed dial simultaneously during the entire time. A little pointer traveled on a chart all the while, to check up the setting as well as to assist in determining directions and distances from a map when these were unknown to the driver. The study of this map provided me with much subsequently useful knowledge of the island and the cities.

"Now, all aboard for the City of Smoke!" I almost shouted in my glee, as I completed the "setting" and the machinery under the hood began to purr.

With a soft, rustling sound of its marvelous mechanism, the little green-black car glided out of the garage and into the street. I was as elated as a child with a new toy, at having succeeded in operating it on my own initiative.

"Attaboy Sappho!" I applauded. "If we go on like this, we'll have Cassidy out of jail and take a shot at this 'Supervision' business before night."

I watched the streets with eager attention, checking up the places I already knew, to ascertain if the car was carrying me correctly. Now I could not help being impressed with the marvelous ingenuity of the automatic mechanism of the car; for I had to admit that I had laid out no more than the general features of the route, while the smaller details, such as turning corners, avoiding passing cars and obstacles in the road, were all taken care of by the machinery, without knowledge or effort on my part. It was difficult for me to resist the temptation to stop the car and look under the hood to see what the machinery looked like that was accomplishing the feats that were almost beyond belief.

Within thirty minutes the car rolled through the park, out through the arched gateway, and sped up the paved highway between the green fields that were already familiar to me. It bowled along smoothly and luxuriously. On the right, the morning mists were rising out of the river in the distance, and the mountains far out beyond were a wonderful deep blue. On the left, the flat, cultivated fields extended on to the smooth and level horizon. The morning was cool, and the breeze made by the motion of the car felt as delicious to my hands and face as a cooling drink. The shadow of the car racing on ahead, was a dozen feet long.

When I saw ahead of me the fork in the road, with the branch on the left leading to the dock and the Gulls' Nest, I watched the behavior of the car with bated breath again. Would it take that mysterious and interesting branch of the road that led straight on ahead, toward the great, smoking macrocosm that I had seen from the top of the cliff? Had I "set" it correctly? It was more exciting to my nerves than the watching of a tense automobile race, and my heart almost stopped

beating, until the fork to my left was safely behind me, and I was spinning along, straight to the west.

AS mile after mile passed, without effort from me, I pondered on the curious things that had befallen me during the past few days. It was an opportune moment for concentration; I leaned back among soft cushions, with nothing to do as far as driving or paying attention to the road was concerned; the monotonous purr of the machinery and the equally monotonous whizz of the scenery backward past me, were very soothing. I tried to plan ahead. I was resolved not to plunge blindly into the city, but to look it over from a distance and approach cautiously. Then it occurred to me that if I carefully analyzed some of the questions that had been puzzling me about affairs on the island, I might be able to make some deductions concerning the dangers ahead of me, and might consequently better prepare myself to meet them. A careful consideration of what I had already seen was certain to shed a good deal of light on what I had to expect.

When I stopped to think about it, this was my first opportunity to think things over carefully since I had landed. Up till now, my every moment had been busy, distracted by the presence of others and by something going on, or I had been too tired and sleepy to think. So, I took out my notebook and pencil, and one by one I marshaled the mysteries, puzzles, and surprises that I had found here; and after careful reflection, made a few notes on each.

1. *From the very first moment I had set foot on the black ship, Kaspar had begun warning me that I was in grave danger on the island.* At first I had thought that he was trying to scare me with the ordinary perils of tropical travel. But, here I was in a perfectly civilized community; the streets and homes looked as peaceful and safe as my own home town. And yet, Kaspar and Cassidy carefully and anxiously watched my every move. There must be something more specifically dangerous than snakes and swamps and savages. How he could say that I was in danger before anyone on the island knew I was coming, or was even aware of my existence, puzzled me. He certainly did not mean to imply that all strangers were in peril; and besides I had been very well received by these people, who were totally unaccustomed to strangers. Was my danger similar to that of other individuals on the island, like Ames and the others who had disappeared? Why had those particular ones been selected? And why particularly was I selected? It could not be because these dark enemies knew much of me personally. There had never been the least relationship between me and the island.

I wondered if perhaps a few of the old Southern families between whom there was some deadly feud, had not gotten settled on the island, and kept up the feud through all these generations. Perhaps the two factions who had continued the family war were now organized, each in its own populous city, and were carrying on the war with all the terrific and grotesque weapons their science had supplied, automatic cranes, and huge motorcycles with tentacles. And perhaps I also was a descendant of one of these factions or in some way involved with it, and Kaspar knew about it, while I didn't. At any rate, it was clear that for some reason not connected with anything that I myself had done or was conscious of, my existence was in conflict with some established principle on the island. In other words, I was a *persona non grata*. A more detailed solution I could not hope to arrive at just at the present time.

2. *What was the meaning of the incident—almost an accident—of Mildred and the crane?* No sooner had I stepped off the ship than here was a new mystery. On the surface of it, it may have looked like an ordinary accident; but by this time I was thoroughly satisfied that it had been a bold and almost successful attempt to annihilate a girl who was one of the most beautiful and popular, and certainly the most prominent in her community. Was there a personal reason for the attack on her? Was she selected because of her prominence? I had seen the fear in the eyes of the people who had watched that "accident"; and I was sure that they had known what was behind it. What better proof was there that Kaspar's people had deadly, unscrupulous, and ingenious enemies among the people who operated the machines? Yet, apparently the power and opportunity of the latter were not unlimited; for certainly that night on the dock they had control of a sufficient preponderance of physical force to have been able to put across any desired plan by means of physical violence. Evidently there had been reasons why it was impossible to attack openly the little group that had come to meet Kaspar. There was something more beneath this than mere crude, open enmity.

3. *What was the truth about my compulsory ride in the automatic car?* Was that an "accident" of the same kind as the one previously mentioned? By this time I was thoroughly ready to discard the idea that it had been a practical joke played upon me by some member of the social group gathered about the Kaspar family. These people's minds did not work in the direction of dangerous practical jokes against their own good friends. I strongly suspected that my ride, with its wild ending, was an attempt on the part of the machinery people to carry me off. It was clever; it would have looked like an ordinary accident. The machinery people had a skillful way of staging things without appearing on the scene themselves. Not only in the dark deeds I have mentioned, but in all the work that the machinery did for the living, comfort, and luxury of the inhabitants of the City of Beauty, were they extraordinarily skilful in getting things done and keeping absolutely out of sight. It was evident that the highly-cultured, sport-loving class whom I knew so well, not only knew nothing about the operation and care of machinery, but also that they seldom if ever beheld the mechanics who operated and cared for it, and on whom their lives depended.

4. *How far wrong was I in my estimate of the community on the day I had visited the Pansikoneon?* Evidently my original idea of a perfect Utopia needed some amending. The people of the City of Smoke obviously lived in subjection to the fair artists of the City of Beauty, and carried the entire burden of that marvelous culture and development. The fastidious drones could not even bear to have the workers live in the same city with them. It was a strange picture. Beauty was the first thing to strike the eye, but it was only on the surface. One group was living in luxury and leisure at the expense of a subject class; and yet living in terror of the subjects. The subjects, in bursts of rebellious retaliation, reached up and dragged down, every now and then, a bright and favored member of that high and shining stratum. It was difficult to determine which were the masters and which were the slaves; which the oppressors and which the oppressed.

5. *What became of the people who disappeared?* There was no doubt in my mind that they were taken to the City of Smoke. Furthermore, everything I had ascertained pointed to the fact that they were never seen nor heard of again. What happened to them there was a matter of pure conjecture, and speculating about it was a waste of time and effort.

6. *What was Supervision?* Evidently the subject class were not quite completely out of sight. At times

the lords had to degrade themselves by looking over the labors of their servants at the scene of operations. Otherwise, what could "Supervision" mean? It seemed to be a compulsory task, evidently unpleasant. The compulsion also evidently came from the supervised and not from the supervisors, for the latter seemed anxious for opportunities to dodge the obligation, while the former meted out a terrible and mysterious punishment to my friend Ames, who had made a record by his success in avoiding the obligation.

Could there be a more amazing, more maddening interlacement of puzzling relationships and inconsistent influences?

7. *What was the reason of the intense fear of being overheard? Who could overhear?* Most of the people I knew would not speak of the mysteries connected with the machinery under any circumstances at all. Their private thoughts on the subject, if they had any, were never uttered. The few people who did have the courage and aggressiveness to think and speak on the subject, did so, only under circumstances where there was no possibility of their words being picked up by mechanical appliances. Even automobiles were under suspicion; out in the broad fields and in the dense woods, Mildred would not speak as long as there was a car around. This was explainable only on the basis of highly developed methods of detection of sound and its transmission by radio methods. Apparently microphones or dictaphones were concealed everywhere, in homes, public places, automobiles. And evidently the people did not know enough about these instruments to find them and put them out of commission. I resolved at once never to go out again with anyone in a car, without first looking it over and disconnecting anything that looked like a transmitter or a detector.

Evidently, somewhere, someone was listening to everything that went on in the City of Beauty. Had I made a mistake when I spoke aloud to Sappho on starting his morning? I was sorry now that I had not taken the trouble to think these things out before. I had given away my plans completely. Perhaps by this time they were known to some central spider in the big web. I had better be doubly cautious in entering the city.

8. *What was this people's uprising about? Against whom? What were their grievances?* It must be a very grave matter. Every one of them had fear in their eyes. They were pale and furtive from fear, and yet they went doggedly on with their plans and their preparations. People do that only when vital matters are at stake. It was not some mere fancied wrong that troubled them; life was too easy-going in the City of Beauty. And yet, I could see no cause for complaint. Everything seemed running smoothly; on all sides were all possible reasons why these people should be happy. They seemed to have, as far as I could see, all they wanted of food, shelter, clothes, liberty and leisure, luxuries. What did they lack? What were they fighting about?

And what would they have done if I had not headed them in the proper direction in the matter of organization and discipline? They were intelligent and grasped things quickly; but they were ignorant of the very fundamentals of taking care of themselves. Never had I seen a more helpless people.

Their helplessness of course meant that they had long been cared for like children. No thought nor effort for their own care was required of them. Yet, if someone had taken that good care of them, why were they planning rebellion against their benefactors?

A number of possible explanations occurred to me. The book of H. G. Wells that I had read some time ago suggested one. Another was a memory that came back vividly to me from childhood, and struck me forcibly as a close analogy of this people's plight. When I was a small boy, I had pet rabbits. There was one rabbit that I especially loved and favored. I gave it the best of care and fed it royally. Just like the people in the City of Beauty, it lived in luxury, without a thought of taking care of itself. Then, one day it disappeared—just as Ames had. My childish grief was so intense that I remember it to this day. It was a long time before my child mind connected the disappearance of my pampered and indulged rabbit, with a new kind of meat on the table. I had thought my parents loved the rabbit as well as they did me.

Other analogies occurred to me. Were not these people in some sort of position like that of the farmer's prize herd of cattle? He takes the best possible care of them; he goes to any amount of expense to secure their comfort and content. They are as happy and comfortable, and as well developed as the people in the City of Beauty. Are they also afraid of the farmer because occasionally one of them disappears and is never seen again? In our laboratories at Galveston we treated the dogs and guinea-pigs as carefully and considerately as though they had been human. No amount of care, no excellence of food, no perfection of comfort was too good for them. And, every now and then, we took one of them away to the dissecting room, and his comrades never saw him again.

Whose pets were these fair people in the City of Beauty? For what sort of sacrifice or experiment were they being so perfectly cared for?

I CLOSED my notebook with a slap. My analyses and deductions had brought me to discomforting conclusions. I began to have misgivings as to the wisdom of my expedition. If I ever wanted to see Mildred again, if I ever wanted to take up that country practice in eastern Texas that I had so long dreamed about, perhaps I had better reconsider my plans before it became too late.

I was roused from my study and brought back to a consideration of my surroundings by noting that there was a forest ahead. The dim blue line on the horizon ahead broadened into a green strip, which was rapidly looming high in the air; and before long I could see the details of the dense jungle, which exactly resembled the one through which we had passed on our way to the sea. The way it ended abruptly like a wall where the cultivated fields began, made me certain that this country had once been entirely covered by jungle; and that the river bottoms had been artificially cleared for cultivation. What a stupendous task that must have been! The history of this land must be an astonishing chronicle, full of heroisms and brave human accomplishments! What characters, what Daniel Boones and George Washingtons, the history of this people must contain! In fact, Kaspar and Cassidy were big men, worthy of being put down in any history. I must get all of this story from Kaspar or someone, as soon as I could, for I was intensely interested in it.

Now and then an occasional truck came hurtling toward the city from which I had come. I always looked up quickly, hoping to see the driver; but there were no drivers. The vehicles were all automatic and unoccupied. I saw no people at all. Apparently the custom or regulation against the people of each city visiting the other, was very strictly observed. What would I run into by going contrary to it?

At first the vehicles I met were few and far between. But, as the day advanced and the day's business began to get started, they became more frequent and numerous. There were chiefly trucks, of all sizes and shapes, with and without loads. However, I saw numerous other strange machines making their way toward the

City of Beauty, lumbering and clattering hulks, such as I had never seen before, and whose purpose I could not imagine. The requirements of caring for a city's work by automatic machinery had developed some bizarre and undreamed-of forms of apparatus. I ached for an opportunity to examine some of them closely and watch them work.

The road dived into the black opening in the green wall ahead, and in a moment I was plunging along through the cool gloom of the forest, endeavoring to see. It took some moments for my eyes to become accustomed to the twilight that reigned there. Overhead I caught some glimpses of the sky through the interlacing branches just over the road; but at the sides the roof was so dense as to be quite impenetrable to any light at all. The tree trunks and interlacing vines and branches spun backward at a dizzy rate, while the car made a soft, rushing noise in its progress through the leafy tunnel. The bright opening behind, by which I had driven in, soon disappeared; and all around there was nothing but jungle.

I noticed that the car was beginning to behave curiously. It would slow down for a few moments, and gradually pick up speed again. Suddenly it would slow down again and almost stop. Then it would race quickly on. In another few moments it was hesitating along at a snail's pace. Various queer and unusual noises proceeded from it, grindings, knockings, and squeaks. Then it stopped and stood motionless with its machinery humming.

"What's wrong now?" I muttered. I had serious misgivings as to my skill in setting the dials, simple as that task seemed to the other folks who handled these cars.

It fell neatly over my head while I stared in open-mouthed astonishment.

I looked the instrument board all over carefully, but did not know what further to do. I felt it wisest not to tamper with the dials any further.

Abruptly the car jerked forward, and with a few rapid turns it reversed its position on the road and started back swiftly toward the City of Beauty. Its horn tooted melodiously up and down the musical scale.

"Whoa!" I shouted. "There's something wrong here!"

The only explanation that I could possibly think of was that I had made some mistake in setting the dials. Yet, that was not altogether plausible. I could readily see how I might have made some minor error which could have gotten me off the track a little. But this sort of behavior would necessitate a radical and fundamental error; and I felt sure that I knew more about them than to have set them completely backwards.

I reached for the levers that were used to drive the car by "actual control" as the people called it; that is, to control each movement individually; and I tried to turn it around. There was a good deal of grinding and knocking in the mechanism, and much irregularity in the car's progress; but it continued its course back home, and would not answer to my efforts. Therefore, I decided that something had gone wrong with the machinery. This was a little embarrassing, to say the least. I had taken the car without permission, which fact in itself was enough to disconcert me; and to have it get out of order was making the thing worse than ever. Indeed, my friends would think that I had behaved like a small boy.

However, in a moment my present trouble had crowded that out of my mind. I did not want to go back to Kaspar's house now. Not only would I not want to face the people; but my own conscience would not permit me to go. I was so contrarily built, that the very fact that I had just gone through a reasoning process that convinced me that I was embarked on a highly dangerous course, was enough to make me all the more doggedly set in my determination to carry it out. Even though my knees shook and my teeth chattered, I would have gone ahead. Already I had lost a mile on my way. The car was proceeding irregularly, now fast, now slow. I hung my haversack over my shoulder and jumped out.

The fall brought me stumbling to my knees. The roar of an approaching truck made me dodge into the underbrush. Why I hid, I do not know. I was worked up to a pitch of jumpy nervousness, feeling sure that although I saw no people about here, nevertheless I was being observed, and someone, somewhere, knew just what I was doing. The truck rumbled by and disappeared. I watched Sappho. The car went forward a moment, then stopped and quivered a moment, and went backwards. It stood still a while with the machinery roaring, and then started at full speed toward the City of Beauty. I crawled out and stood in the road, watching it dwindle and disappear. Now I was alone in the forest.

"There can't be much over ten miles to go," I thought, "and I am safer on foot."

I SWUNG along, feeling lusty and vigorous in the exhilarating morning air. It was just beginning to get warm. Up above, in the interlaced canopy of branches and foliage, there were clickings and squawkings; and I caught flashes of bright colored plumage flashing back and forth. Little sounds came out of the forest, a chirp, a twitter, a rustle. My footsteps rang loudly on the pavement. I wondered if there were any large and dangerous animals. I swung my pistol into position where I could draw quickly, for I had confidence in my aim and in the stopping power of a .45 caliber bullet. Still, I admitted that my greatest danger was not from wild beasts.

The passing vehicles kept growing more numerous. They passed with a roar that rumbled and re-echoed back and forth among the tree trunks in the depths of the forest. I kept a sharp lookout for human beings, but not one did I ever see on any of the machines. I hugged the bushes, whose ends were whipped off by passing vehicles into a perpendicular wall, like a trimmed hedge. The vehicles as a rule kept the middle of the road.

A little "leading machine" whizzed by. It was a curious vehicle, a tiny motorcycle, too small for anyone to ride in or to carry a load. There was a good deal of complicated mechanism about it, little gear-wheels like the works of a watch, and many busy little rods and cams. In front were two bright, staring headlights. As it sailed whirring down the road, I stared after it, wondering what could be the possible use of the thing.

A truck came up behind me. From the sound of its machinery, it seemed to be slowing down. I glanced back and found this indeed to be the case; and furthermore, it was at the edge of the road, directly behind me. I edged as far as I could into the thicket.

"This is no place for pedestrians," I thought.

Of course, there was no sidewalk. There could not have been much, if any, travel on foot between the two cities.

The approaching truck was a light one, of half-ton capacity. The curved arm of a crane projected from it, high above the road, from the side nearest me. It passed very slowly, and uncomfortably close to me. I crowded close to the bushes. If there had been a driver, I would have had something to say to him.

A sudden clatter above my head made me look up in surprise. A loop of chain whipped out cleverly from the crane, like the circle of a lasso. It fell neatly over my head, and while I stared in open-mouthed astonishment, it tightened about my arms and shoulders.

It happened so quickly, such an amazing, undreamed-of thing, that before I realized what was going on, I was swung off my feet and hoisted up off the ground. My arms were pinioned to my sides, and I was helpless as a trussed turkey. At first, I was stunned with surprise. It was too strange—too far beyond anything I could have foreseen. Then I was overwhelmed by anger and chagrin. I had been taken in as easily as a new-born babe. For a moment, I was beside myself with rage.

However, that availed me nothing. I dangled there foolishly in the air, and the grip of the chain around my chest and arms was painful. At least I was glad that there were no witnesses to my ridiculous plight.

The truck picked up speed and clattered on, toward the City of Smoke. As the trees and bushes spun backward past me and the wind whistled about me, I was swung over the seat, and with much humming of gears and clashing of levers from the interior of the car, I was lowered until I was comfortably seated. Immediately, a polished bar swung across my chest and locked with a click. Here I sat, fastened down, fuming and writhing.

My rage knew no bounds. Captured! Tied up and being carried away! Just like one of the helpless rabbits from the City of Beauty. No! I would show them. I would not be cowed, merely because a machine had got hold of me. Perhaps they had me, but if they had, they would still learn a few things about what kind of a fight I could put up. They would never get to that black city with me.

I heaved and strained at the bar that held me prisoner. I am known as a strong man among my friends,

but my utmost efforts failed to budge the bar, or even to produce a crackle. It remained immovable. After I had exhausted my strength and bruised my flesh, I began to calm down a little. The firm and steady pressure of the bar across me helped to steady my nerves. The purely impersonal character of the things that held me gradually calmed me, and I began to reason a little.

My safety now depended upon my keeping my wits together. That was the first thing that dawned on me. I spent a good many minutes in drilling myself to keep calm, and forcing myself to plan carefully ahead, just as the previous few days I had been drilling the rebels. If I wanted to get away from this machine, I must think clearly first. Get away from it, I must, somehow.

I had no doubt in my mind that I had given myself away in the morning by my soliloquy; a microphone in the car had warned the authorities in the black city, and they had sent the automatic machine after me. The uncanny cleverness with which the mechanism worked was almost too much for my belief.

Well, I had been tricked once, but now I was warned. From now on, I would realize fully that I could trust no machine near me. My unseen enemies had the advantage of me because they knew all about my movements without themselves being in evidence. Nevertheless, I made up my mind to outwit them.

I set about examining carefully the bar that held me. Machinery had to be dealt with coolly and calculatingly. The bar fitted my chest as accurately as if it had been made to measure for me. It held me tight against the back of the seat and restrained the movements of my arms. I looked about to see if I could reach something to pry it loose. If I could get my hands on some kind of a lever, I would make short work of the thing.

Then, suddenly I got an idea and desisted.

If I were being watched, why not let them think they had me? If I pretended stupidity and submission, a loophole of escape would be much more certain to offer itself. If they considered me as helpless as the rest of the people from the City of Beauty, my chances would be far better.

And after all I was on my way, swiftly and comfortably, toward the goal toward which I had started. Things weren't so bad after all. Sit tight and keep my eyes open, was what I determined to do, and go on quietly on the truck into the black city.

CHAPTER IX

What Is Supervision?

THE little two-wheeled thing that I was learning to call a "leading-machine," was now ahead of the truck. It was about the size of one of the toy motorcycles that are made for boys to ride around on; but it was accurately and sturdily built; and as I sat and watched it ahead of me, I was struck by the astounding complexity of the thing. Only some of the research apparatus that I had seen in university physics laboratories, could compare with it. It spun on ahead of the truck, keeping a uniform distance in front, like an active little puppy in front of a plodding ox-cart. When I had first heard the word "leading-machine" I had wondered what it meant; but now, I had to admit that "leading" was the right word; that was precisely what this little machine seemed to be doing. And again I caught myself in the silly tendency that I had fallen into several times on this island, of attributing personality to machines, as though they had minds of their own. I was wildly curious to know how the little thing worked and what its precise purpose was.

It was not many minutes before the machines emerged from the forest, and the great, black city with its crown of smoke, loomed over the whole horizon in front. This time, there were no green, cultivated fields on both sides. At first there was a little sickly looking vegetation, but as we approached the city, the ground became quite bare. The road led through a region that looked as dreary as a dead world; naked, oily-looking earth, heaps of slag and cinders, pools of stagnant water scummed and greasy, or sometimes colored orange or green. Great gashes and scars were cut here and there; and mine-openings and oil-derricks were scattered about, but evidently not in operation. A mile or so to the right, the river looked gray and gloomy.

I could not say much for human handiwork in this part of the island. If this scarred desolation was needed to maintain that high degree of civilization in yonder "City of Beauty," I would have preferred to see the entire island a rural community.

The city began abruptly. It towered ahead, a long, high wall, crowned with a wreath of smokestacks and a headdress of gloomy smoke. No longer was the sky above me blue. At the foot of the wall, the bare, gray earth was strewn with a thousand kinds of industrial rubbish. There was no skirmish-line of scattered and outlying buildings to warn the visitor that he was entering a city; only the bleak wall stretching into the distance on the left so far that I could not see its end; and at the right ending at the river. The road led into an arched opening in the wall.

There was nothing decorative about the entrance; it was frankly a hole to get into and out of. The leading-machine plunged in, and the truck followed. The arch closed over my head, and I was suddenly in the city. For a short distance there was a gloomy passageway, hardly a street, between grimy buildings, with the busy commotion of an intersection visible on ahead. Then, as the truck rolled out into the glaring light of the open intersection, the rumble and roar broke upon my ears like a sudden explosion.

It was infinitely depressing. Long rows of factory-like buildings stretched off endlessly, and groups and clusters of tall chimneys poured out smoke; high in the air, pipes and cables and conveyors were trussed across open spaces between buildings, while swinging beams and derricks lent an eerie sense of movement to the ponderous scenery. Huge loads swung along on traveling cranes high over my head, or moved swiftly along on trussed bridges and suspended cables. Roaring steel converters and foundries belched sheets of fire and great continents of black smoke into the air, and my breath felt sulphurous in my lungs.

There was a clatter and a rush of vehicles, the thunder of huge trucks, and the din of machinery within buildings. The broad street was covered with a swarm of things on wheels, large and small, moving swiftly in all directions at once, like a swarming crowd of huge insects, black clumsy, clattering creatures. Everywhere, huge machines whirled and roared, until my head was numb from it. And nowhere a human being in sight!

What was it all doing? Who had made it? Who operated it?

And what should I do now? The truck was plunging me into the middle of that clattering turmoil. Without anyone to guide it, it was picking its way through traffic so congested that the smallest slip would have meant being crushed to a pulp under the moving behemoths. Should I try to get myself loose and escape from the truck that held me? In truth, I had very little inclination to do so. To plunge into that vast, churning city, where there must be endless stretches of just such dreary, rumbling streets, and countless buildings, roaring clots like this intersection was, did not seem alluring just at present. The truck seemed to be headed

somewhere; its machinery was apparently set to reach some objective. I was thankful for any guidance at all, in this most uncouth of cities. Had there been people about the streets, of whom I might inquire my way, the problem would have been different. But nowhere was there any living thing visible. I decided to remain on the truck, keeping my eyes open, and to be ready for emergencies.

And then I saw the Squid! That was the name I associated with the two-wheeled, tentacled machine that had carried away Ames from the dancing pavilion on the day that he had missed Supervision and sent Dubois in his place. Of course, I was not sure that it was the same machine; but whenever I saw anything like it, it was always alone of its kind; and I felt quite sure that it was always the same machine. In general, it did not really look like a squid; but it handled its tentacles as a squid does. For a moment I saw its goggly headlights and black, coiled, ropy tentacles in the press behind me; it towered high above all other two-wheeled vehicles, and darted in and out with a superior swiftness among the clumsier machines. In a moment it was out of sight in the mass of vehicles.

BETWEEN the clattering, roaring buildings, winding around blocks, and pushing its way through the crowd of vehicles, the little truck carried me. The little leading-machine was always ahead; sometimes I lost it, but always it reappeared. Always the two machines were headed in a general direction into the interior of this great, mechanical hive. So monotonous and continuous were the rattle and rumble of the traffic and the long lines of dismal buildings, that my mind became deadened and I ceased paying attention to them. It was all about the same.

One particular building attracted my attention. I rode within a block of it, about five minutes after entering the city. It had an immense oval domed roof, which shone like gold, held up by pillars high up above the tops of its walls. An ideal arrangement for keeping buildings cool in tropical countries, I thought. Then, it struck me that this huge domed oval with its white columns was architecturally a beautiful thing, and therefore unique among these industrial abominations. Why? Why was it different?

Of course it must be because people from the City of Beauty came to it. These fastidious visitors would certainly object to entering any of these other grimy blocks. I regretted that its lower portion was hidden from me by the square, smoky masses of intervening structures; otherwise perhaps I might have seen people passing in and out. And, the only thing that the people from the City of Beauty ever came to this city for, was Supervision. I think that had been made plain enough to me. This must be where Supervision took place or was held! The idea struck me so suddenly that I nearly jumped out of the truck. I wriggled in vain for a moment, and then the great, golden oval was out of sight. In the back of my mind I noted a determination that I would have to hunt up that building and look it over.

Fifteen or twenty minutes of scurry and grime and clatter elapsed before the truck finally stopped. Such a city I never could have imagined in my wildest nightmare. How could there be two cities on the same island, so vastly different from each other as these two were? What could be the purpose of such a hideous machine as that Squid? Occasionally behind me, or in front of me, or somewhere, through the tangle of machines, I caught glimpses of it. It ought to be a useful piece of apparatus, for its activity and the capabilities of its tentacles were enormous.

The truck stopped before a building relatively small in size compared with those surrounding it. Again, here was a little architectural jewel set among rubbish; a pretty little structure in comparison with the gloomy hulks around it. The remarkable thing about it was that there were thousands of wires and cables leading into its roof. They converged in all directions from the smoky distances and gathered together into a huge bundle that entered the building. Several small leading-machines stood about near the doorway.

"Telephone exchange," I thought to myself. "No. More likely some sort of an administration building; some sort of central control office. Now I'll get to see the boss and find out what it's all about."

As the truck drove up with me, there was a good deal of tooting from the horns of the various machines; that is, the truck and the group of small leading-machines. First one started, and another picked it up melodiously, and they carried the echoes back and forth like a chorus singing "The Messiah." Even from within the building came melodious toots. The bar across my chest snapped open, and I lost no time in jumping out. However, the leading-machines ranged themselves round me and the truck, and I found myself in a little lane between them that led to the door of the building.

The door opened obligingly, but no one appeared. I thought quickly, and decided that for the present the best thing for me to do was to appear to fall in with the plans of my captors. So far they were treating me well, and resistance would not help much just now. So I stepped up toward the door, and a little leading-machine fell in and chugged slowly behind me. From the outside I could see practically nothing of what was within; so I boldly walked in. The door closed behind me with a slam.

Before me was a small table of the folding type, with an excellent looking lunch spread on it: soup, fish, an orange, bread, and coffee. Instantly I realized that I was indeed hungry. I had breakfasted early and now my watch said eleven o'clock. For just a moment I hesitated; suppose this was some trick, and the lunch were poisoned! However, my common-sense told me better than that. If they wanted to destroy me, they had the opportunity of doing so more quickly and effectively than by resorting to such a low method as poisoning my food. They had me too completely in their power now, to make poisoning necessary. In fact, the luncheon was an encouraging sign; it meant that these people were not wholly barbarous, and had the intention of treating me with at least a semblance of civilized hospitality. However, why did they keep themselves so constantly hidden? So slow was I in grasping the truth!

I decided to eat the lunch, and quickly did so; though the thought of possible poison made a little shudder run over me at the first few mouthfuls. While I ate, I examined the room in which I found myself. Off into its farther portions stretched tiers upon tiers of countless units of some sort of electrical apparatus, all alike. It made me think of an automatic telephone exchange; the instruments suggested it in their form and arrangement; and there was a little rustling activity among them, now here, now there, very reminiscent of the way such an exchange looks to a spectator. The irregular, intermittent clickings, now in one direction, now in another; now almost silent and again a dozen or a score at a time, made it seem as though the room was alive with some sort of creatures. But, nowhere could I discover a living thing; only metal, enamel, wires, and an infinite complication of apparatus.

Several large, shining lenses were turned upon me. They were set in stereopticon-like housings; and every now and then they moved backward and forward a little, as though to adjust focus. They stared at me like

huge, expressionless eyes. I had the uncomfortable sensation that I was being closely scrutinized by someone invisible to me. I had no doubt that there was someone hidden, either in a nearby room, or perhaps even at a great distance. I had been brought into this place to be looked over, and the person who was doing it might even be miles away, while the least detail in my appearance, my every movement, even every sound I made, were transmitted to him over wires. I even noted that the lenses that stared at me were set in pairs, so as to secure a correct stereoscopic effect.

BEFORE I finished my lunch, I was quite positive that I was alone in the room with the glittering glass and enamelled metal apparatus, which pulsated and stirred as though it were alive. I felt self-conscious, however, knowing that I was being studied. The tooting puzzled me. The fluty, musical notes would break out for a while, and then cease again. Though it had a vague suggestion of rhythm, it was not and could not be music. I judged that it must be somehow associated with the operation of some of the apparatus.

Then it struck me that there must be mechanical ears here to listen, as well as staring eyes of glass to see. I walked about the room, peering closely at the apparatus in tiers, but found nothing that I could associate with the transmission of sound. I decided to speak, none the less, however.

"I want to meet you face to face!" I pronounced in an oratorical tone of voice. I had no doubt that it was heard. "Come out and let me see you!"

Nothing happened. I looked out of the window at the noisy, grimy street, and sat a while in the chair again, the only chair in the place. There was no desk, no furniture. I was in the center of an empty space, at which the lenses gazed. I tried speaking again.

"I want to see people!" I said, in my most stern, and commanding tone. The only result, if result it was, was some scattered tooting and rustling in the stacks of apparatus. Then it occurred to me that if they were really listening to me, I might try something in my own interests.

"Take me to the Supervision!" I ordered peremptorily. I had to admit to myself that it was a big bluff, for my quaking heart belied my bold words. "I came here to see the Supervision!"

I listened breathlessly for several minutes, but nothing occurred.

"By Jove!" I muttered, "this is making me nervous."

I went to the door and tried it, but it was locked. Then, as I passed the window, I saw the Squid outdoors. Its blank, glary headlights were staring right into the window. I jumped back, with a sudden, involuntary start, and laughed at myself for my foolish fears. I could see the thing quite plainly now. Its tall, coffin-shaped body was not a box at all. It was a very complicated structure, with various moving portions and twisted tubes, and here and there, metal plates that apparently concealed more delicate portions of its machinery. It was quite out of the question for anyone to have been hidden in that pulsing mass of wheels and levers. The thing was purely mechanical, purely automatic, and I laughed my fears away. I assured myself that it was purely mechanical.

And yet, why did it come up to the window, and look in, as a dog might do?

A few moments later, with pounding heart and throbbing head, I looked about the room, and when I looked out of the window again, the thing was gone. What connection did it have with Supervision? In Ames' case there was certainly a connection; and here, as soon as I had mentioned Supervision, the thing had appeared. I began to get restless; I walked to the door and gave it another yank. To my surprise, it opened, and I stepped out into the street. An odd thing struck me, as some foolish detail often strikes us in the midst of more seriously absorbing circumstances. The door-sill was of wood, and had sharp edges, that were not the least bit worn. That meant that rarely did anyone ever use this door. Oh, how stupid I was, that the truth did not dawn on me!

The sun shone so hot that the street was like a furnace; but the inhuman traffic went on fiercely as ever. Across the street was a great concrete block of buildings, through whose windows I could make out long rows of individual machines that were operating with some sort of an up-and-down movement, as though stamping something; a number of small square objects moved away from each machine on a belt conveyor. The little building in which I had just been, extended to a corner on the left, and across the street from that loomed another huge, factory-like bulk.

Just in front of me, backed up against the door so that I could hardly do anything else except step into it, was a curious, three-wheeled vehicle. A motorcycle side-car, or an ancient chariot are the only things I can think of to compare it to. It contained a seat for one person to sit in.

"Should I or should I not?" I worried, as I stood there hesitating.

True, the thing might run me into some sort of a trap; but on the other hand, there was as much danger right here as in some other part of the city. I reasoned that these people were accustomed to being good to their wards and dependents in the City of Beauty, and taking care of them as of small children; they had done it so long that it was a habit. I doubted if I were in immediate danger. And this had come so directly upon my request to see the Supervision, that there might really be some connection.

I stepped in and sat down. With a sudden click, a bar swung around and locked itself across my chest. My muscles tightened involuntarily, but I controlled myself, and made myself sit in quiet patience.

"Keep your shirt on!" I said to myself. "Losing your head will only make things worse. Just now, I'll see all I can, and when it gets to be more than I care for, I'll find a way to slip out. But if I don't see their faces pretty soon, I'm apt to get peevish."

The little chariot rolled swiftly and smoothly up the street, dodging in and out among the towering trucks and ponderous mechanical bulks. I had to admit that it was a clever machine, exactly adapted to conveying a single passenger long distances through these densely congested streets. Part of the time I trembled at the danger, for it often looked as though, the very next moment, I was to be ridden down by some gigantic machine, that rolled down on me like a battleship; but each time the swift little conveyance in which I rode, slipped to one side, dodged into an opening, and was far away before the big thing had moved many feet.

Again, it was a long, confusing trip. At times I thought I recognized locations which I had passed in the morning, and I wondered if I were being taken back in the same direction. But these grimy buildings and clattering streets were all so nearly alike that I could not be sure. The general direction seemed east, and therefore toward the river; and I knew that I had entered the town at a point comparatively near the river. I kept a sharp lookout for the Squid, but did not see it during the trip. Then I spied the great, gilded, oval dome, and this eventually turned out to be my destination.

The building was obviously some sort of an auditorium. From the outside, it looked for all the world like a football bowl or stadium that had been roofed

over. Its height and spread vastly exceeded those of any of the neighboring buildings. It had no windows, though thirty or forty feet above the ground was a row of great, unglazed embrasures; and then, between the tops of the walls and the eaves of the roof, was an open space a dozen feet high, all around the building. There was a large arched entranceway that was a considerable architectural achievement.

However, the little chariot carried me to a small door in the middle of one side. Without hesitation it plunged into the darkness and from the sound I surmised that I was being carried along a passageway. Electric lights appeared; I found I was in an ordinary hallway of masonry, of some fine-grained, white stone. The car came to a sudden stop in the blind end of the passage. In a moment a section of the floor began to rise with me, for I had been carried into an elevator. It ascended for a height of about two floors, and then the car rolled out, around a corner, and out into empty space.

So it seemed, at any rate. The car and I were really on a little platform, six or eight feet square, jutting out of the wall of the building, and commanding a view of the entire vast interior. It was a wonderful feat of construction, that immense, arched, brightly lighted space, without a single supporting column anywhere; and the great, domed roof sweeping overhead in a wonderful curve. A rhythmic, mellow rustle reverberated throughout the great spaces, suggesting that it was composed of many elemental sounds.

And down below, there was commotion and activity—and people! Not till this moment, when I felt the violent leap of my heart at the sudden sight of human beings below me, had I realized how profoundly I had been affected by the total absence of humanity from the chaos of these endless streets. A busy city without people is an uncanny thing.

The vast oval floor was divided longitudinally into halves by a broad road or street down the middle; and this passage was filled by a river of vehicles of all sizes and descriptions. As I looked down on the tops of them, they looked like some sort of crawling insects. They all proceeded very slowly in one direction, entering from the dazzling outdoors by a high arch at one end, slowly progressing through the length of the building, and leaving by a similar arch at the other end.

The two half-ellipses on either side of this procession were raised some ten feet above the level of the moving stream of vehicles. At first glance, I thought I was looking down on some huge library, with thousands of stacks of bookcases arranged geometrically over the floor, with people walking and sitting around among them. But, they were not books. Even before I got out my field-glasses and examined them closely, I saw that the stacks were in fact supporting racks for instrument boards.

I saw rows of white dials with needles moving over them, voltmeters, ammeters, wattmeters, gas-meters—what kind of meters they were, I could but guess. I could only make out thousands of dials, some round, some curved; with various sorts of figures. There were gauges with fluctuating columns of liquids, and barometer-like scales, and recording-pens tracing curves and zig-zag lines on rolls of squared paper and revolving kymographs. It seemed that all the measuring instruments of a city were concentrated here.

AT last! I thought. Here is the headquarters of this city, the point from which all this vast activity is controlled. Hither run all the wires from every point in the city and perhaps also of the other city; and here the people loll in comfort and luxury, while they attend to the management of this unbelievable mechanical organization. This was confirmed in my mind, as I looked around more closely and discovered that there were sections devoted to switches and control-levers, great tiers of them, such as one sees in a railway block-house or a central power station. There were tangles of valves and stopcocks, and myriads of knobs with pointers to them. Among all these things, the people sat and watched the meters, or occasionally moved levers. Some of them sat comfortably in easy-chairs, and others moved about, so that there was a pleasant, rhythmic commotion below me.

The Supervision at last! What else could it be? I sat there and studied the scene with my field-glasses, and I was sure that I recognized some of the people from the City of Beauty. There was Godwin, a young fellow who had been in the group that swam with me for the red flower; and a young lady with gray eyes whom I remembered very definitely. There were others whom I was sure I had seen before. Besides, they all had the bearing and dress of people whom I had met in the City of Beauty. So, this was the mysterious Supervision! This was the unpleasant task at which all were obliged to serve, and which all of them dreaded and hated!

I had to admit that I was just a shade disappointed. I had expected to see wonderful machines performing real work. And here, there were people dabbling at control instruments. I had hoped to see some of the inhabitants of the City of Smoke, but I saw none. Only these innocent children of the sun. They were elegantly dressed, to the height of fastidiousness. The men's clothes were faultlessly pressed, and their linen was perfect. The ladies' gowns were delicately beautiful. Faces were groomed smooth and hands were white and soft. They reclined languidly in easy-chairs, or strolled aimlessly here and there. Countenances were blank and indifferent.

They were not attending the machinery! Moreover they were not interested in it. They did not even understand it! I doubted if they knew as much about it as I did. In fact, from what I had learned of these people, they were not capable, either of understanding or of handling any kind of industrial machinery. They were just passing the day in utter boredom, waiting for evening to come!

What the comedy meant, I could not imagine.

My little platform was one of several about the walls, but was the only one occupied. It was like a box at a theater, as much designed to be seen as to see from. It was not long before some of the people below noticed me, clamped in my three-wheeled vehicle. As I watched them through my glasses, I could see them grow grave and turn away when they saw me. Some of them recognized me, and seemed to grow pale and start in fright. This rather stirred a vague alarm in me. Why did fear play such an important part among the emotions on this island? However, I reasoned, their alarm was difficult to interpret. To me, it had often seemed that they were afraid of nothing. I even suspected them guilty of some exalted form of superstition.

How long I sat there and tried to think out what it meant, I do not know. What sort of a mockery was this Supervision? These people weren't supervising anything. They weren't capable of it. What possible good could this empty travesty serve? Every step I took in this island seemed to plunge me deeper into foolish mysteries. Everything was a nightmare. My little chariot remained motionless, and the scene that I watched and the thoughts that it aroused were so absorbing that many hours must have elapsed.

When a deep gong began to ring, and I stirred, I found my muscles stiff and cramped. The gong created an instant change in the scene. The people all gathered

toward the middle portion, where the road ran in a sort of channel. They descended stairs from the elevated floor, while the cars that came down the channel stopped for them. Rapidly the entire area emptied itself of people; and cars loaded with bobbing heads and bright flashes of color poured out of the arch at the farther end into the freedom of daylight.

When there were only a few scattered figures left, my conveyance moved back on the elevator, was lowered to the ground level, and emerged from the building into a dismal looking street. Why did the people who controlled all of this, persist in keeping out of sight? How was my little car guided? There were wires strung about the railing of its body; perhaps these served as antennae of some radio apparatus for long-distance control. Perhaps the machine was not as automatic as it seemed, but instead, was controlled by radio waves from some central station. I could picture a malignant face bent over a switchboard, while the clutching hands reached for levers that sent me spinning this way and that, far away, through the city.

Was this the time for me to try and escape? I had a feeling that I could readily get away from this clumsy thing if I got desperate. But, suppose I should escape, where would I go? What would I do? Here was night coming on rapidly; I needed food and rest, and had no idea where to get them. I decided to trust my captors a little longer. Thus far, I had to admit, it was highly interesting and not at all dangerous; though I could see how the same thing might have been unwelcome in a high degree to my friends in the City of Beauty. However, thus far, I was being treated much more like a guest than like an enemy. I determined, nevertheless, to keep on my guard, as well as to keep my eyes open for information to take back to Galveston with me.

In the meanwhile, the three-wheeled machine rolled swiftly along. For a while the sun was at my left; and as it was setting, that meant that I was headed north. Then the machine turned to the west—farther and farther into the innermost heart of the city. The sun's disk was enormous because of the thick smoke in the atmosphere, and of a blood-red color, changing, as it sank behind the buildings, to a purple. My vehicle was delayed several times at intersections by heavy traffic. The thing looked so tiny beside the gigantic things that crowded the streets that every moment I was afraid, that it and I both would be flattened out as thin as a sandwich. But its agility in dodging apparently inevitable catastrophes and slipping into unexpected openings, was so marvelous that it gave me confidence, and I quit trembling in my seat. Nevertheless, the ride was hard on my nerves. It took a good three-quarters of an hour to reach the gate in the wall.

The wall was thirty feet high, the height of an ordinary house, built of granite blocks. It extended away to the north and to the south until it was lost in the twilight in the smoky perspective of the streets. Over the top of it, I caught a glimpse of the leaves of some tree, the only living thing that I had thus far seen about the city. The gateway was large enough to admit a big truck; and again, architecturally it was a contrast to the surrounding structures which were of a dismal, utilitarian type. It had columns at the side with carved capitals, a frieze in bas-relief, and a beautiful pair of heavy bronze gates.

The car stopped in front of the gate, emitted a torrent of toots, and waited. Again I was seized with misgivings. As between a hotel and a penitentiary, this business resembled the latter much more closely. Once they got me locked up inside those walls, it might be difficult to get out again.

One of the gates opened just wide enough to admit the car, which drove to the opening and stopped. Within, the last fading rays of daylight showed me a park, one of the kind that were so numerous a generation ago, with curving graveled walks, trees and hedges in groups, and flower-beds all laid out in designs. Back in the distance was a great house, with gables and verandas, which I could not make out very plainly in the gathering darkness.

The bar across my chest snapped open, leaving me free. I stepped out with great alacrity, whereupon the car backed out and the gates clanged shut. The bright square of a lighted window shone at me from the house in the distance.

CHAPTER X

Who Runs This Place?

I STOOD for a few moments with clenched fists, staring at the bronze gates. These invisible people had an uncanny way of doing what they pleased with me. Then I realized that my muscles were stiff and cramped; that I was ravenously hungry; and that I was leaden with fatigue from a long, exciting day. So, I turned hopefully toward the building in the park. I could still make out, in the gathering gloom, that it was a typical large residence of the past generation, with stucco gables, many individual windows and a shingled roof. The effect that it produced upon me was quaint and old-fashioned, in contrast with the futurist impressions from the machinery without.

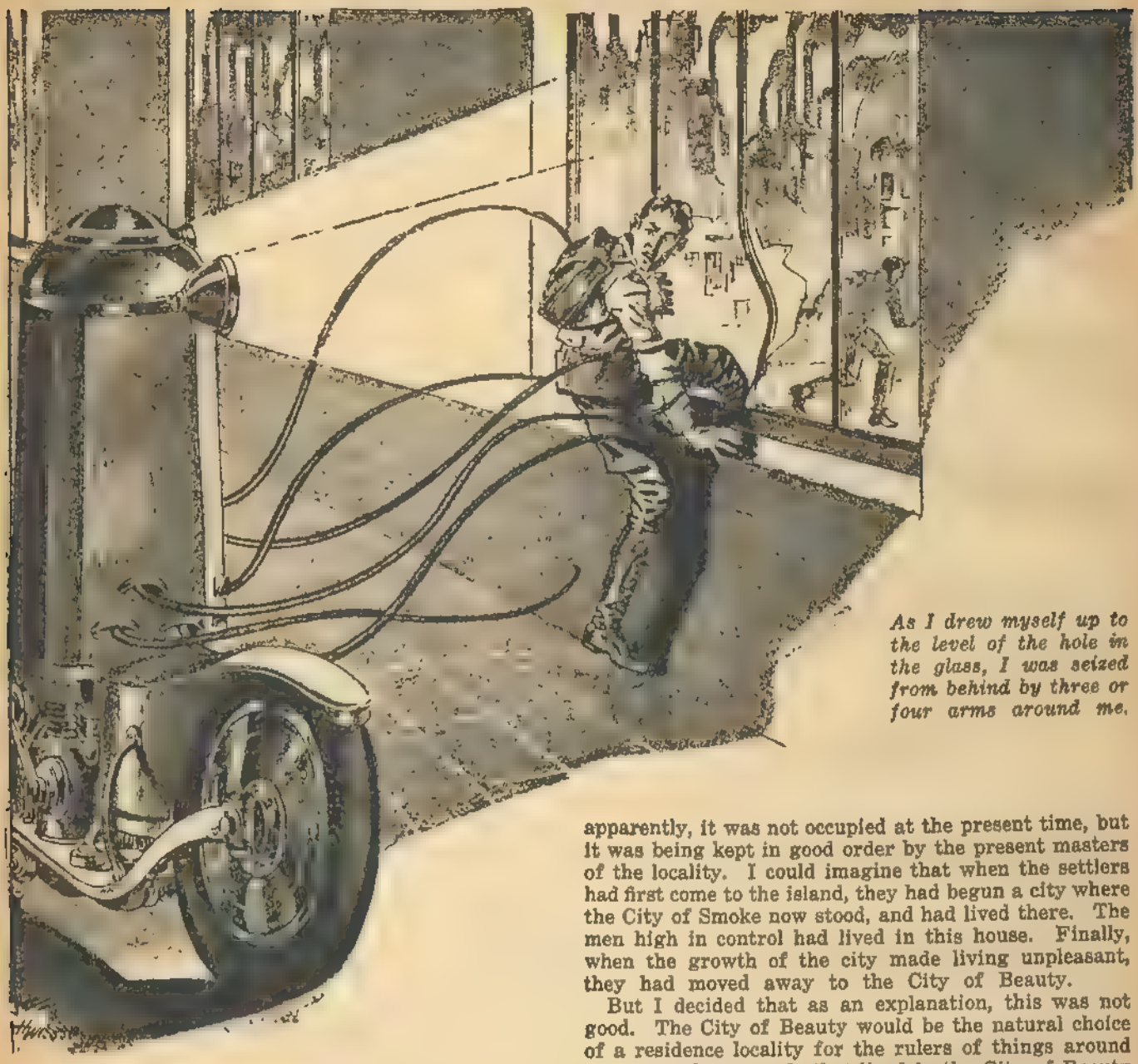
The silence was refreshing, after the steady, all-day roar; my heels crunching on the gravel sounded solitary and intimate in my ears. As I drew near, a door opened, and the yellow electric light streamed out. My heart pounded hard. Perhaps now at last, I would see the people of the place.

But the room I stepped into was uninhabited. It was luxuriously furnished, likewise in an old-fashioned way, with thick carpets and the mahogany overstuffed furniture of thirty years ago. Apparently it was a drawing-room. However, right beside me as I stepped in, was a little folding table with a steaming meal on it. It might have been exactly the same table and exactly the same dishes that I ate from at noon; only the food was different. The big, generous dinner made my mouth water. I looked about, and in the passageway found a lavatory at which I could clean up a little. Then I fell to eating, this time without the least hesitation. My hunger and fatigue exceeded both my caution and my curiosity. I ate before looking any further.

After I had eaten, my limbs felt so heavy and my eyes so sleepy, that I lay down for a little rest on the cushions of a large settee. Almost immediately I fell sound asleep. The food might have been drugged, but I doubt it. I had risen early in the morning and had a most fatiguing day. Perhaps I lacked caution; but I could not see that any precaution of mine would make much difference. How could I be any more in their power than I was now? At any rate, I could not help it, I fell asleep in spite of myself.

I awoke early and suddenly, with the sun shining in my face. The large room seemed a rich, luxurious place; but gave the impression of being rather desolate, devoid of the little things that give a personal touch. Outside I could see lawns and trees; palms and great, broad leaves, lacy fronds, and waxy foliage, and great bright-red and spotted-orange flowers. In the distance was the high wall; beyond that, belching smokestacks, trussed beams and a dull, smoky sky. My mind took this all in with sudden alertness.

"Today's main job is to get loose," I determined grimly; "this gang has got me sewed up too tight to suit me."



As I drew myself up to the level of the hole in the glass, I was seized from behind by three or four arms around me.

I reconnoitered the house cautiously, peering into this room and that. Every room I saw was richly furnished, with that same old-fashioned air. There were a good many of the curious floor-lamps with silk shades, so popular a generation ago. Everywhere was lacking that elusive note that suggested human occupancy. Everything was stiffly clean and orderly, but there were none of the small objects that people usually leave lying around, a book, a scrap of paper, a dusty shoe-track, a handkerchief. The loneliness seemed almost ghostly.

However, a breakfast cooking away in an automatic kitchen cheered me considerably. I helped myself without qualms of conscience, and compelled myself to fill up to capacity, for I anticipated strenuous adventures ahead of me. If they did not come of their own accord I was determined to make them; for I fully intended to escape from the leash on which I was held, and to see the city on my own initiative. Uneasiness as to what they eventually intended doing with me, and a resentment at being bundled around like a sack of potatoes, shared equally in my reasons for the step I planned.

As I ate, I speculated about the old house in which I found myself. Everything pointed to the fact that it was an old residence, and a royally luxurious one, though built and occupied before I was born. Also, apparently, it was not occupied at the present time, but it was being kept in good order by the present masters of the locality. I could imagine that when the settlers had first come to the island, they had begun a city where the City of Smoke now stood, and had lived there. The men high in control had lived in this house. Finally, when the growth of the city made living unpleasant, they had moved away to the City of Beauty.

But I decided that as an explanation, this was not good. The City of Beauty would be the natural choice of a residence locality for the rulers of things around here; but those people that lived in the City of Beauty certainly were not the rulers. Yet, why did the rulers who directed and handled all of this machinery, remain satisfied to live in this noisy, dirty hell? Had they become so married to the machinery that they could not get away from it? Did they lack the side of their natures, that loved beauty and luxury and Nature? Perhaps too much devotion to machinery had made them so one-sided that they preferred to live here? If they lived in this city, why weren't they occupying this great, luxurious house? If they didn't like luxury, how could they keep this place in such comfortable shape?

I gave up, and continued my exploration of the house. I found a small room which contained only a desk and a chair and a rug.

There sat a man!

My heart leaped with the thrill that I had finally found the human center of this spiderweb. I stopped for a moment and looked at him. He was about forty years old, and sat languidly in a mahogany chair. His clothes were well made and expensive looking; but his linen was disheveled, and his hands and face were smeared with grease. His right hand hung down toward the ground and grasped a large wrench.

"Ah!" I thought; "someone who really handles machinery!"

"Good morning!" I said. He looked up. Apparently he had not noticed me before. He did not reply.

"Are you someone in authority here?" I asked.

He jumped up violently.

"I own all this!" he shouted, sweeping his arm about. "This is all mine! I control it! I understand it!" He walked rapidly around the little room.

"Have you seen Cassidy?" I shot out. The idea struck me so suddenly that I could not stop it. If they had brought *me* here, perhaps Cassidy was also in the house.

"All this!" he continued with a wide gesture; "all mine! I can do as I please with it. I left my home and family to come here and take charge of it." Suddenly, he seemed to grasp my presence and my question.

"Cassidy?" He shrugged his shoulders. "You? I? Only a few more or less? Who knows?"

A look of alarm spread over his tanned, handsome face.

"They might come for us at any time!" He looked around, out of the door and out of the windows. "I think they cut up people alive. Oh, my poor Vera and the babies!" He sat down and put his face in his hands and groaned.

I FLED from his presence in terror. My heart went out in pity to the poor fellow, but there was nothing in the world that I could do for him. This crazy city had already wrecked his mind, and it was time I undertook a retreat before it undermined my own. I had no doubt that he was from the City of Beauty, and had been captured and brought here.

I found more rooms, richly furnished and silent. Many of them had locked doors and I could not get in. Broad, automatic elevators took me to the upper floors. In a room on the third, I found an old man, in bed. His eyes opened wide when he saw me.

"Good morning!" I offered.

He continued to gaze at me sadly. White beards lend an infinite sadness to countenance anyway. During all my life I had not seen as many white whiskers as I had during these few days on this island.

"That is an astonishing thing to say here," the old man finally replied. "Who are you?"

"I'm not sure by this time that I know, myself, who I am," I said slowly, thinking hard just what to say. "Anyway, I am a stranger on this island. I am sorry to intrude on you. In fact, I was railroaded into this house, and I am going to get out mighty quick."

He continued to look at me in a sort of sad wonderment.

"Are you someone in authority here?" I asked at last.

He shook his head and studied me mournfully for a while. I waited till it should please him to speak.

"I have seen days when things were different on this island," he finally volunteered. "Then, young men spoke like you do. You talk as they did in that old America that I knew so long ago."

"That's where I'm from, and they talk that way yet," I told him. "And now I'm looking for a way to get back there."

"If you can really decide to act for yourself, do so quickly. It is a lost art. I have no idea as to what fate they intended for you or me, but it is not a pleasant one. Many have been taken—hundreds. Where are they? Have you seen them anywhere?"

"Come with me, then!" I exclaimed, for a wave of genuine alarm was mounting within me.

"Ha! ha!" There was a note of genuine merriment in the old man's laugh. "What difference does it make what becomes of me? I haven't any idea of how you plan to escape, but I know it will be a strenuous task; and to burden yourself with a feeble old man would make your escape impossible. Now go quickly!"

"Have you seen Cassidy?" I asked, turning to go.

"Cassidy? Have they got him?" He groaned something inarticulate. "Hurry, I tell you!" he urged.

I left him reluctantly. Now I understood what the old house was used for. It was a temporary resting-place for captured victims. There they rested overnight and had a meal or two, before they were taken to their doom. They were royally treated, but what was the doom?

I hurried through the house, trying doors that I had not yet opened, and shouting Cassidy's name at the top of my voice. Was I too late? If I could only find him, we would lose no time in leaving this town. But most of the doors were locked, and confused echoes were my only answer. I ran outdoors, down the gravel walk, and to the bronze gates. I studied the gates and the wall; but climbing was an impossibility without a ladder. The trees growing near the wall offered a suggestion.

Then the gates opened a little, and the foolish little chariot of yesterday rolled in. It sidled up to me and rubbed against me, like a dog begging for attention. I looked down at the thing in amazement; but there it was, too small to conceal a person, just a whirring, mechanical thing. No wonder the man with the wrench had lost his mind! The bronze gates were tightly closed again.

There was nothing to do but to get into it. It would get me through the gates, which right now was my worst desire. I idly wondered what would happen if I refused to get into the machine, as I took my place in the seat. When the bar snapped across my chest, my muscles tightened involuntarily, and a shudder ran all through me, in spite of all my determinations to sit quietly. But, I forced myself to relax. I looked over the little machine, and felt sure that I could break away from it, when I decided that the time to do so had arrived. I noted that the bar across my chest did not fit as accurately as the one on the truck had done; and quietly I set about studying ways to wiggle out of it.

Every moment of that long trip was an anxious wait for an opportunity to get away from the car. Not an instant eluded me; yet not an instant offered itself in which escape was possible. Most of the time the speed was so great that jumping out would have meant broken bones. When stops were made, they were in such dense traffic that I was afraid of the huge things around me. I noted that I again passed within a short distance of the golden oval of the Supervision Building. Other locations seemed rather familiar, though I had not fixed the details in my memory sufficiently to be sure; but I recognized them subconsciously. Then I spied the pretty little building with the web of wires leading into it, in which I had spent an uncomfortable forenoon yesterday, scrutinized by lenses and tooted at by invisible pipes.

I expected to be put into that room again, and was gathering my wits and muscles to avoid it; and was thus thrown off my guard. For, my car approached the broad, garage-like doors of a smooth, concrete building next to it. The doors were big enough to let a truck through. But they worked the same trick on me that the bronze gates at the park had done; one of them opened just wide enough to let the car through. The car stopped just within the door, and the bar opened away from my chest, releasing me. I stepped off and looked about me. I hadn't liked the cold-looking building from the outside; and I didn't like this clean, bare, cold-looking room. While I was staring at it, the machine slipped backwards, and the doors closed shut, with a whirring of gears.

I whirled about and shook them and pounded them, but they were as immovable as the rock of a mountain-side. I stood and sputtered in anger for a few moments at the way I had been handled. There was certainly an uncanny intelligence at the bottom of these maneuvers. But, *whose* was it? And *where* was it? I could see no signs of life anywhere.

The room was large, large as an auditorium, with walls and floor of smooth concrete. The floor was clean and bright; it sloped toward a drain in the middle of the room, so that it could be washed down. There were many large windows, making the interior almost as bright as outdoors, and on the ceiling were numerous large electric globes. There was a concrete table near the north windows, and near it a glass case of instruments. I looked at the instruments curiously; they looked like apparatus for demonstrations in science lectures, but I could not guess the use of a single one.

The arrangement reminded me of the lay-out of a surgical operating-room in a hospital. I detected a queer odor in the air; I cannot describe it otherwise than as a warm, animal odor. My spine began to feel creepy and my knees trembled. Then I discovered a lot of clothes hung on hooks in one of the glass cases, both men's and women's; and they were the fine, well-made clothes that were worn in the City of Beauty. I looked about anxiously for a way of escape. I remembered back how I used to bring dogs into the experimental laboratory at the college; and now I wondered how the dogs felt about it. I decided that it was high time for me to make a desperate break for liberty.

Again one of the doors opened, and a man was shoved in, staggering and blinking. A flood of joy overwhelmed me.

"Cassidy!" I shouted, leaping toward him.

He was pale; but when he saw me he turned paler yet, and terror shone in his face.

"Davy!" he gasped. "You here?" He groaned in despair.

"I came here to look for you," I told him. "So, cheer up! I'm going to get you out."

"Sh-sh!" He put his finger to his lips. The man's former spirit seemed to be gone out of him. "Whatever you do, don't talk too much!" he warned.

"All right. Not another word out of me," I whispered.

I got into action at once. With my right hand I loosened my hand ax in its sheath, and with the left, dragged and shoved Cassidy toward one of the big windows. The glass was tough; I rained blow after blow on it with the head of the ax before I cracked open a hole big enough to crawl through. I sheathed the ax, for I could not risk losing it, even though I heard some sort of a commotion behind me. I boosted Cassidy through the broken window.

"Run! Don't wait for me!" I shouted, for I already suspected I'd never get out after him. I heard him scramble among the broken glass outside, and his footsteps thumped away into the distance.

AS I drew myself up to the level of the hole in the glass, I was seized from behind by three or four arms around me. They lifted me up and set me down again; and "snap!" I was clamped down in one of the silly little chariots again, and speeding out of the door into the dazzling daylight. In the room behind me were the two staring headlights of the Squid, and the air of the room was filled with waving, snaky coils. A half dozen other machines were crowding about, and a furious tooting was going on. It died away rapidly as I was whirled swiftly off down the street.

This time I had not only reached the limit of my patient self-control at being bundled around in pursuance to someone else's will; but also I was thoroughly frightened. Cassidy's face had shown real fear, and he was not a man to be easily scared. And that room made me shudder. I could not forget the odor; it was not unpleasant, but it reminded me too much of blood. Why had we been brought in there? And where was I bound for now?

I took out my ax, and hammered at the bar that held me. It was too strong to yield that way. Attempts to twist myself out of its grip were also futile. It held me too cleverly and securely. An idea that had long been forming in my head, suddenly matured. I whipped out my Colt's .45 automatic, put the muzzle close to the lock of the bar, and bang! bang! pulled the trigger twice.

My hand was numbed by the recoil, so that I nearly dropped the pistol; and a fine spray of lead spattered about me. But, I dragged the pistol back to the holster and pushed it in. The machine swerved a couple of times and nearly collided with a big thing on caterpillar treads that was advancing down the street with a tremendous uproar. But my imprisoning bar swung loose, I was free!

I jumped out, stumbled to my knees in front of a swiftly moving, hooded vehicle, but was up in a moment and ran. My machine stood still behind me, vibrating and tooting. Other machines were slowing down and turning about.

I ran for the nearest solid wall, and then along that, looking for some kind of shelter. In a moment I came to a narrow crevice between two buildings. It was gloomy in there, in comparison with the brilliance of the street, and the débris on the ground made me stumble frequently. I followed the narrow space for a dozen yards into an enclosed backyard or court. Here there was a terrible din and clatter of machinery, and a good deal of rubbish. High overhead was a small square of sky. On the farther side was a pile of boards, apparently from broken-up crates. I pulled off a few, crouched down in the hole thus made, and piled back enough boards on top of me to hide me from view.

I had no delusions yet about being safe. My impression was that some all-seeing eye was following my every move, and that it knew perfectly well right now where I was. If I could get completely under cover for a while, perhaps I could avoid being picked up by the observer when I emerged. I found that most of the boards in the pile were light enough and small enough so that I could work them aside, and burrow into the pile, toward its farther end, which was up against a building. Even though I worked slowly and cautiously, the sweat poured off me in rivers, and my clothes were soaked through with it. For a while I had to stop and lie quiet, when a tiny leading-machine dashed in through the cleft by which I had entered the courtyard, and sputtered noisily around the enclosure.

Then the beam of a crane leaned through the opening, with hanging chains and a spotlight. The chains dragged over the boards under which I lay, scattering the pile with a couple of hooks. It looked as though they knew exactly where I was. A faint wish began to enter my heart that I had stayed away from this city in the first place. I had thought that I would have human beings to deal with, man to man. But, they had things so organized that I never saw the people at all; and I had no chance against their machinery.

I dug desperately farther under the boards, and finally reached a wall. There I found an iron grating beneath me, in the pavement of the courtyard. It apparently opened into some cool, underground space; and through it came the sounds of machinery pounding somewhere in a basement. I pried up the grating with

a board, squeezed into the opening, and dropped the grating back over my head.

Sometimes memory is merciful. I do not remember the details of that awful trip in the darkness and noise. My salvation was in my pocket flashlight, which kept me from falling into vats of foul-looking liquids, or crawling straight into whirling machinery, whose proximity was indistinguishable in the din. I crawled along for ages through a narrow, close, suffocating space, sometimes in a tunnel of stone, sometimes through a steel tube; and frequently there were gratings below me. It must have been a ventilator, for always a draft of hot, sickening air blew in my face. One thing was comforting: I seemed to have gotten away.

Eventually I reached a place where the hot draft blew upwards, and I was able to stand up. My flashlight showed me a group of seven or eight pipes extending upward into the darkness. They were held together by diagonal trusses, and provided a fairly good ladder for climbing, forming a sort of narrow latticework. I hitched all my belongings comfortably around myself and started upwards.

Some fragmentary impressions of the climb are as follows: a strong smell of ammonia in one place; a glimpse of an immense room filled with whirling flywheels and great pumps; another vast room which was quite empty and intensely cold; periodical rumblings at one point, as though huge bulks of something were sliding or rolling past. Finally there was a welcome glimpse of the sky above me, crossed by a latticework of beams. Climbing was not difficult, except that my haversack and field-glasses kept getting in my way as they hung over my shoulder. At last I tumbled out on a tar-and-gravel roof. The pipes I had been climbing continued upwards, above my head, into the bottom of a great water-tank that was supported on four steel legs, high in the air above the roof of the building.

I was intensely thirsty, and my first concern was water. There seemed to be plenty of it above me, and I reasoned that there must be some way of getting some of it. I set about a systematic search, though my impulse was to shoot a hole in one of the pipes. However, I discovered a valve in a pipe that ran along the roof, much to my joy, for a thirsty man is a desperate creature. As I turned it on, a great flood of water poured out on the roof, and I hastily shut it again lest I call attention to myself. Then I turned on a small stream. Again my military training served me in good stead, for if I had drunk my fill as I craved to do, I should have collapsed and been at the mercy of my enemies. I drank slowly and sparingly. For an hour I lay and rested and drank, and listened for possible pursuit.

At the end of that time I was fairly confident that I had succeeded in escaping. The first thing I did was to reload my pistol, so that it contained a full clip. As I took my supply of cartridges out of my haversack, a piece of paper fluttered out. I picked it up curiously, for I knew of no scraps of paper among my things. It was a scented note-paper, containing a message in a rounded, feminine handwriting:

> "I love you. It frightens me to have you go to that terrible place, but I know you will do it. Please, Davy, come back safe to me.
>
> "Your little brick."

I spent many minutes over my message, lost in pleasant thoughts: and then I drew myself together with a new determination to get out of this situation. The first thing to do was to examine the ground thoroughly. By climbing a little higher and keeping hidden among the pipes, I found that I could get a view of the entire city and remain out of sight myself. I was on the roof of a tower, three or four stories above the rest of the buildings. Because of the view it commanded, I judged that this building must be in the highest part of the city. In fact, it was easy to make out a gentle slope eastward toward the river, and a longer, steeper one toward the sea on the west.

I set about drawing a map in my notebook of all I could see. This was a tedious task, for my precarious perch among the pipes did not permit of drawing; I had to climb up and take a good look, and then descend and draw from memory. My greatest obstacle was dirt, for my hands were so grimy from the sooty, dirty things I had to get hold of, that it was almost impossible to handle paper with them. But I finally got a passable map sketched out.

THE City of Smoke was about rectangular in shape, with the long dimension east and west, or from river to ocean. The total distance from river to ocean must have been about fifteen miles; but the city occupied only about six miles of that in length, while its width I judged to be about four miles. On the east, along the river's edge, the rectangle spread a little in width; the river bank was lined with docks and wharves, and the river was alive with tugs and barges, and a double stream of smoking vessels wound along the river into the interior of the island, where in the distance I could see forests and mountains.

Toward the sea, the rectangle narrowed a little, and there were several miles of empty, sandy flats intervening between the city's boundaries and the little harbor. The harbor contained only three small ships and its dock space was limited. Ocean traffic was apparently not developed at all in comparison with that on the river. The ocean end of the city consisted chiefly of long lines of huge warehouses, and several broad lines of pavement led to the little harbor.

Down below me, there were huge, piled-up blocks of buildings, and the grimy streets swarmed with black, crawling things. The noise was tempered by distance into a dull, rustling hum. Toward the river there was a forest of belching chimneys, and the air was thick and murky with smoke. I could see the walled house in its park, a couple of miles away, in the very center of the city. To the south, not far from the edge of the city, was the golden oval dome of the Supervision Building; and near it ran the road that led out of the city, and into the blue forest. There was no sign of the City of Beauty on the southern horizon.

A sudden, swelling, organ-like tone rose up toward me from the street just below. I leaned far over and looked down. Far down below was the concrete roof of the laboratory-like building. The confused swirl of machines in the street seemed to have organized itself into a stream that flowed in one direction, and the organ-note was the combined tooting coming from many of them. Then, I noted a small, black figure running in front of the rushing column of machines. The desperate man seemed to have no chance; they were almost upon him.

An icy panic shot through my heart. For a moment I thought it was Cassidy. But my field-glasses showed me that the man was tall and spare, and that he swung a large wrench in one hand. Then he dodged around a corner; the stream of machines swarmed after him and I saw no more.

It became obvious that I would have to wait till night for my effort to get out of the city. In the meanwhile I planned the details. The easiest way seemed to be to make for the south gate and for the road to the City of Beauty. Just because that was so easy, I would not consider it; it would mean being caught in a

trap. The river offered the next best plan of getting away easily and swiftly; but I was also afraid of that. The river and the road ran along too close together, and both were too full of swift craft. Finally, the distance to the river was much the greater, and through the densest, most tangled part of town.

Toward the ocean, the city looked less busy; the streets were straighter and less crowded. The beach looked completely deserted, and would be comparatively easy traveling. There seemed to be no small vessels that could get into sufficiently shallow water to reach me from the ocean side, if I once gained the beach. On the other hand, my best method of getting away from the land machines was to wade out waist-deep into the water. No machine run by gas or electricity could follow me there. Besides, the beach led straight to the Gulls' Nest, which was a safe hiding-place.

I studied the boundaries of the city carefully with my field-glasses. Everywhere, the edge of the city was a solid wall of buildings, offering no chance of egress. The only ways of getting out were the river, the south gate which I did not trust, and the west gate toward the ocean.

The afternoon passed quickly for me. I was interested in watching the scurrying things below, and the great, swinging hulks in the distance. Part of the time I spent in studying out a way to get down into the street. A repetition of my climb through the interior of the building was out of question. But, two of the legs of the tank were outside the wall of the building, and extended down to the ground. Each leg consisted of two I-beams braced together with crossbars, cleverly welded, but making a very passable ladder.

Between five and six o'clock, a great swarm of cars poured out of the building with the golden dome; through my glasses I could see little human heads and bright highlights of clothing. They spun off, out of the south gate, and toward the City of Beauty. How I wished I could go with them! It seemed so near, and yet so difficult.

After six o'clock, traffic in the streets quieted down considerably, and there were but few vehicles, and little noise. I waited almost three more hours for the short tropical twilight, which was quickly followed by night. Here and there a light shone out in the darkness, but on the whole, lights were few for such a large city. I filled my canteen, and forthwith started down the leg of the water-tank. The abyss below frightened me, but the thing had to be done. It was easier in the darkness than it would have been by daylight; I could see nothing below except velvety blackness; and at no time had I any idea of how much farther I had to go. Soon I found it difficult not to believe that my torturers had excavated a shaft a mile deep into the ground, and that I was climbing down into it. Finally, however, a foot struck solid ground, and I stepped off my ladder.

Gradually I made out that I was between two buildings; there was a strip of lighter sky above and a glow of electric light at the right. I reached the street easily and headed west by compass. I stuck close to buildings and remained in shadows, crossing open spaces on a run, and keeping an alert lookout in all directions. However, my flight was easy, for I could travel silently and in the dark, whereas the approach of a machine was always heralded by a glare of light and plenty of noise. Of course, there was the possibility of people lying in wait for me; but I had already begun to feel that I would never encounter the masters of this place in personal combat. I was skeptical about their courage to face danger and conflict. They delegated everything to machines, as far as I could ascertain.

I found the south boundary of the city and followed it westward, toward the western gate. I lost an hour convincing myself that indeed no escape was possible except by the gate. The great factory buildings and warehouses that formed the city wall were in direct contact; they were built of brick, steel, and masonry. There was no climbing over them for they were from two to six stories high; and in the darkness I could find no way of getting up to the roofs. All doors and windows seemed to be securely locked; the horrors of that afternoon's climb through one building sufficed to keep away my desire for going through any more buildings. An hour's search failed to reveal any crevice or crack between the buildings that led to the outside. The gate was my only hope.

I readily found the gate at the west end of the city, with the aid of my map and pocket flashlight. It was brilliantly lighted by electric lights, by whose aid I could see that it was closed by two steel doors. Four of the little leading-machines stood about under the glare of the electric light; and two small, swift trucks were ranged across the way I would have to go; cranes and hooks swung from them in readiness.

I could not see anybody, but I knew that they were watching for me; and the bright light made it impossible for me to get within a hundred feet of the gate without exposing myself to the observation of the watchers.

I slunk into the shadows, for I had no doubt that these things were waiting for me.

CHAPTER XI

One Night in Sheol

I SHRANK back into the depths of the shadow for a moment, into sinking indecision as to what to do next. I was trapped in this hideous city! The realization descended upon me with the convincing force of a pile-driver. If this gate was so well guarded—the one that I would apparently be the least likely to take—the certainty that the other one would be tightly sewed up was so great that I did not even care to try it.

This place was like the fortified cities of the Middle Ages, surrounded by an impassable wall. Why? Probably the real reason was that the solid and continuous construction was most convenient for manufacturing purposes, especially where there was so much automatic machinery, and air and light for workers was not an important consideration. Nevertheless, the sickening recollection came to me that I had been repeatedly reminded of how many people got in here and none ever got out.

Well, the first thing to do was to put more distance between me and this brightly lighted, heavily guarded gateway. As I turned to steal carefully away, my foot came down on a loose piece of iron. It was curved like the rocker of a rocking-chair, and was no doubt the broken leaf of an automobile spring. It swung over my toes as I stepped, and hit the pavement with a ringing clatter. For an instant I stiffened, and then dashed swiftly across the street. I acted unconsciously first, and reasoned why I did so later; which of course was to get away from the spot where the sound had occurred.

Nor was I a bit too quick. Like a shot from a cannon, one of the leading-machines whizzed toward the spot, with a sputtering roar that reverberated through the darkness. Before it reached there, I had crawled under a sort of ramp, whose purpose was apparently to permit vehicles to drive up into the building. I couldn't see the leading-machine that was looking for me, but I could hear it chugging about. I was amazed at the quick reaction of the person who was watching for me;

it wasn't ten seconds from the time the iron dropped until the machine was racing after me. I remained crouched in my dark corner half an hour after the machine was gone.

In the meanwhile, I pondered on what I should do. Both gates were closed up, and the city was surrounded by an impassable wall, impassable as far as I had been able to ascertain by my observations from the inside, outside, and above; while a search for some small possible opening might require several days. My only hope was the river-front. If I could reach the water and find a boat or something to float on, getting back to the City of Beauty would be relatively simple. But I shrank mentally from approaching that terrific maze of wharves and boats and black water, beams and cranes and crooked alleyways among blackened buildings and machines. My chances looked slim enough in that region. Yet, they were all I had, and I turned my face in that direction.

For an hour I plodded eastward through the gloomy, silent streets. They were unutterably, forbiddingly dreary at night; there were no sidewalks, only black walls and blank windows, with oceans of inky shadows everywhere. Each step that I took forward, each shadow that I approached, brought my heart into my mouth, for fear of someone lying in wait for me. A million times I fully expected someone to leap out at me and bear me to the ground, or a shot to come from behind a building, or some sort of chain lasso to drop over my head.

I admitted to myself that I had often been in situations of equal or greater actual danger; but never had I been in one that so demoralized my nerve. Not only was I appalled by this extraordinary, monstrous city, like the wild ravings of some madhouse engineer; but I had no idea who my enemies were, where they were, or what sort of weapons they would use. I had no idea when they could see me, and when I could feel safely out of their sight. At any moment, they might have some sort of amazing, high-powered night-seeing telescopes trained upon me. For aught I knew, they might be accurately informed of every step I was taking, and only be waiting their own good time to seize me. The thought drove me still deeper into the shadows beside the buildings.

However, as I have always done on similar occasions, I kept plodding onward, doing what the immediate moment required, because that was all that could be done. My compass with its luminous needle was my best friend that night; without it I should have gotten hopelessly lost in the muddle of streets, to be picked up by the machine-people sooner or later. I surmised that it must not be strictly accurate, for this place must have been alive with electrical currents, but it sufficed to guide me eastward, toward the dark and devious river-front.

Half a dozen times it occurred to me that the water ought to be in sight already; and I looked for the grain-elevators and for the barge-loading conveyors that I had seen in the afternoon from my observation point. But distances seem greater in the dark and progress is actually much slower, especially in unknown territory; and I schooled myself to be patient.

Then, a few streets to my left, I heard the sputtering rush of several leading-machines going at high speed. It seemed crashingly loud in the darkness as it reverberated through the hollow spaces. It grew louder and louder, and then began to decrease again. I judged that the machines were proceeding in the same direction that I was, that is, directly toward the river. Then came another roar, this time with much more rattle and rumble to it. Trucks, several of them, I surmised. They seemed to be approaching quite close to me. In fact, I began to suspect that they were on this same street, and soon perceived the glow of their lights far behind me.

"I'm getting out of here, right now!" I said, half aloud, and looked frantically around for means of doing so.

I was in the middle of a block with unbroken walls all around. But I remembered that a few rods back I had passed a concrete base-block as high as my shoulder, on which rested a vertical trussed-steel beam, apparently the leg of some great, dim framework, high up above.

I ran back to it, assuming the risk of going toward the approaching glare of the trucks; and as soon as I reached it, I dodged behind it. I swung myself to the top of the block, and clambered up the trussed iron leg, keeping behind it and out of reach of the headlights. In a few moments the trucks had clattered by below me, without even slowing down, and gradually drew off into the distance to the east. I continued to cling to my perch as their lights and their clatter grew fainter.

"Fooled them!" I thought. "They'll never find me over there."

That was encouraging. In a moment, however, there was another hurtling roar, and from my elevated perch I saw a few streets away a group of lights gliding swiftly eastward, disappearing behind black things and appearing again. And, far in the east, over a wide area, numerous little lights twinkled and dashed back and forth.

I CLIMBED a little higher and gazed intently eastward, trying to fathom what was going on. For, by this time, three huge searchlights on the high towers far to the east of me were swinging around, showing up streets and masses of buildings and swift machines for fitful instants. That was my destination over there, where those lights were sweeping about, and where those machines were dashing back and forth. No place for me right now, however.

Just a few minutes' walk ahead and to my right was the huge, glowing bulk of the Supervision Building and its dome. The lights and commotion were far on beyond it. In fact, as I watched, I caught an occasional gleam of light on black water; and I was certain that the clattering, flashing night hunt was going on in that section of the city that bordered on the river.

"So that goose is cooked too," I thought. "I seem to be thoroughly stuck."

I felt limp and weak from discouragement.

What diabolical foresight enabled them to anticipate that I was going to the river? That was more than human. That they might see me in the dark, that they might have visual detectors of unknown power, or things that could hear me, smell me, or detect the presence of my bodily electrical charges, I could readily imagine. But how could they tell what I *intended* to do before I ever started to do it? If they could do that, the probabilities of unheard-of powers of torture and destruction, in wait for me, were unlimited and hideous. Never in my life had I been so thoroughly terrified and discouraged.

Then, another explanation suddenly struck me, which at the same time overjoyed and terrified me. Perhaps that rumpus over there signified that Cassidy had reached the waterfront! Perhaps they had tracked *him* down to the river. As long as the lively activity continued, I was sure that he was not yet caught. I trembled so, in my excitement for his safety, that I had to exert redoubled efforts to keep my hold on the iron framework, high in the air and darkness.

I felt sure, however, that Cassidy's chances for escape were better than mine. Surely he must know more about this city than I. He must understand the nature

of his danger and the methods of his enemies. His lot was certainly not as helpless as mine. If we could only be together!

What next? I gripped the iron bars extending into emptiness above and below, in an agony of despair. I was hemmed in, blocked! Powers vast and mysterious, to whose nature I had no clue, had me at their mercy. How futile was my small strength against these monstrous, pulsing things! It would be easiest to give up the struggle. Their net around me was vast and impenetrable; amazing machinery in vast quantities was arrayed against me and I was alone. What was the use?

Then there came into the midst of my gloomy cogitations a pair of brown eyes looking trustingly into mine, a head on my shoulder, a little soft body held in my arms. She must be waiting anxiously for me. If she knew anything at all about these awful things, her wait must be more trying than my own position. My courage returned, and my determination was again as firm as a mountain. There must be some way out of this, and I've got to find it!

Was there another gate in the north wall of the city? I could remember a road winding up into the mountains and forests of the north, but I could not remember a gate. But, even if there were a gate, it would be so guarded as to offer me no hope. Then the brilliant idea came to me!

Probably I had been slowly evolving it in my unconscious mind for a long time; but the full force of it struck me so suddenly that I nearly let go and fell down into the darkness below.

There was the Supervision Building ahead of me! And every evening a swarm of cars left it and drove southward to the City of Beauty! Surely those people would be my friends, and let me hide in a car and ride back home with them. It was obvious that they were no real friends of these hideous machine-people. And by this time, I thought that most people in the City of Beauty knew me or knew of me.

My heart bounded high with hope. My problem was solved. But not altogether. It would be many hours before the cars were leaving for the City of Beauty. Where could I hide in safety until it came time for me to hide in one of them? This vast city, with thousands of buildings and streets and alleys for miles in all directions, was unknown to me, and well-known to my enemies. It was evident to me at once that I must hide somewhere near where the cars were to pass. For I couldn't travel very far through this city during the daytime from my hiding-place to catch my car home. The poor wretch whom I had seen down below me in the street that afternoon came at once into my mind, as did the narrow escapes I myself had had. The thought of the possibility of being caught and locked up and taken to that laboratory again was enough to make me infinitely cautious. Where could I spend the time until the later afternoon when the cars started back to the City of Beauty? What a beautiful, comfortable, desirable place the City of Beauty now seemed, as I thought of it!

I clambered slowly down. There was only one possibility. Somewhere in the Supervision Building itself I had to find concealment. I ran over in my mind the interior of the building. My recollection of it was clear, for I had studied it the previous forenoon for several hours from an excellent point of view. The three or four little platforms twenty feet above the floor, the elevator shaft, the racks and cases of instruments, the chairs and settees---nothing offered any hope of concealment. Therefore, what I must do was to get into the building and look around.

I reached the building in a few minutes, walked under the great arched doorways, into the darkness of the vast building. Its deep and silent blackness frightened me. Toward the south, high overhead, I could make out the glow of the sky through the embrasures in the wall. There were blacker, denser portions of shadow, showing where the walls of the middle sunken passageway were, and above them the serrated figures of the instrument cases and racks. I walked slowly, with a hand before me, with my knees trembling at every step, fully expecting something to rise up and descend on me from behind each dark, misshapen shadow, out of each black, yawning space. My first footsteps sounded loudly in the silence. For fifteen minutes I crouched motionless and listened before I took the next. I crept a little farther and listened again. Absolute silence! Not a click, not a rustle.

What did it mean? Was all of this just dummy apparatus? In the morning I had suspected that the people knew nothing about it as they moved among the things. And now I was sure that if all these meters and gauges and control-devices had really been connected to power lines and active machinery, there would have been many little noises in the night—a tap in a pipe, the flutter of a needle, the tick of clockwork, the hum of a coil, the gurgle of a bubble. But here was silence that meant death, not life; not even mechanical life. I had already suspected that the real center of control of the city was elsewhere; now I was sure that this was just a dummy, for the benefit of the dolls from the City of Beauty.

What did the comedy mean?

However, the thought gave me confidence for the present, for it meant that there was probably no one about the premises now, as the place was of no real importance. My courage rose to the point where I dared to use my flashlight; I tried it cautiously, and finally used it whenever I needed it.

MY search was discouraging. There were no nooks nor corners; the construction of the building was massive and simple. The floor of the middle channel passageway was level with the ground outside. The floors on which the people spent the day among dummy instruments were ten feet above this, no doubt so that the people could also look down on the procession of cars; and at intervals, stairways about six feet wide led down to the level of the vehicles. Yet—here was one hope. Underneath these raised floors there must be a lot of empty space; a sort of cellar. That was worth investigating and seeing whether it could be used for concealment.

A trip around the inside and outside of the building failed to reveal any doorways leading into this space. However, that made it all the more desirable as a hiding-place, could I but once get into it. I had gone half way around the building on the outside and reached the tall entrance way for cars opposite the one by which I had entered. Everything was so silent and deserted that I suppose I got careless. I must have permitted myself to be seen plainly in the glow of the stars moving against the white wall of the building. From somewhere along the street came the soft rustle of well-lubricated, nicely adjusted machinery.

I dropped flat on the ground instantly, and crawled slowly toward the doorway. A band of light from headlights appeared on the pavement, and then a leading-machine slowly rolled out of the darkness and glided into the doorway. The sounds of its motor echoed around in the great spaces within. In a few minutes it came out again, and disappeared in the darkness up the street.

I slipped quietly into the door. This was the door out of which the cars drove on their way to the City of

Beauty. My hiding-place would have to be near here. for I could not afford to drive through the whole place after choosing my car and getting into it.

I tapped the stairway with my ax. It was solid concrete. I tapped the wall of the middle channel. It sounded heavy, but hollow, brick apparently. Then there was a sudden clatter behind me, and I whirled around to see a truck driving in through the arch, swinging a heavy crane arm against the starry sky. It drove right down upon me where I crouched between the steps and the wall. Before I realized what was happening, my escape was cut off by its lumbering bulk and its swinging steel beam.

The pivoted half-ton of steel swung down on me, just as the other had done that night on the dock. Only then I had been cool, and master of the situation; now I was frantic from nameless terrors. I saw it coming in the glare of the truck's headlights, and thought my last moment had come.

But again my long training in quick response to emergencies came to my aid. Quick as a flash, when the iron beam was almost upon me, I dodged down into the darkness below and between the headlights of the truck, between its front wheels. There the beam could not reach me.

Crash!

The beam hit the wall, and there were smothered thuds of falling bricks. The beam swung away, and there was a ragged black hole in the wall beside the steps.

The truck backed away, swinging its beam up into the air again, which gave me time to spring up and run swiftly to one side, out of the field of its headlights.

"Whow!" I thought, regarding the gaping opening in the brick wall, knocked through with one blow. "That's exactly where I stood!"

I crouched down in the shadow in the next stairway while the truck blundered around. I peered anxiously for a glance at the people on it, but the glare of its headlights shut out everything else in a wall of blackness. As the truck came looking for me, sweeping a spotlight about, it was a simple matter for me to dodge out of the door. After clattering around and raising all the echoes of the place, it finally came out of the door backwards.

In the meanwhile, another brilliant idea had struck me with such suddenness as to make me dizzy. The truck had shown me a way into an ideal hiding-place!

I lost no time in slipping into the hole, and I crouched down in the narrowest space under the concrete steps. I could hear the truck lumbering back in again; and soon there was a softer rustle of a leading-machine. For a while there was a good deal of commotion, but eventually the machinery left. I allowed myself a half an hour of absolute silence before I straightened out my cramped limbs. Considering their power and ingenuity in some directions, my enemies were singularly stupid in others, I thought, as I put back in its holster the pistol I had ready for the first shadow that I saw appear in the jagged opening in the bricks. How could they omit searching in the cavity where I was all the time? Even then, I did not have the least suspicion of the astounding truth.

I groped away from the opening, feeling my way along the wall, back into the depths of the space under the floor. A glance at the dusty, cobwebby rows of concrete pillars showed that the place was unused, probably never visited. I was dead with fatigue, hungry, and sleepy. I took the time to return and put back as many bricks as I could find into the opening, to make it as inconspicuous as possible; and then I selected a resting place far enough away from the hole so that if anyone came in, I would be the first one to be on the alert.

A few bites of biscuit and chocolate, and a drink from my canteen sufficed for my hunger. The stuff was too unpalatable for one to eat a great deal of it, no matter how hungry one was. I went to sleep almost immediately, and woke up in what seemed a few minutes.

But, my watch said ten o'clock, and a faint glow from the direction of the hole through the wall indicated that it must be daylight. I could hear the cars outside my place of concealment driving in with the "Supervisors"; and soon I heard the footsteps of the latter above me.

I did not sleep any more. Most of the time I was alert, but occasionally I half dozed. It was a long wait in the darkness, with the monotonous sounds without. When I thought an hour had elapsed, I looked at my watch and found that it had been actually five minutes. I had plenty of time to think out things now.

My mind turned to Mildred. I had been gone for two days now. She must be in a good deal of uncertainty about me; I hoped that she was not worrying too much. That depended a good deal about how much she actually knew about the dangers of this place. I clenched my fists in impatience. The time went slower than ever. Galveston and my great-uncle were so far away that they seemed part of another life. The hoped-for medical practice in east Texas was a mere dream. The reality was a concrete slab above me, the powdery dust below, the rhythmic monotony of the sounds without this velvety blackness, and this hideous hive of roaring machines with their cruel, mysterious intelligence behind them. Would I ever live to realize that dream? How wonderful it would be there, with Mildred by my side!

Anyway, I had enough of curiosity about this city. Let it be what it may; I didn't care. I wanted to get out. That suddenly brought me to the realization that I had not solved a single one of the questions that I had come here to discover. Who were the people in charge of the machinery? What was going on in this city? What was the reason for the terror of the pretty people in the City of Beauty? What was the cause of the revolutionary plans of the determined few? Although I had been over a considerable portion of this grimy, bellowing city, seen all of it from above, and some of it from the inside, I hadn't the faintest idea of the answers to these questions.

Clang! went a gong somewhere in the building. I started up suddenly, for I think I must have been dozing a little. The tapping of feet above swelled into a wave and grew louder. They were going home! The moment had come for my escape! The City of Beauty and Mildred! Soon I would see them.

I GOT up close to the hole and looked out. How welcome was that glimpse of daylight. I saw cars going by and noted with satisfaction that they did not go too fast for me to jump into one of them. I saw people's legs, as they walked past the hole and down the stairs toward the cars. There would be a group of them, and then none for a while; and again a group and another lull. I waited for a lull and crawled out.

I crouched down low and watched the cars. Some were crowded; some contained ladies; some were too open. I hoped for an empty one, but did not dare risk too long waiting. Besides, I could never be sure of which way an empty one might go; those with people on them were sure to go to the City of Beauty. At this last moment, I couldn't afford to make a wrong step and fail.

Finally the desired opportunity came: an enclosed car with a single occupant. He was a graceful, pink-faced, frock-coated young man, who looked such a perfect fashion-plate that there could be no doubt that he was from the City of Beauty. I looked myself over grimly, and as the car went slowly by, I opened the door

and stepped in; I got my head down below the level of the car's window in order to be out of sight from without.

For a few minutes the elegant young man continued looking intently ahead, and paid no attention to me. I surmised that he had looked forward to having the car all to himself on the way home and did not care for company; hence the cool attitude. I chuckled grimly to myself at the thought of his rude awakening. Then as the car slowly got up speed outside the building, he turned languidly around to see who was with him. The way his face went slowly blank, his eyebrows rose, and his jaw dropped, was worth the price of an admission fee. He opened his mouth and shut it again, like a fish out of the water. Lest he should speak, I put my hand over his mouth, and whispered softly into his ear:

"Still as a mouse! Don't move!"

I must have looked sufficiently terrible to him, for he quieted down, and seemed limp and paralyzed.

"Sit up here now, and act as though you were alone in the car!" I commanded in my softest whisper. "Do you know what this is?"

I showed him my pistol. I doubt if he knew exactly what it was, but evidently he sensed that it was dangerous, or that I was, for he sat still with trembling hands and lips. I crouched down in the lower part of the car and kept my eyes closely upon him.

The car sped rapidly, swerving this way and that in the traffic. My heart pounded madly as I heard the car rumble through the narrow passage to the gate of the city! and when the noise of traffic ceased and I no longer saw roofs and smokestacks through the window, I knew that we were outside the city!

The man looked at me only occasionally and hesitatingly. Physically, he was undoubtedly a good match for me; and under other circumstances I would have been slow to tackle him. But now, for some reason he was in terror. I could hardly see why it should be myself that so terrified him. I admit that I must have been an uncouth sight, dusty and grimy, with streaks of sweat and two or three days' growth of beard. Yet, I think that his fear was of something else, not of me.

Soon I saw green branches of trees through the windows, for my crouched-down position permitted me to see upwards only. Shortly, the semi-dusk of the forest closed in. I breathed more easily, but the young man's terror seemed to increase, and now I was positive that he was less afraid of me than of something else.

"Please!" he said in a shaky voice: "please get off! I know you. You are The Stranger. You don't understand. Don't you know that when They pick out a victim, resistance is useless and escape is impossible? Get off, or we are both lost. Why do you wish to bring down Their wrath upon me? I have done nothing. And I cannot save you!" He wrung his hands and began to push me out.

Too late I recollected Kaspar's warnings against discussing vital matters in the proximity of an automobile. Otherwise I would never have permitted that long harangue. Only when the car began to behave queerly a few minutes later did I realize my mistake. Then I was sure that there must be some system of radio communication and control between the vehicles and some diabolical headquarters in that black city. The machinery of the car began to whirr, and developed knocks. It slowed down and stopped, and began to back across the road. It was evident to me that the thing was turning around to carry me back to the City of Smoke; and quite as evident that this young Lothario's graceful speech had something to do with this behavior.

"You poor piece of cheese!" I snarled at the man. "Going to get me captured and yourself patted on the back, eh! Sorry I haven't got time to hit you in the jaw."

My anger at the man was so intense that I would have torn him to pieces. Almost on the doorstep of success; only a step more to complete escape; and then to be betrayed back into the toils of the machine-people by this soft, yellow coward! I might have known it, for that was the way that I had them all estimated from the beginning. Now I had the whole organization to fight with my own wits again, for in a few moments the road would be alive with machines looking for me. But, like a flash I realized that I had no time to lose, and that safety lay in the thick underbrush on both sides of me.

I threw him down in a corner of the car and leaped from the vacillating vehicle. I chose the right side of the road, remembering that my objective must be the sea; and I dived into the underbrush. The thicket was very dense, and I had to get out my hand ax to help myself get in far enough to be out of sight. By that time, the car from which I had dismounted was gone; and other vehicles were whizzing by, one after another, chiefly southward.

I went at the thicket with my ax, cutting just enough to permit me to squeeze through, a stick here and a vine there. Yet, it was a discouraging task. Although physically I felt vigorous and in good shape after my long rest, and able to fight a squad of giants—yet the density of the tropical thicket was almost unbelievable. As an impediment to progress, it was almost equivalent to a solid wall: thick wiry shrubs, tough, rubbery creepers; dense masses of fibrous, cork-like growth. In a few moments my breath was spent and the perspiration was pouring off me in rivers. The distance to the sea was four or five miles; and thus far, I had not progressed all of a dozen feet. The noise of the machines rushing and sputtering by was still too fearfully plain to me.

CHAPTER XII

The Electrical Brain

HOWEVER, I soon ascertained how little I knew about tropical forests. The thick undergrowth extended only as far as the extra sunlight from the open width of the roadway could penetrate. As the forest grew gloomier, the thicket grew less dense; and before many minutes I was in a sort of twilight, and could press on freely and swiftly toward the sea. The thin tree-trunks ran up to an immense height without a branch or a twig; vines twined around them and hung from them; far above, the roof of foliage was so dense that only a gray glimmer of light got through. The ground was soft, because it was covered with a carpet of dead leaves. Going was easy, and the tree-trunks so dense that any pursuit by machines was most unlikely; while for human pursuers I felt ready and eager.

I made good time through the aisles of the forest, watching my compass in order not to lose my way in the gloomy depths. I kept a lookout for animals, but saw none except some little monkeys about the size of squirrels. There were numerous birds, some of whose uncanny noises scared me, making me think there was a machine somewhere behind me. Once I passed a hideous, misshapen thing, hanging on the under side of a limb by four clumsy feet. I remembered enough of my zoology to recognize it as a sloth. Had I been in a humor for it, I should have enjoyed the opportunity for the study of tropical flora and fauna; but my nerves were stretched too tight, and I was trying to make speed.

At the time, the way seemed long before the roof over me began to show a thinning and more light came through, while shrubs appeared here and there. Soon

I had to get out my ax again, in order to force my way through the dense undergrowth of wiry, rubbery stems, huge leaves, and hairy, prickly fronds. I pushed my way out into the open, straightened up, and took great breaths of the air that felt cool in my lungs after the steamy depths of the forest. The beach was a dazzling white, and the blue and heaving ocean looked wonderfully free and welcome to me, shattering its green waves into white froth, just ahead of me.

A look at my watch surprised me. It seemed that I had been in the forest for hours; yet here it was only 4:45. That meant that I had about three more hours of daylight ahead of me; and some six or eight miles to the south of me lay the Gulls' Nest and safety! Safety? Why should the Gulls' Nest be safer than any other place in the island? Why couldn't these people reach it with aeroplanes and microphones? I did not know; but I knew that Kaspar and Mildred depended upon it as being absolutely safe; and I had the faith that they knew. Surely I would find some note there from Mildred, or some news of her. The thought made my heart race, and spurred me on toward the south.

I scanned the southern horizon anxiously, but there was nothing but sand and water and the blue line of forest. I felt reasonably safe as soon as I reached the water's edge, for in case I was pursued by some of the machines, I could wade out into the water. A little salt water on their electrical connections or in their carburetors would effectually stop their pursuit.

The sand crunched pleasantly under my feet, as I started out with lusty steps. In fact, I headed southward at a half run. The thought of Mildred and the fear of pursuit combined in lending me wings. In some thirty minutes I saw the blue mass of cliffs on the horizon, and the sight added to my speed. I had to admit that my nerves were shaken by the experiences of the past two days. Every moment I expected some sort of flying apparatus to appear in search of me, or some combination air and water machine to chase me up the beach. It was the possibility of the unknown and the unexpected that kept me in constant terror. My course up the beach was covered in the Indian fashion of running for a while and then walking long enough to get my breath so that I could run again.

I gave many a nervous start in alarm at some shadow of a bird, or at the sound of my own footsteps in the sand, before I finally arrived safely at the base of the cliffs. The great red disk of the sun was down near the water, and it was not yet seven o'clock. I gazed anxiously up toward the top of the cliffs, looking for the Gulls' Nest. Yes, there it was, the highest flat point on the ocean side. I recognized the wall of rock on the northeast of it.

I left the water's edge, which had hitherto been my safeguard, and moved toward the rocks in a diagonal line. I was puzzled as to how I could find my way to the top. The way to the Gulls' Nest was a tortuous path up the cliffside, and I didn't know where it was. I gazed intently up at the goal I was so anxious to reach. What was that? A flutter of white up there? And it had moved!

I seized my field-glasses eagerly and with a bounding heart. It was indeed Mildred. Waiting for me! She had known I would come! I waved my arms to her and then my hat. Her figure did not move. I wondered why she did not show some sign to me. Suddenly I heard a rat-tat-tat. I whirled around.

One of the little leading-machines dashed out of the shrubbery, along a little pathway, and hurtled toward me. I broke into a run back toward the water's edge, but gave it up in a moment. That was hopeless for the machine was moving so fast that I stood no chance. I had not even dreamed that there might be paths through the woods, along which the machines could travel.

Someone must have been directing the machine, someone who also closely observed my movements. For, as I ran, it changed its angle to intercept me in a straight line; and as I stopped it again changed its course directly toward me. I looked all around, but nowhere was there any sign of where an observer might be hidden. The thing itself was too small for any person to be hidden inside of it.

There it came, whizzing toward me! What did they want? It did not seem equipped to do me any harm, but I wouldn't trust it. Its weight and speed were enough to break all my bones if it should hit me. Then, in the distance came a light truck with a crane on it—a very common conveyance about the island. Its speed was so low and it was so far away that I could easily reach the water ahead of it, were it not for this other sputtering little devil coming at me. What did the thing intend to do?

Anyway, I had no desire for a hand-to-hand conflict with the whirring iron thing. I couldn't fight it. I couldn't outrun it. It had me cut off both from the sea and from the forest; it could reach either ahead of me by changing its direction. There was only one thing left for me to do.

I drew my Colt .45 automatic pistol, which I can do in the wink of an eye. Then I dropped on one knee, leveled the gun at the complicated mass of machinery between the wheels. I waited till it was thirty paces away and then fired three shots into it.

I could see things crumple on the machine. Several small black objects flew up into the air. There was a crash, and a toot cut short.

The vehicle swerved sidewise and threw up a cascade of sand into the air, some of which fell sprinkling down on me. The machine fell over on its side and slid for a dozen feet over the sand, with a grinding and rattling of metal, leaving a plowed-up swath behind it. I couldn't help standing for a moment and looking at it. Some little thing still clicked back and forth on it, and there was a hissing, as of gas escaping compression. Then, seeing the truck coming, I started for the water on a run.

POWERFUL as was my curiosity to stop and examine the crippled machine, my fear of getting lassoed by the truck was greater. The latter was coming toward me with a great roar, and I made high speed toward the water's edge. Because of the roar of the truck, I failed to hear the chugging of another leading-machine approaching from the opposite direction. Before I saw it, it had reached the wet sand ahead of me, and cut me off.

It stood directly in front of me, at the nearest point of the water's edge. When I changed direction, it headed for the spot that I had chosen, moving promptly to intercept me. The noise of the truck reminded me that I had little time to spare.

I drew my pistol again, and hurried closer to the little machine, which was outlined black against the disk of the setting sun. It stood there with a torrent of whistling sounds coming from it, and I could not refrain from the fancy that it was a big, iron bird perched there, singing its song. I made out a sort of elongated tank on it, which I imagined was its fuel supply, and which I selected as my target.

As I pulled the trigger, there was a burst of flame from the machine, a cloud of black smoke, and a fearful explosion. I was overwhelmed by a deluge of wet sand. I can remember scrambling to my feet and scuttling for the water; I think I must have been thrown backwards. In front of me the sea was rushing

in to fill a hole in the sand, blackened, and full of twisted, smoking iron débris. A wheel floated on the water against the sun's disk, supported by the air in its tire. The truck was so close behind me that I could feel it coming at me, quite unaffected by the explosion.

I dodged quickly to one side, just in time to let it roar past me, with a grinding of gears and a squeal of brakes. But the brakes were too late. It cut two deep ruts in the slippery sand with its locked wheels, but its speed carried it on down the wet slope, and with a splash it plunged into the water, till its hood was more than half submerged. A couple of coughs came from it, and all that was left of its roar was a sizzle, just faintly heard above the wash of the waves; and this gradually died away. I left it standing there, mournfully wet and silent.

I looked warily all around. The little machine on the sand was still now. Nothing else was in sight anywhere. Perhaps the havoc I had played with the machines had scared the people away. Anyway, now I could stick to the water until I was right among the rocks. I debated a few moments, anxious for a closer look at the wrecked machine, but finally decided that my curiosity had already gotten me into too much trouble. I resolutely turned my back on my temptation; for Mildred was waiting for me on the cliff.

And then I saw her, skipping from rock to rock, coming toward me. Behind her, more slowly, came Kaspar.

Joy and anticipation overwhelmed me for a mo-

I dodged quickly to one side, just in time to let it roar past me.

ment; my heart pounded and I could hardly get my breath. During the past three days, so full of excitement and danger, she had been in my mind all of the time. Every moment I had hungered for her. The thought of her had kept me going when otherwise I might have given up to some of those terrible things. And here she came, fresh, airy, beautiful!

In a moment I had recovered, and ran toward her. Her face now had in it none of the sly fun with which it usually beamed. There was a beautiful expression on it that I had never seen before, and she hurried toward me with arms outstretched. Without a word, I gathered her into my arms.

She nestled there with an occasional little snuggle; and the brown head was buried in my shoulder. She clung there and I held her tight, and the red sun blazed and the green waves rolled in and broke into froth, and the sea-birds circled, and she never moved. It seemed hours that she clung to me.

At length it occurred to me that I must be a terrible looking spectacle, grimy and bedraggled, with a three days' growth of beard, to be holding such a dainty armful. I held her off at arms' length for a good look.

"Why!" I exclaimed clumsily, "you've been crying!" And I had to gather her in again and hold her all the tighter for the red eyes and the tears.

"Very logical, baby, very logical," said a kindly voice beside me; and I hastened to loosen one hand to grasp Kaspar's. "Davy, I'm glad to see you back safe. There was some anxiety. We couldn't be sure——"

"Neither was I, at times," I replied grimly. "That's a neat little inferno over there. I can't make head nor tail of it!"

"Sit down," suggested Kaspar. "We've brought food. Eat a little and tell us your adventures."

"Have you seen Cassidy?" I asked, eagerly.

"Cassidy is at home in bed; pretty badly shaken, but safe and sound. The first thing he asked was if we had seen you; he was sure that you were lost. He floated down the river on a cask, and got in this morning."

Thus reassured, I sat down and ate; and Mildred sat beside me and held on to one arm. I outlined my adventures from the time I slipped out of the house toward Sappho's garage. I talked rapidly, for the sun was touching the water, and I hoped for a look at the machines yet before dark. My listeners sat and watched me intently, hanging on every word. Every now and then they looked at each other, as though they understood something that I did not. When I spoke of my climb through the darkness filled with machinery, Mildred's little brown hands were tightened on mine; and when I described the room with the concrete floor and the cases of instruments, she hid her face in her hands, while Kaspar scarcely breathed.

"And now," I concluded, "what does it all mean? For instance, why aren't these people nosing around here now, among these rocks, looking for us? Why did they give me up?"

"There aren't any people!" Kaspar replied.

"You mean that they sit back in their city and send out the automatic machines to do the dirty work?"

"No!" insisted Kaspar, "there is no one to sit back. The only people on the island are in the City of Beauty."

I sat for an instant struck dumb. I could feel my lower jaw drop limp. Was he making sport of me?

"Then who—where——?"

I didn't even know what to ask or how to proceed with my questions.

"From the way you have told your story to me just now," Kaspar began, "it is evident that you haven't the least comprehension of what is really going on here on the island. You imagine an infinitely more advanced and complicated state of scientific and mechanical affairs than really exists. Your world is far ahead of us along general lines. We have no heavier-than-air flying, no submarines, no television—things that have become so common in your life. But, in our one line, we have progressed so far ahead of you that you will gasp when it dawns upon you. And you will shiver in horror when you realize what it has brought upon us."

"Must be some kind of a nightmare," I agreed. "Tell me the worst. Who runs the city?—and all that machinery!"

"Nobody! It runs itself!"

"You mean it's all automatic?" I was dizzy again with astonishment.

"That does not really express the state of affairs at all," Kaspar said. "I must explain from the beginning. That terrible city there is an example of what happens when the ability of a long line of inventive and scientific ancestors is concentrated in one individual, who is myself.

"It all started in a very modest way of mine, to develop a car that could automatically refill itself with gasoline, water, oil, and air, when its supply of these things fell below a certain minimum——"

"To eat when it got hungry, so to speak?" I laughed. The thing was getting hold of my nerves again.

"Good comparison. Everything was favorable to me. I owned half a county in east Texas where oil was found, and became one of the richest men in the world. I wanted to experiment with automatic cars without being bothered, and I bought this island; and here I brought the best engineers and scientific men in America. I paid them royally——"

"While you talk, may we look at the wreck of that little demon?" I asked. "Is it safe to go out there?"

"Yes. I don't think there are any more of them around. We can keep a sharp lookout. Our next step was automatic steering, so that the machine could avoid obstacles in the road without attention from a driver at a steering-wheel."

"I don't understand how these machines can drive automatically," I interrupted, very much puzzled, "unless they can see?"

"They *can* see!" He pointed to an excrescence on each headlight of the machine, like a bud on a potato.

"That's the selenium eye," Kaspar explained. "The electrical resistance of the metal selenium varies with the intensity of the light that strikes it; and that is a little camera chamber with a lens and a selenium network. By its means, the machine can *see*.

"The earlier machines had steering-wheels; their vision was a simple reflex for avoiding obstacles, while the driver had to choose the route himself. But, in a number of years we developed the logging attachment to the speedometer, by means of which it is possible to lay out the route on a set of dials. The machine could then find its way without human aid."

I started down at the complex, iron thing, trying to imagine that it once had been alive and now was dead.

"Then," Kaspar continued, "just as I had first equipped the machines with the mechanical equivalent of hunger, that is, a sensitiveness to a diminished reserve of fuel, lubricant, etc., so now we soon equipped them with the mechanical equivalent of pain, or in other words, a sensitiveness to damage or disorder. When a machine got out of order, or a certain amount of wear and tear had taken place, it automatically proceeded to a repair station. At first, repair stations were in charge of skilled men; but the automatic tradition had so thoroughly permeated all my people that very shortly repairs were all automatic. The principle

was applied to all machinery, stationary as well as mobile. From that, it wasn't a far step to the automatic building of new machines—mechanical reproduction.

"Our machines are endowed with senses: sight, hearing, touch. Hearing was a simple matter of microphones. Smell was a simple chemical problem, but not of much practical value. We even gave them senses which human beings do not have, the ability to perceive various vibrations and forms of energy in the ether of space. They could do everything but reason.

"I wish we had stopped there. Then we would be as happy today as we were in those golden days when we had no cares nor troubles, and were free to pursue research in scientific and mechanical fields. But, an insatiable thirst for progress drove us inexorably onward."

KASPAR bent over the machine and showed me an oblong metal base in the midst of the apparatus. It had about it a vague suggestion of resemblance to the electrical units which I saw stacked up by the thousands in the little building where the lenses had stared at me. Bundles of wires led to this case from all parts of the mechanism. One of my bullets had torn a hole in the cover, exposing thousands of little twisted bars of rusty metal.

"There is the thing," Kaspar said sadly, pointing to this case, "that betrayed our Garden of Eden, the highest triumph of human ingenuity: the electrical brain!"

"Brain!" I gasped like a fish. "You mean it thinks?"

"Yes! Literally! Actually!"

"Aren't you just trying to fill me up now——?" I had reached what I thought were the limits of credulity.

"It is really very simple," Kaspar went on, with a patient smile. "You know of many machines in your world that think: a calculating machine or a bookkeeping machine; an automatic telephone exchange; an automatic lathe, and many others. They *think*, but only on the basis of the present moment. Add to their method *experience*, that is, retained past perceptions, and you have what we understand ordinarily as thinking.

"Mechanical memory, an *association* of previously collected perceptions, was what we needed; and when we found them, our machines were able to reason better than we ourselves."

"But how can a machine remember?" I asked the question open-mouthed.

"We discovered a method of storing the electrical visual impulses from the selenium eye, the electrical auditory impulses from the microphone ear, etc., by means of the now familiar retarded oxidation reactions in various metals."

"You mean—what the machine sees or hears is preserved——?"

"That is memory, isn't it?" Kaspar said, with infinite patience for my stupid incredulity. "And these stored impressions can be reawakened when desired, repeatedly. The electrical brain remembers better than the human brain. Human ideas come haphazard, by accident; psychologists call it *association*. In the mechanical brain, all remembered material is systematically indexed——"

"Thinking by electricity! And better than the human product!" I was stunned by the thought. I pondered a while in silence, looking down at the prostrate mechanical thing. I could almost fancy that I had killed some living creature. The thing was so little that I felt a sort of pity for it; it seemed like some child's broken toy.

"And each machine is an independent, intelligent individual!" This was an exclamation rather than a question, for the answer was obvious.

"Yes." Kaspar's voice was melancholy. "It lives its own life, you may say."

"And the people in the City of Beauty have even their mental work done for them. Now I understand how they have been able to develop their creative art to such an extent."

"That is the other side of it," Kaspar said with a little more interest in his manner. "You have seen wonderful things in the City of Beauty, painting, sculpture, architecture, drama, music. But I doubt if you comprehend how far they are ahead of similar things in the United States or the rest of the world. Your mind and mine are not sufficiently developed to grasp the difference. To Mildred here, when you take her back to the world you came from, things will seem as crude as you might consider an Indian village or an African kraal."

"What I am wondering, though," I remarked, "is why your people did not begin to dissipate and degenerate, with all this comfort and luxury. That is what has always happened in past history, is it not?"

"My people were a carefully picked group, from the most intellectually active strata of society. They were equipped by nature to use their brains. Creative art has kept three generations of them happy and busy—so much so that they could not see the other terrible problem that had arisen. I cannot make them see it today.

"Only a few of us old men have seen the danger. We fear these cold brains of steel and electricity without *feelings*, without sympathy. They have reached a point in their logic where they can perceive that the thousands of us in the City of Beauty are of no real good to them; that in fact we consume too much of their time and energy. It must be plain to them that we are frail and helpless before their mighty strength. It looks, from various indications, that they have begun to decide to throw off their bonds of slavery to us.

"I foresaw this before it happened; in order to anticipate it, I devised many years ago what we now call 'Supervision.' I made all of the machines dependent upon some human action before they could operate, like the punching of a time-clock. It is years since any machine has been made by human hands; yet the machines have continued to build that characteristic into themselves. Now, 'Supervision' has degenerated into an empty formality—pulling dummy levers and watching dummy meters. It seems, however, that it is still in some way necessary to the machines, for they compel the people to go through with it.

"And the people submit blindly to it. They do not understand machinery well enough even to know whether it is operating properly or not, but they allow themselves to be dragged over there for 'Supervision!' Faugh! It is disgusting to me. Superfluous to the machines and degrading to the people! A symbol of slavery to a master without a living soul. Or it often seems to me like some primitive ceremony of worship. The machines have built a temple with a golden dome to their creators, where they worship the latter as a savage worships his gods.

"The people play along like irresponsible babes, numbed by their beauty and comfort, disregarding the terrible fate that threatens them. I am sick with disappointment in them, sick with the horror of the things that my iron progeny are doing. We human beings are a mere feeble incident, that is going to be brushed aside during the development of this monstrous mechanical clot.

"For, these machines are developing in a new direction, that no one could have foreseen. Who would ever

have thought of such a thing! It appals me to think of it.

"We are beginning to realize that we have not only the individual intelligences of the various machines to deal with—of course there are machines of various grades of intelligence, ranging from no intelligence at all, to brains so vast and powerful that your mind can hardly grasp the conception. You must have noticed differences. The big machines that work in the fields are stupid; the little leading-machines possess a high grade of intelligence. They were designed to guide and control larger and less intelligent machines, and now are apparently in some sort of ascendency over the rest of the machinery. There is a complex 'social organization' in the City of Smoke that I am not quite clear about; it must be something like the caste system in India. There is a chief ruler, a sort of 'king' of the machines—the large leading-machine with the long mechanical fingers——"

"THE Squid!" I exclaimed. "So that's who the boss is! That explains a lot to me."

"Its combination of high intelligence, perfect mobility, and great 'manual' ability, fit it peculiarly for leadership and control among the machines. And I think that the 'Squid' as you call it, has an eye on you pretty closely——

"However, what I started to make clear to you a moment ago is that the entire city is in reality one vast and unified organism. It is controlled by a single brain, whose capabilities are as far ahead of those of the little individual brains as its size exceeds theirs.

"That brain is the mass of apparatus you found in the small, ornate building where the lenses stared at you. I was in that room several years ago, and at that time suspected that it was the brain of the city. It is all a vast electrical nervous system, whose peripheral fibers run all over the city; whose sensory end-organs are lenses and microphones everywhere; whose motor end-organs are all the countless machines controlled by the different wires, while this central mass of reflex and association apparatus comprises the brain and spinal cord. I could trace out some of the steps of this system in its earlier stages.

"The whole city is one living monster, with its individual parts running about just as leucocytes run about freely in our own bodies, going where they are needed to perform their functions. That is what our community of frail, pampered human beings, have to contend against!"

I couldn't say a word. What a terrible thought! A huge city, alive! A horrible, spreading monster, like a gigantic amoeba! And I had been right there, inside its brain! I thought of the ticking and rustling that I had heard among its myriads of stacked units. It had heard my demands to see the "supervision," and had seen fit to grant it.

And all this business going on without people, without real *life!* Just gasoline and coal. The thought stunned me. Yet, what is *life?* Could I not just as well say that all of our striving and love is just beef and wheat? Then, a sudden thought struck me, for was I not the leader of the revolution?

"Why not throttle this whole business right at the source!" I exclaimed to Kaspar. "Get control of the supplies of coal and oil, and we've got them!"

Kaspar stood and looked at me contemplatively for a moment.

"You must indeed have had a nerve-racking time in that place to be so upset," he remarked with concern in his voice. "Usually you are very level-headed. However, I think a good night's rest will help you. Can't you see?" he went on; "there is no Wall Street nor Stock Exchange on this island. Coal is mined in a score of places, scattered about the north and east end of the island, ten to forty miles away from here. Deep down underground, automatic machines are knocking it loose and hauling it up. Oil, too, comes from wells here and there; it is refined in huge automatic plants, and runs to the city in pipes to more automatic plants. All these are connected by wires to the central brain, which controls them.

"There isn't a laborer on the island; not a man who could lift a pick. The people do not even know where the mines and wells are; and if they did know, they couldn't get there; and if they could get there, they could not handle the machinery; they wouldn't even know how to stop it. Do you see the problem now?

"Frankenstein's troubles with his poor, feeble imitation of a monster were a joke beside the horrors of my position. For you haven't heard the worst yet."

"How could there be anything worse?"

Kaspar plunged into it abruptly.

"During recent years the machines have become interested in life itself. A few of us old men who have kept up with their activities first noticed them taking animals into their laboratories. They have probably realized that we possess something that they lack, and they are studying it. I have strong reasons to believe that they have begun the study of human life.

"They know nothing of pain or feeling—imagine the horrors they must be perpetrating!"

He paused for a moment and then continued:

"This thing must have been going on for a long time before I realized it. As I look back, I can think of over a hundred of our people who have mysteriously disappeared."

"You don't mean that they—" I began horrified.

"Some of the things you saw in the City of Smoke make me think so more strongly than ever. That concrete room must be their laboratory for the study of human beings. The instruments whose purpose was unknown to you, the clothes hanging in the cases, the organic odor, the bringing in of you and Cassidy—what else can it all mean?"

I shuddered.

"The old man in the villa and the man with the deranged mind?" I asked. "And Ames? Do you think —and Mildred that night on the dock——?"

Mildred huddled down into a very silent little figure, looking at me out of wide-open eyes.

"You can imagine that your own position is highly perilous, to put it mildly," Kaspar warned. "They seem to be selecting as victims the best people we have. Probably they have two reasons. They want the best examples for study. And they want to eliminate all the original, strong family stocks. Anyone who has initiative, curiosity, and especially an interest in machinery or qualities for leadership of people, is a special object for their attention. Sooner or later he disappears."

"So that is why you warned me on the ship, before I ever saw the island? You thought I was different from the men on your island? I accept that as a high compliment and thank you for it."

"Imagine how we've guarded Mildred!" Kaspar said with a sigh. "Her mother and father perished that way. They were both mechanical geniuses, and both popular; they would have made inspiring leaders had the occasion arisen. Their existence was a danger to the rule of the machines.

"Those of our people, who show the least interest in machinery and the least intelligence about it, are safest. An unconscious adaptation has taken place. Without knowing why, the people consider machinery as something vulgar and horrible; consequently they

keep their minds away from things mechanical; and that is what the machines want. The people keep their minds off the fates of those who have mysteriously disappeared, and try to forget the fear for their own sakes. They pursue their arts and sports intensely, in order to forget the horrors hidden beneath the surface. They are happy, after the fashion of May-flies.

"The machines rear them, just as you have raised pet rabbits. And they maintain the human stock of the quality they desire, by the well-known method of eliminating undesirable individuals.

"I am trying to make the remnant of my life of final service to this wretched people, whom I myself have made wretched. I have been endeavoring to awaken their spirit and arouse them to resistance. I want them, or as many of them as have the stamina to do so—the rest might as well be dead—to throw off the disgraceful yoke of 'Supervision,' and with it, the domination of the mechanical city.

"At first I had hoped that we might regain control of the machinery; but I am convinced that is a forlorn hope. There is nothing left for my people except to go back to a primitive, agricultural existence; to begin at the bottom of the ladder of civilization and climb slowly again.

"That means hardship; but anything else means slavery, degeneration and death. I found a few kindred spirits who felt and worked with me. Teaching these things to Mildred has been an inspiration to me. My worst problem was that I did not know how to go about getting the people roused to action or to prepare them to act. All my life I have been a scientific man, and I know nothing of methods that approach so near the military as this must.

"You carried my movement further in twenty-four hours than I had been able to do in several years. When you see the progress that has been made during the three days of your absence, you will be astonished. We now have several thousands drilling, drilling openly, everywhere. The loss of Cassidy inflamed them; the spirit of Perry Becker inspired them. Then Cassidy's return cheered them beyond measure. They have definite plans against the City of Smoke. There is going to be trouble.

"But you, Davy, must keep out of it. That is my wish, perhaps my last. There is going to be much waste of human life, and these people are not your people; and you have a duty to Mildred. You will soon be all she has. Take her away from here, back to your world. I have a motor-yacht all ready for you, for I have been planning her escape for years."

CHAPTER XIII

Machines *versus* Men

KASPAR stopped talking, and the three of us sat for some moments in silence, looking out over the sea. The upper rim of the blood-red sun was just disappearing into the green ocean, and a long, undulating scarlet streak extended from it almost to our feet. The sky was piled with great mountains and castles and ships of purple and orange, and a blend of these colors was reflected in the dancing water. There was a mere gentle breath of cool breeze. There was a peace in the air and a beauty on the face of the waters and a mellowness on the beach and cliffs that turned one's thoughts to things above. It was difficult to believe that such terrible things could be taking place in a world that looked so lovely. But the cruel things of man's making would not permit me to forget their presence.

"This morning a great number of machines went through the City of Beauty on a rampage," Kaspar continued. "They seemed irritated at something, perhaps at the escape of you and Cassidy. They carried off a number of people."

Kaspar paused for a moment. His voice almost broke. I judged that someone else very dear to him had been among the number.

"On the other hand," he began again, "we have five colonels, each with a full regiment, drilling busily. You will be surprised to see what good soldiers they are. They expect to move on the City of Smoke soon. They have some excellent plans for attack, but want your advice. They all admit that it is impossible to gain control of things there; their only hope is in wrecking the system. Again, Davy, I feel able to hold up my head. My people are showing courage; even though less than a tenth of them have risen to redeem the rest.

"There is little time to lose before violence and danger begin. We must hurry back now and solemnize your marriage in our way; and when you get back to Texas you can have it repeated according to your laws there. You must leave the island tonight."

I sat for a considerable time debating what I ought to do. What he was asking of me looked like running away. There was promise of a most glorious scrap, and a most unusual one. The people needed a leader. I had the training and experience which fitted me for just this thing ahead, and they knew little or nothing. They needed me and I ached for the opportunity.

And yet, another part of me said, what is their fight to me? What do I care what becomes of them? Their trouble is their own fault, because they are too soft and lazy. If they had ever amounted to anything, they would never have permitted themselves to get into such a pickle. Here I have Mildred to take care of, and it is my business to get her out of here. My main job is to get back to Texas among my own people, and get busy practicing medicine.

Mildred was regarding me intently, hardly breathing. She did not speak either. Finally Kaspar spoke:

"The two great things for which I have lived are about to be realized. Again I know what it is to feel happiness, after years of fear and misery.

"One overpowering desire has been to free the people from the yoke of 'Supervision,' and the domination of the machines. I wanted to see them rise, and they are rising. It will mean hardship and suffering for them; it may even mean destruction. But that would be better than this disgraceful slavery.

"The other great thought of my life is my son's child, Mildred. I could not bear to raise her to this May-fly life. She knows of your big world, and I have prepared her to take her place in it. For two years I have planned that she should. That is why we have the Gulls' Nest. That is why we have the *Gull* herself, a pretty yacht down yonder in a salt bayou in the dense forest. She is the only thing on the island that is not automatic, and I made her with my own hands. Food, water, fuel, firearms, and navigating instruments have long been prepared for use at an instant's notice for a long trip, waiting for the time when my baby should be strong enough and wise enough to start away. I have put on board enough gold and platinum to secure her living in that world until she finds her proper place in it.

"And now comes a real man, a hard worker, with a heart as brave as they used to have in the good old times, who wants my little girl to take care of. Can you imagine why my heart is full of gladness? I do not care to live any longer; there is no need of it."

By this time Mildred was weeping profusely. I was embarrassed by the old man's cordial words and the

prospect of escaping with Mildred, and I could not find my tongue. Kaspar looked so happy that he seemed suddenly to have turned into someone else. The sad, kindly old man had turned into a beaming, radiant one.

"But grandma?" sobbed Mildred. "What will become of her?"

Kaspar's face set hard again, and the transformation that swept him was terrible.

"She is among the missing!" he said grimly.

He turned to me:

"Mildred has been here at the Gulls' Nest most of the time since you left; and has not kept informed on what was going on at home. Come!"

"Where?"

"Home, just long enough for Mildred to get some of her personal things which I have packed for her, and to have you married. In two or three hours you can be at sea."

Mildred and I rose and followed him in silence. Mildred dried her eyes and went along holding her aged grandfather's arm and trying to comfort him. In the weakening daylight we picked our way carefully among the rocks that were scattered between the cliffs and the water's edge. When we reached the little harbor, there was Sappho waiting for us at the side of the road.

I FELT a queer sort of embarrassment when I got within range of the machine's headlights: the sort of constraint we feel in the presence of a person about whom we have been talking behind his back. In the light of what I knew, the machine seemed like a living creature to me; it had a brain, could see and hear and remember, and act on its own judgment. But the car gave no sign of any kind. After Kaspar's story I expected it to have some sort of facial expression. The three of us got into the seat; Kaspar set the dials, and we started up the road to the City of Beauty.

It seemed to me like going home. After all, I had had some very pleasant, and some very wonderful experiences there. It seemed ages since I had seen it. During the trip through the forest and between the fields, I was eager to see its beautiful streets of luxuriant trees and colored houses. And I shuddered several times in recollection of the three hideous days I had just passed.

Kaspar must have felt as eager to get back as I did, or must have had some strong reason for haste. Never on this island had I traveled with the speed that we made in Sappho that night. There was no direct-reading speedometer, and I did not know how many miles per hour we made; but the way we roared through the forest and whisked between the fields made it seem only a few minutes from the harbor until the lights of the city were visible to us; and there was still a fair remnant of daylight left.

At the distance of a mile, I could see the old familiar gateway; but there seemed to be a strange sort of commotion about it. There were black masses of machinery about, and a great deal of clattering and tooting. Lights sprang up on the machines one by one, and I could see a great crowd of them gathered just outside the gateway. They were of all imaginable sizes and shapes, from the dog-like leading-machines that darted swiftly in and out among the others, to huge mechanical shovels and ditching machines that lumbered along on caterpillar treads; passenger cars without passengers; trucks, tractors, movable cranes, huge rollers, and complicated-looking trestle affairs, such as I had seen working in the fields. They swarmed and crowded outside the gate in a huge, squirming blot, and spread out into the fields and along the hedge that bounded the city. They were not doing anything, except milling around like bees before a hive.

Kaspar slowed down Sappho's speed, and we approached cautiously. The flood lights above the gateway went on, revealing the people in shrinking little groups, just inside the gates. From a distance the people appeared very feeble and insignificant in the presence of the machines. The air was full of fluty whistlings up and down the musical scale. This time it reminded me very powerfully of a bird's song.

"Where is the explosive man who wrecked three of our machines?" Kaspar repeated, as though translating.

I stared at him in open-mouthed astonishment.

"You mean—" I gasped—"that is a machine speaking?"

"Yes. The people are answering it, but I cannot hear them."

"The machines can understand human speech!" Would surprises in this island never cease? "Just ordinary speech—English?"

"Yes. We must change our plans. As I gather from the general trend of what the machines say, the people are promising that they will turn you over if they see you."

"Well, of all the skunks!" I exclaimed in surprise.

But the chief thing that occupied my mind was the speech of the machines. That crowded out even the craven attitude of the people toward me. All these days I had been listening to that piping, and it had never occurred to me that it might mean something. How they must have talked to me, and I had not the slightest dream of it! Now, as I listened, I could easily see how the sounds might mean words; it had a suggestion of Chinese about it, in which the pitch of the sound has its own meaning.

"The people are afraid," Kaspar said. "All of this is too much for them and they don't know how to take it. The organized men are camped far away on the hopo fields. This morning when I left, I feared that a panic was beginning in the city."

As he spoke, he was trying to stop the machine on which we rode.

"It is dangerous to go on," he whispered. "We've got to change our plans."

He slid the lever in its slot again and again. The machine jerked and swerved sidewise; it shivered and roared, but continued its progress toward the distant swarm of machines, as though determined to carry us in spite of ourselves toward that bloodthirsty pack. Mildred gasped.

"Sappho!" she exclaimed, and there was bitter disappointment in her tone.

"Wait!" I said harshly, through gritted teeth. "I suppose this beast overheard us planning to escape. I know some tricks myself."

Mildred's face shone white in the darkness. I pointed my big pistol into the midst of the rustling machinery and fired. Mildred screamed. I fired again. The machine slowed down to a stop, but not before a half dozen hoots had escaped it. We got off and I put bullets into several parts of it. The crashing of metal, the tinkling of loose parts on the pavement, the hissing of some compressed gas, all satisfied me that it would tell no more tales. Mildred clung to my arm, which soon found its way about her shoulders.

"Poor little Sappho!" she sighed, and wept silently a while. Sappho, after all, had long been a faithful servant to them; it had been closely woven into their lives. I could understand the display of sentiment, even though it was in connection with a machine.

Kaspar was bending over the machine, studying it with absorbed interest.

"A bullet struck its brain," he mused. "The brain is here, just behind the engine, under the instrument-board. To the sides of it are the steering center on

the left and direction-center on the right, and both are injured. Also, by the sounds, the speech-center must have been hit."

He was so interested in the machine that he poked about its vitals and talked about its various parts, for the moment oblivious of our plight.

I touched his shoulder.

"We've got to do something," I reminded him. "Look."

In the distance there were three pairs of lights, hurtling down the road towards us. They had separated themselves from the mass of others and were becoming too uncomfortably near. Kaspar looked about helplessly for a moment.

"We've got to get off this road," I directed, "into the fields."

So we scrambled across the ditch at the side of the road. I turned to help Mildred, but she did not need help; and the two of us assisted Kaspar over the dark and uncertain area. However, he was also quite vigorous for his age and insisted that he did not need help. Soon we found ourselves waist-deep in some sort of growing grain. I had chosen the left side of the road because it was to the south, and farthest away from the City of Smoke. We headed southwest by my compass, for the forest, and ultimately for the sea-coast. I estimated that there were some three or four miles of tall grain between us and the woods.

IN a few moments the machines had arrived at the place on the road that we had left. They stopped at the wreck of Sappho and stood about a while and roared and tooted. Then two of them went straight onward along the road toward the harbor, and one remained on the spot. Others began to arrive at the spot, which stimulated us to plunge on still more rapidly through the grain in the darkness.

Kaspar was helping me get the direction correct so that we would make a straight line for the bayou where the *Gull* was moored.

"This will keep us nearly parallel with the road for a while; but after it enters the woods, the road turns away to the north a little," Kaspar explained.

"Are there any things among those machines that could catch us in this field?" I asked, giving voice to my chief concern.

"No," Kaspar answered. "The only machines able to cross that ditch and get through this grain are too slow to catch us. Besides, they don't know where we are. It would take a wide search to find us in this blackness."

We forged steadily ahead through the grain and the blackness, and it was discouraging work. It was exceedingly fatiguing, leaving us no breath for conversation. And there seemed no end, no purpose to it. We were just a tiny island in the sea of blackness, and all our hard work seemed to be getting us nowhere. For all we could tell, we were forever in the same spot. When we had once left behind and out of sight the commotion around the wreck of Sappho, it seemed that uncounted ages elapsed before I thought I could make out the blackness of the forest against the stars. Then a shaft of light swept across the vast fields, swinging in a wide arc, followed by another and another, each illuminating a blazing, racing spot.

"Duck down low!" I ordered. "They are hunting us with search-lights!"

We all crouched down so that we were hidden in the grain, grateful for the opportunity to rest a little.

"The devils!" I exclaimed.

"No," replied Kaspar. "Only thorough and systematic, dispassionate, devoid of any feeling in the matter."

"Anyway, it's hands and knees for us the rest of the way to the woods," I grumbled.

With lights sweeping about overhead, and machines roaring on the road in the distance, seeming to be first on one side and then on the other, we crawled along laboriously through the grain. Mildred and the old man never complained, though it must have been terribly hard for them. I am accustomed to all sorts of hardships, and it was no joke for me. We crawled for ages; my hands and knees were sore; and finally we just went blindly and mechanically ahead, having given up all hope of ever finding any end. So, at some time, we came to a bare, cleared area, and a few rods ahead were black, towering trees. Far behind us, the search-lights blazed back and forth.

We straightened up and ran across the clear piece between us and the woods, confident now that we were safe. The tangle of shrubs, vines, and leaves was still more painful to traverse. I saw that my companions were exhausted and that we might as well give up any hope of going on for two hours more through the forest. And when we got through the thicket into the clear portion, other obstacles appeared. The first was darkness. It was black as pitch. There was no light whatsoever, and we bumped into trees without the least idea that they were there. Progress was impossible under such conditions. The second was insects. We were overwhelmed by clouds of them. Before a moment had passed, we were bitten and stung all over. They came at us with a hoarse buzz, which increased and swelled when I lit my flashlight. I had to put it out, because when I tried to use it for finding the way, it gathered such dense swirls of bugs that going was out of question.

"Oh, what shall we do?" Mildred cried with despair in her voice. "We cannot go back out there."

"Ho ho! Cheer up!" I sang out. "This isn't so bad. I prefer it to lots of fixes I've been in. The first thing is a fire."

The flashlight helped me find some sticks, and before long I had a good blaze started. Thousands of insects sacrificed themselves by darting straight into the fire in swarming masses to sizzle and char, before I had covered it with enough green leaves to start it smoking profusely. The air was as quiet as if we had been in a room; there was not a breath of air, and it was not long before my smudge had cleared the air of insects. We sat in the smoke and sputtered, but the smoke and the rest were preferable to what had gone before.

"Now for some shelter," I announced, "for here we stay till morning."

Both of them regarded me with a good deal of surprise, but said nothing. Just as I had trusted them implicitly on their own ground, so now they looked to me for a way out of difficulties. And I was happy, for this indeed was my own element.

There was a wealth of material around. I built up another fire into a bright blaze, and by its light, and with the aid of my knife and ax, I cut sticks to lean against trees and built the skeletons of roofs for a couple of lean-tos. Mildred had soon rested enough so that she was eager to help; and I let her gather leaves and showed her how to thatch the roofs. In an hour they were finished, even to comfortable beds of leaves. I piled up the fire so that we should be assured of plenty of smoke, and we all lay down for the night, Mildred in one of the lean-tos and Kaspar and I in the other. Everything was quiet; even the drone of the insects ceased when we had quieted down; no machines were audible, though the road was near. I fell asleep quickly.

I was about several times in the night to replenish the fire, but awoke in the morning thoroughly refreshed. Kaspar was sitting up and looking at me with a smile.

"This sort of thing makes me feel pretty stiff and miserable," he said.

"Yes," I agreed; "one must become accustomed to it, before it can be enjoyed. However, a little warming by the fire and moving about will make you feel better."

"Good morning!" came across from Mildred's shack. "Let's do it then, for I'm terribly stiff and sore."

"And a little breakfast will work wonders," I added.

"Breakfast!" She jumped up and ran out with an eager smile. "How in the world will you ever get breakfast? I know you will, but I can't imagine how."

"How would you like this?" I asked, handing out a little of my chocolate and hard biscuit. She nibbled at it and made a wry face.

"Ugh!" she shuddered. "If this is all we can get, I'll wait a day or two for my breakfast."

"Well, let us see what we can scare up," I suggested laughing. "First of all we need some water. There must be plenty of streams through here, judging by how thick this stuff grows."

We scattered to find one, I choosing the direction toward the road. I was the first to find clear, flowing water, and my shout brought up the rest. We all washed our faces together and had a merry time doing it. The road was visible through the trees, but was silent and deserted.

A LOUD rattling, high above our heads, made me start suddenly. I thought some infernal apparatus had got after us through the air; but Kaspar laughed and pointed to a big green bird with a bright scarlet head, up in a tall tree.

"He's good to eat," Kaspar suggested.

Before he finished speaking I had my gun out and shot. The bird fell at our feet, its head cut cleanly off. I confess that I did it for a little grandstand play; for the one thing I was proud of was my quick draw and accurate marksmanship, rather a rare thing in our civilized world.

Mildred gave one glance at the bird, and stared at me with eyes opened wide. Kaspar smiled and patted my back.

"Very remarkable, Davy," he said, with genuine admiration in his voice; "how did you learn to shoot like that?"

"I don't know," I answered. "I have been able to do that ever since I can remember, and so can many of my boyhood friends. Marksmanship was a tradition in Wallis where I grew up. When I was fourteen I could bring up my .22 rifle and pop off the head of a wild turkey as it ran through the brush."

"But I don't see how you can aim that quickly," Mildred asked very much puzzled and very much in earnest. I was rather astonished to find her knowing even that much about firearms, until Kaspar explained that there were rifles in the "*Gull*" brought from Galveston, and that he had been teaching her to shoot.

"I don't aim," I explained. "I can't tell you much about it, because I don't know. When I see a thing, I just *shoot* it—just as you would reach out and touch it with your finger. It's very natural to me. Whereas, most people shoot *at* a mark, and have to aim carefully."

"Do it again," begged Mildred.

"Well, I think we could eat another bird between us," I laughed. I looked over my supply of ammunition. I had taken twenty spare clips of cartridges from my suitcase and put them in my haversack, and these were still intact. I had thus far used nine shots.

"Show me another one that's good to eat," I suggested.

Kaspar pointed silently, high up into a tree in the direction of the road, and I followed his movement with a quick shot.

The result surprised, rather than disappointed me. The bird darted upwards, crying hoarsely, and flew around unsteadily, finally getting out over the road and making for the bright light of the open country. I stood a while and watched it in astonishment; this was an unusual thing to have happen to me.

"I think I know what happened," I finally said. "He had a *brown* head and a bright orange bill, did he not?"

Kaspar nodded.

"He fooled me. I thought the orange thing was his head; and I merely shot his bill off."

"Poor thing!" Mildred exclaimed, with a bewitching pucker of her mouth.

"I'll run out and finish him. We need him for breakfast."

I squirmed through the thicket and ran out on the road. The bright bird was far away, and approaching the outlet of the leafy tunnel. I ran down the road in pursuit, and before long was in the open, with the forest behind me. But the bird was still far ahead, moving in wild gyrations, but in a general way, straight ahead. I noted that he was getting weaker and flying lower; so I dropped into a leisurely pace, counting on picking him up when he fell.

The road was silent and empty. I was in good spirits. I had had an excellent night's rest, and the morning was cool and pleasant. I understood that it was only a short distance to the yacht which they called the "*Gull*," and that soon I would be on my way home from this place of nightmares, and Mildred, brown-eyed, trusting Mildred would be with me, all my own. The bird finally fell in the road, a hundred yards ahead of me.

Just then, several dots appeared in the distance up the road, from the direction of the City of Beauty. I broke into a run again, hoping to pick up the bird and get away. In a moment I gave that up; the machines were coming too swiftly. I turned around and hurried toward the forest, and was surprised at how far away I had gotten from the shelter of the trees without realizing it.

I looked back. The machines were coming on at a terrific rate. In the front was a rather large leading-machine; not as large as the Squid, but bigger than any others I had seen. Behind it were two long, swift cars, and a lot of small things behind those, mere dots in the distance. I saw in a moment that I could never reach the forest ahead of them.

Why didn't I jump the ditch and disappear in the cane, or whatever the stuff was growing in the field? What my chances would have been by daylight if I had done that, I do not know; but it never occurred to me at the time. I was aching for something else—I suppose I had a foolhardy spite to vent on the machines, which was fanned by the feel of the pistol in my hand. And, with my new information about the machines, I knew exactly where and how I stood against them. Also, it would be a pleasure to show a little prowess before Mildred and Kaspar.

So I waited until the big leading-machine got within accurate range, located the brain-case and put a bullet into it. The machine executed a crashing somersault, spilled bolts and glass and oil all over the road, and left a sizzling, pulsating pile of wreckage in the middle of the pavement.

I gave a shout of exultation, and looked back. Mildred and Kaspar were standing against the green of the shrubbery, motionless. I waved my pistol to them and then turned back to business. The two cars came tearing on.

Kaspar's lecture the preceding evening over the wreck of Sappho, dwelt vividly in my mind. I remembered clearly all of the things he had said about the location of the vital parts of the machine. So I

fired into the steering-center of one of the approaching machines, and got a lively demonstration of a jack-knife skid. The front wheels wobbled, the car swerved and turned over on its side, and slid for several feet, cutting gashes in the pavement. It crashed into the first wreck.

I shouted again. I was enjoying myself hugely. I hit the same spot in the third machine, but with a different result. The front wheels turned sharply across it, and as the car's momentum carried onward, it rolled over and over, landing with a crash against the wrecks of the two ahead of it, its machinery continuing to roar deafeningly. This was indeed fun!

I DROPPED my arm for a moment and looked up the road. Half a dozen of the tiny leading-machines were swarming toward me. Behind them were several cars. A long line of things dotted the road as far back as I could see. I had only a few seconds' rest, for the little machines were racing toward me swiftly.

The first one turned to dodge past the pile of wreck-

I watched the big clumsy thing in intense fascination.

age, exposing a broadside to me. I caught it in the middle just as it swerved and knocked it over. It hung rattling, half way over the ditch.

I had to shoot rapidly, at the same time putting my left hand into my haversack for a fresh clip of cartridges. The next machine seemed to go all to pieces as I hit it. I must have struck some key spot in its framework. Several loose chunks of it slid along the road and piled themselves up on the rest of the junk; a single wheel came rolling on toward me. It rolled on past, and tumbled into the ditch behind me.

I dropped six of the little leading-machines, and blocked the road effectively with their wrecks, making a sort of barrier for myself. The place was a pandemonium, with the roaring of machinery, the banging of my gun, the sizzling of gas, and a torrent of hooting. Again I waved my left hand backward toward Mildred and Kaspar, who stood motionless in the shrubbery. Several more cars were coming, and I could only glance backward for an instant. I seemed to have started something. It would be necessary for me to block up the road pretty thoroughly before it would be safe for me to start back toward the woods.

A huge, hurtling truck failed to show any bad results from a couple of shots, much to my momentary consternation. Trucks must be built differently. Perhaps they were not so highly organized, and had no strictly vital spots—just as it is much harder to kill a turtle or an alligator than the higher animals like deer or tigers.

Now what was I to do? Was it safe for me to run? I looked about me quickly, and decided that chances were against me in that respect.

Aha! I had it. The eyes! That was the vital spot.

Two shots knocked out the dark lenses over the headlights, and the machine stopped, so suddenly that the pavement smoked under its tires. Another heavy truck plunging along behind had no time to stop or dodge; it crashed from behind into the first one, and both staggered up against the ever-increasing pile of wreckage. Another truck, as the result of a lucky shot into the steering-gear, plunged head-on into the ditch, and stopped there, roaring and hooting, unable to move.

For nearly a half hour they kept coming. I stood there, surrounded by a litter of empty shells, and piled up a great heap of them, twisted, battered, sizzling wrecks. They strewed the road for a hundred yards and blocked it completely. Three were in the ditch, two exploded, and several were on fire.

Then they suddenly quit coming. The road was clear. I seemed to be in triumphant possession of the battlefield. I climbed up on top of the highest pile of wreckage, and stood looking around me. One of the little wrecks startled me by exploding and sending a rain of iron things dropping about me, but fortunately without injuring me. I retreated in haste to a safer spot.

Then in the distance came a most curious looking apparatus. It was a huge, clumsy leviathan, lumbering along quite slowly, but it looked so strange that I waited for it. In spite of my danger I had to see what the thing was. On each side were six or eight wheels, and in front, a curved shield like a snow-plow from which my bullets splashed in a harmless spray of lead. Behind it slowly came a tiny leading-machine.

I watched the big, clumsy thing in intense fascination. It came right over the wrecks of the other machines in a strange manner. As soon as a wheel touched an obstacle, it rose vertically to clear it; and when past, it descended again to the ground. Thus, with two or three wheels of each side on the ground and the others raised, it made a sort of bridge over the obstacle. It was a marvelous contraption for getting over uneven ground. It came along so slowly that I had not the least fear of not being able to get away from it when I decided to do so. Suddenly I heard a scream behind me.

There was Mildred in the distance, running toward me, arms upraised, face as pale as paper. When I turned around, she stopped and waved her arms, screaming something frantically. She was terribly agitated, and was distractedly motioning for me to come. Behind, in the brush, stood Kaspar, also motioning to me to come.

I looked all around me for the cause of their warnings. Everything was clear. I could see no reason for such panic. There were no machines except the big one coming too slowly to frighten me, and the little leading-machine that had to remain at the further end of the wreckage.

Well, I thought, I might as well start back now; there is nothing further for me around here. I had only three shots left anyway. I emptied them recklessly and harmlessly against the approaching monster, and turned toward Mildred. She had stopped when I first saw her, not far from the forest. In the distance I could see her hands clenched against her breast.

Suddenly I felt myself grow weak and limp. Out of the forest, behind Mildred, came a crescendo rat-tat-tat-tat. Around the bend of the road, back in its gloomy depths, came the Squid! Its horrible snaky arms unwound and waving in the air. Mildred heard it and screamed, and remained rooted to the spot.

My pistol was empty. I was too far away to help her. I groaned in despair. I clenched my fists and ran toward her in hopeless desperation.

"Into the bush!" I shrieked. "Hide!"

Too late.

The Squid was beside her like a shot. It wound half a dozen black arms around her, and lifted her on its step. Then it whirled about and dashed back into the depths of the forest, disappearing around a bend in the road. Its rat-tat-tat-tat grew fainter and fainter. It was out of sight and hearing before I reached the entrance of the forest, spent and out of breath, in a hundred kinds of agony.

Just then, behind me, the roar of a terrific explosion rocked the vicinity. A cloud of smoke shot high into the air; fragments of machinery flew about, and a smoking hole remained where I had stood on the road. The shielded monster was backing away from it. As I watched there was a second upheaval a few feet away from its shield; and as it continued to back away, I saw it drop the third bomb, which exploded almost at once, reducing that portion of the road to a gaping, smoking abyss, strewn with blackened, twisted pieces of things.

Now I saw why Mildred had run screaming toward me.

I sat on the ground, not knowing whether to weep or curse in my impotence. There, a few feet away, stood the poor old man, dumb in his agony, wringing his hands; and tears glistened in places on his white beard.

CHAPTER XIV

The Price of Victory

I WENT up to Kaspar and put my hand on his shoulder.

"My first impulse is to run madly up the road after her," I said, trying to be as matter-of-fact as possible. "Only long training enables me to follow calmly the dictates of common-sense, which says that would be useless and foolish."

The old man looked at me, dazed in his grief.

"But I'm going just the same," I continued. "Only I

want to think things over first. I want to talk to you and find out all I can about this mechanical devil. But, first of all, do you suppose there are any more of those fighting-machines over there in the direction of the harbor, where the Squid went?"

"Fighting machines!" Kaspar exclaimed. That seemed to rouse him somewhat. "What do you mean by fighting machines?"

"Why, that armored centipede thing, that blew up half the country around here. A fighting-machine is the last thing I would have expected to see on this island."

"Oh!" He seemed very much relieved. "I thought they were up to some new deviltry. No, that machine is not for fighting. It is a prospector, for moving about in the mountains and uncovering ore deposits. It has no delicate parts, and is controlled by the leading-machine behind it."

"Ingenious devils—to bring it up against me, when I got the best of their others!"

"A very good illustration of the quick and efficient working of the electrical mind."

"How do you suppose the Squid got over there in that direction? I did not think there were any roads besides this one." My mind was back to the problem of searching for Mildred.

"No doubt by boat from the City of Smoke," Kaspar replied. "There is no other road."

"Well, I'm going after it," I declared.

"No use, Davy. You won't find anything. By the time you reach there, everything will be gone."

"Then I'll follow them to the City of Smoke. I won't stop till I get her, or till I'm convinced that—that it can't be done."

"Useless! Useless!" groaned the distressed old man. "I thought you had learned that by this time. Stay with me now. You're all I've got."

"I can't sit around while Mildred is in danger. This is all my fault anyway. If she hadn't run out to warn me about that prospecting thing, she would be safe now. I'll at least go over there and bust up a lot of stuff before they get me. What I've smashed up here will be only a start——"

"What could you do? Your flesh is soft and tender against their iron beams and chains. They can grind you up whenever they want to."

"I'm not at the end of my rope yet. Suppose as one instance out of many possibilities, I got started playing with matches among their oil and gasoline supplies? Or suppose my little hatchet here got busy chopping their wires——?"

Kaspar raised his hands to remonstrate, and dropped them again, at a quick shout behind us. Two men were plunging through the waving field toward us, carrying packs on their backs, and motioning energetically with their arms. We stood and watched them approach, too surprised for the moment to say anything. It was not long before I could recognize the burly form of Cassidy, and the tall, slim one of Perry Becker.

Both came panting up with joyous faces and boisterous greetings, seizing us by the hands in their delight at having found us. Only after some moments did they notice our silence, our tragic faces, our dejected attitudes—and the absence of Mildred.

"Where—where is she?" stuttered Cassidy, turning pale.

Neither Kaspar nor I could speak.

"They got her?" Perry Becker asked.

We nodded. Something choked me, so that I could not speak. The lad clenched his fists.

"If they harm Miss Mildred, I'm going over to that city and smash it up!"

The rest of us shook our heads at his youthful enthusiasm. I wondered if my own words, just a moment before, had sounded as empty and futile as that.

Cassidy was standing and staring with amazement in his florid face at the gaping, smoking holes and the scattered, blackened wreckage. He looked from Kaspar to me and back again, and seemed unable to speak a word. Kaspar smiled sadly.

"Davy has just been having a little sport with a few of the machines," he said.

The look of worshipful admiration that Perry Becker bestowed upon me was worth a million dollars. However, Kaspar's little attempt at levity loosened the strain, and we all felt a little better.

"How did you happen to find us?" I finally asked. "Were you looking for us."

"That reminds me," Cassidy exclaimed, throwing off his pack, "that you must be hungry. We've brought you food."

Kaspar shook his head.

"Neither am I," I said. "But we must eat nevertheless. We need strength now. Something's got to be done."

"Something's going to be!" Perry Becker said grimly, and his chin stuck out like the Rock of Gibraltar.

We all sat down and ate. Perry Becker would eat a few mouthfuls and then get up and pace about. He would sit down again and eat a little and then walk back and forth again. As a preliminary, we all agreed that hurry would get us nowhere, for the machines excelled us in speed to a hopeless degree. Careful planning and ingenuity were our only hope. Then Cassidy explained.

"Our observers at the north gateway saw you coming last night, and saw you pursued. The busy searchlights were visible to us through the night, and they told us that you had not yet been caught. So, we were confident that you must have reached the forest. We knew you had no food, and we set out in hopes of finding you. Now Davy, Perry and I are anxious to hear your adventures."

So, we all exchanged stories as briefly as possible; for we did not want to waste time. Yet, it was necessary that we all be posted up to date about matters. I especially talked rapidly, for a mad, thrilling idea was taking shape in my brain.

"MR. KASPAR!" I said in a voice out of which I could not keep a ring of excitement. "I have an idea, and I want to know what you think of it. Please follow me carefully now."

My face must have betrayed how intensely keyed-up I had suddenly become, for they all looked at me breathlessly.

"You want to free the people from the oppression of the machines?" I said, in my excitement holding my head forward so that my face was close to Kaspar's.

"Yes," he answered, expectantly but dubiously.

"It is not possible to regain control of them and use them again; that is agreed?"

They all nodded in accord.

"And the only hope is to smash them?"

"Yes."

"You would like to see the whole City of Smoke wrecked and smashed?"

Perry Becker leaped to his feet and stared at me.

"Before I die, I'd like to see that," Kaspar sighed; "but there is no hope. Go on.

"I tell you I'm going to do it!" I almost shouted. Perry Becker stood rigid, wide-eyed, and breathless. The others said nothing.

I held up my hand ax.

"With this ax I'll do it!"

They relaxed and shook their heads, looking at me

sadly. They thought that my adventures of the preceding few days, and the loss of Mildred had driven me out of my mind. My wild laugh at their incredulity must have added to their fears.

"Listen!" I continued. "You saw me wreck machines weighing tons, with a little bullet no bigger than the end of my little finger. A little hole, a pellet of lead in exactly the right place, and the whole machine went out of business. Am I right so far?"

They all started suddenly erect. The idea seemed to be dawning upon them. I continued, gesturing with my fist.

"And you tell me that the whole city is one united organism, working as though it were just one machine? And that it is controlled from a single, central room, a sort of brain——"

Perry Becker jumped straight up into the air, with a wild, shrill whoop. Even in this highly civilized community, the distance back to the Indian was not very great.

"I'm going with you!" he shouted. "We'll smash that brain to junk. Davy, you're a genius. I'm yours forever."

"That is a good plan," Cassidy observed quietly. "You're clever, Davy. I think it will work. After years of waiting, thinking, all of a sudden here is a real hope for the human beings on this island. But it has one drawback, and a serious one."

We all gazed at him in intense and questioning silence, fearful lest this hope, so newly formed, be snatched away from us again. He continued slowly:

"It will be certain death to anyone who goes into that city and destroys that brain. He won't last long after he does it."

"That's no drawback!"

"Ho! ho! What do I care!"

Both of these exclamations were spoken at once, the first by me and the second by Perry Becker.

Kaspar sat very still, and looked gravely and intently from one to the other of us. We paled beneath his gaze, puzzled and worried. Finally he spoke, slowly and solemnly.

"I am old enough to feel entitled to ask for some indulgence and consideration. I don't often claim it, but now I do. My time will soon come anyway; what difference does it make if it comes a day or a year earlier or later?

"I am the one to do this. I claim it as a right, for many reasons. Now Davy, listen to reason—" he protested, as I moved to remonstrate.

"Mildred may still be alive and well. She may even need your efforts to help her escape. She needs you to take care of her; you are all she has in the world. Until you have absolute proof that it is too late to do anything for her, you have absolutely no right to lose your head and sacrifice yourself—especially in a case where there are plenty of others who are willing."

I sank back in silence, convinced but disgruntled.

"I am starting now," Kaspar announced quietly. "I shall take just a little of this food along to do me till I get there."

Perry Becker leaped out in front of us with an arm stretched toward each.

"Mr. Kaspar is right as far as he goes!—Now, please don't interrupt me anybody. I mean business. He's got a right to go if he wants to. But he's going to need help. He isn't as spry as he used to be; and that's a long way to go and a hard job to do all alone. He will need my strength and quickness—now don't throw away good breath. I mean business! Mr. Kaspar and I are starting right now!"

Kaspar looked at him for a moment and then extended his hand.

"I'll be glad to have you, Perry," he said in a hoarse voice.

"Perhaps the danger isn't as certain as you think," Perry went on. "We're quite apt to see you again in a couple of days. And, anyhow—I'd go *anyhow!* For Miss Mildred and for my regiment!"

And he bent over quietly to the task of selecting some food to take along. He ran swiftly over to the pile of wreckage and came back with two bent pieces of steel that would serve as excellent hammers for destructive purposes.

"You keep your hatchet, Davy," he said. "You need it worse than we do."

Thus far Cassidy had not yet said anything. He stood thoughtfully as though studying the situation. Finally he spoke:

"They're both right. That's their job. Yours is to hunt for Mildred."

"I'll find her or stay till this island dries up," I said. My hopeful words belied the sinking feeling at my heart, however. I said them chiefly for Kaspar's encouragement.

"Davy!" Kaspar spoke slowly and solemnly. "I want you to make me a sacred promise. If you find Mildred, I want you to take her back to your home and your people at once. I don't care how successfully our people come out in this struggle, I want you to start immediately. I do not want Mildred to remain on this island an instant longer than you can help."

I promised. I did so gladly. No matter whether the people or the machines were successful, I could see that after the issue was decided, the island was no place for me.

THERE were no more words. All of us shook hands in silence, and the two started off. They crossed the road and headed northward, following the clear space between the grain field and the forest. Kaspar walked briskly and vigorously, as though he were a young man again. Cassidy and I stood motionless and without a word for the space of a half hour, watching them until they had disappeared in the violet haze of the distance.

"Something's going to happen," Cassidy remarked as he finally stirred.

"I wonder!" I replied. I was most profoundly depressed. "That town's a hard place to get around in. I don't have to tell that to you."

"I have hopes. Kaspar has a way of handling the machinery; he always did. And they consider him apart from the rest of us. And that boy! Well, he certainly is different from the general run of young fellows on this island. I tell you, I'm going to watch the northern horizon." Cassidy was enthusiastic.

"And *I'm* striking out for the little harbor. That's the direction in which the filthy Squid carried Mildred."

"You've certainly given the horrible thing an appropriate name," Cassidy growled. "I'm going with you. The regiments are getting along all right; they don't need me. And I'd give my right eye for that little girl. I suppose you've noticed that I take more joy in her than I do in my own girl. Phyllis and her mother both have minds only for the gayeties of the city. Mildred has been the darling and inspiration of the revolutionaries."

"Do you suppose it's safe to go up the road?" I asked. I studied the distance in all directions, and there were certainly no machines to be seen anywhere. "Or had we better go along through the woods?"

"I say the road," Cassidy replied. He had praised me for quick decisions, but was my master in that respect. "It will be easier and quicker. There certainly

won't be anything coming behind us after the hash you've made back there. And we can keep a careful eye ahead, and be ready to dodge into the underbrush if necessary. There can't be much of anything on ahead; their boats are few and small, and the sea is the only other approach besides this road."

We picked up the rest of the food, and started along the road westward, without any definite plans. We merely hoped that we could find Mildred. Most of the time we trudged ahead in silence. My heart was too sick for talk. It actually made me physically sick; I got weak and limp all over when I thought of Mildred in the clutches of that awful mechanical beast. And then my feelings would gradually turn into anger; my muscles would tighten, my fists clench, my teeth grit; my pace would get so rapid that Cassidy was hardly able to keep up with me. Then after a while I would grow limp and sick again. Thus it came upon me in cycles, like the stages of some recurrent disease. Cassidy said nothing. It seemed that he understood.

Occasionally I called myself a blundering fool for having used up all my ammunition, and to no particular purpose. I searched again through my haversack, hoping to find an extra cartridge, but in vain. I had ten or fifteen more loaded clips in my suitcase at Kaspar's home, but there was no time to go after it now, even had it been possible. Then, there were supposed to be firearms on the *Gull*. But where was the *Gull*? I had no idea where to look for the vessel; I didn't even know in which direction she lay. Should I talk that part of it over with Cassidy? I decided not to. Arms or no arms, we had better get to the harbor as soon as possible. I was not sure that it was permissible for me to reveal to him even that there was such a thing as the *Gull*.

What would I do when we got to the harbor? Suppose I did find the Squid, and Mildred? What good could I do? I had to admit that without my pistol I was totally helpless against the monster. I went along, revolving in my mind wild schemes of what I might do to it, but as soon as each one was evolved, I had to admit that it was impossible along with the rest of them.

The distance through the forest seemed interminable to me. I had passed it in a few minutes in a car, several times. Now it was not only the slowness of foot travel that dragged; my anxiety stretched the distance to a thousand miles. I kept peering intently ahead, looking for the light of the orifice into open daylight. Then came the fluty notes of one of the machines out of the distance ahead of us.

"Careful now," I warned. "Ready to dodge into the brush. It won't do to get roped in again. Mildred needs us now."

Cassidy said nothing. He stood still and listened.

"It's calling you," was his astonishing comment.

"*Me*? How do you make that out? Sounds to me more like some overgrown canary-bird's song. I can't make anything out of that twittering that sounds like me."

Cassidy smiled wearily.

"The machines use idea-sounds," he explained. "It is not possible to pronounce human names with reed pipes. They speak of you as the 'Outside Man' or the 'Explosive Man'."

"Do they talk to each other that way, with those pipes?" I asked.

Cassidy shook his head.

"The reed-pipe language is only for talking to us. With each other they communicate by means of Hertz waves, inaudible to us."

"And they understand our speech?"

He nodded again.

"The thing is coming nearer!" I exclaimed.

"Well, look out for trouble," Cassidy said wearily and without excitement. "To think that I should have lived to see a time when we have to flee from our former servants by dodging into the brush like rabbits!"

As the sounds came closer, I recognized the repetition of the same phrases over and over again. It reminded me of when I had first recognized and remembered a meadow-lark's song when I was a small boy. Soon I could have whistled the repeated phrase of the machine, just as I had imitated the meadow-lark's song in my boyhood. In a few moments we could see the little thing in the distance. When it saw us, it stopped and changed its tune considerably. It sounded as though someone had gone wild on a clarionet, tooting about on the keys without the formal rhythm of music.

"The Squid wants to talk to you," translated Cassidy. "These things call it 'The Dictator'."

"I'd like to have Dinah here to talk to the Squid," I grumbled, involuntarily drawing my big pistol.

There was another flood of tooting, which Cassidy translated:

"It says the beautiful girl is unharmed. The Squid wants the Outside Man to come and see her. I understand that he's got some sort of a proposition to make."

"What sort of crooked treachery do you suppose he's up to now?" I inquired hotly.

Cassidy reflected quietly for a moment.

"Some of the things that the machines do, we might possibly interpret as being treacherous. But on the whole, you cannot call them that. Machinery is after all, mathematical in its method of working, and mathematics is not treacherous. Cold, heartless, inhuman, yes. But, on principle you can depend on the machines to act logically and fairly."

"What does the Squid want?" I shouted to the machine.

" 'The Dictator'," Cassidy corrected. "What does the Dictator want?"

The machine tooted its reply, which Cassidy translated. Thus the conversation continued. The machine understood what I said, but Cassidy had to interpret its statements to me.

"The Dictator is interested in the Outside Man, because he came from beyond the island, and because he is so unusual and different from the men of the island. The Dictator promises not to harm the girl if the Outside Man will promise not to use explosives. You may even get her back by being wise."

"All right," I agreed; "I'll look into it anyway. Where is he, or it, or what-you-may-call-it?"

"Follow me. He is waiting at the harbor."

THE leading-machine started on ahead, and we followed it. It had to proceed slowly in conformity with our pace, and was compelled at times to zig-zag across the road to keep its balance.

"Oh what a fool I was to throw away my ammunition!" I groaned.

"Perhaps that did us more good than you can imagine," Cassidy replied in a low voice. "Heretofore they have always considered us very soft and helpless—quite harmless to themselves."

"Well," I remarked grimly, "I won't give it away that I am really helpless and harmless now."

Cassidy looked at me and grinned.

"I wouldn't call you helpless anywhere, any time," he chuckled.

I clenched my fists.

"It is some comfort, anyway, to hear that Mildred is safe. If it's really true. I wonder what the beast wants?"

We were soon to find out. A bright halo far ahead indicated the opening by which the road led out to daylight. I found my heart pounding and my breath coming fast in eagerness. Mildred was on ahead—if this whirring little demon told the truth. As we approached the opening, I could see the cliffs out beyond, and I hurried on so fast that Cassidy became very red and puffy behind me. As we stepped out into the open circular space with the dock and the sea ahead, there was the Squid in the middle with its arms coiled around its box.

I looked eagerly about for Mildred, but did not see her at first. There was a small black launch at the dock, toward which the leading-machine swiftly whizzed, and darted up on board by means of a gangplank. Then I saw Mildred standing on the dock near the vessel, unharmed, not even bound nor confined in any way. When she saw me, she started swiftly toward me; but thereupon a torrent of tootings came from the big, ugly machine, and she stopped and stood still again. At the same time I had leaped ahead, but Cassidy caught me by the arm.

"Wait!" he said tersely. "Don't ruin it now. See what it's got to say!"

In the meanwhile the Squid, with its headlights turned toward us, was piping away like a whirlwind. Cassidy interpreted.

"It says it will send away the boat with the other machines, so that you may feel safe in talking to it. But, in return, it wants you to take the little hand machine that explodes and destroys, and to throw it into the water."

"That's fair enough," I replied, wondering whether it was my own attitude that should be called treacherous.

However, with great gusto, I threw the pistol into the shallow water to my left. Mildred gave an astonished exclamation when she saw me do it. She was too far away for me to talk to, but I assured her by nodding my head. In the meanwhile, the Squid must have given some signals, for the launch hauled in its gangplank and moved away, down the rocky channel.

Cassidy went on, interpreting the Squid's fluty harangue to me:

"You want the beautiful maiden yonder?" it said; "after the fashion of humans, which I do not understand."

I waited impatiently during the tooting for Cassidy's translation, and then turned to the Squid.

"Go on!" I said curtly.

Then came another irritating wait for me, while the machine fluted back and forth on the musical scale, and Cassidy listened.

"It says I should repeat things after it just exactly as it says them," Cassidy announced.

There followed the most outlandish conversation I ever took part in: first the tooted statements of the machine during which I could scarcely contain my anxiety to get the meaning; then Cassidy's translation to me, and my occasional reply directly to the machine.

"She is the most beautiful among humans," Cassidy translated the machine's piping; "and many of the young men want her madly."

A wait while Cassidy listened, and then translated: "Why did they want her? I want to know."

The Squid talked to me thus, through Cassidy, while I stood there and squirmed, waiting for the translation:

"For years," the machine went on, "I have made human actions my special study. As a result of the things I learned, I have been able to add many improvements and perfections to my apparatus. I, and some of my higher-machine companions, found that human actions were controlled and activated by other means than were our own actions.

"We act upon reason and practical considerations—" I am giving this without splitting it up into the disconnected statements in which I got it— "on the basis of results expected. Most humans act on the basis of some strange thing called 'feeling'—'emotion.' We studied feeling and emotion, and I have tried incorporating them among my own processes."

I interrupted these.

"Does that mean," I asked, turning to Cassidy, "that that hunk of iron is trying to learn what love feels like?"

"I believe," replied Cassidy, "that it's been experimenting with love. Wait, here he goes again." Cassidy continued his translation.

"Men are hard to understand," came from the machine. "I can understand a 'feeling' for a supply-station, or an 'emotion' for a repair-machine. But, why such an intensity of 'feeling' for a girl? Why do your young men become so disturbed on her account, and exert their soft muscles so energetically, and give up everything for her? I want to know why."

I SHUDDERED to think of it—that hideous thing of tangled, oily machinery, and black, snaky arms, trying to love a human, living girl. It was gruesome enough on merely superficial thought; but to my medically trained mind, the incongruity of it gave me the creeps.

"I selected several girls," the Squid went on through Cassidy, "and brought them to my laboratory. But I could not understand. Then I sought to capture the most desired one on the island, the one that roused the highest intensity of 'feeling' in the greatest number of young men. But the problem is difficult.

"I shall give it up for the present, for I have other plans. I have something really worth while. I do not really want a girl."

I could hardly contain myself for disgust one moment and furious anger the next. Good old Cassidy saw how I felt about it. He never said a word except when translating for the Squid, but he softly stroked my arm from the shoulder down; and he continued bravely with the translating, patiently and impersonally, without inserting remarks of his own.

"You want her." Some of the Squid's statements were very short, and again he would toot out a long harangue before pausing to give Cassidy time to translate.

"And she wants you, and hasn't even a thought for the others. That is also strange. At some date when I have the leisure, I shall go more deeply into the problem. But I have something more important on hand now. So, if you want her as intensely as other humans want their girls, you will surely be willing to do what I ask. If you do, I shall give her back to you."

"All right, spit it out then," I shouted to the machine in angry impatience. "What is it?"

"You came to this island from the great Outside," Cassidy followed up a fresh line of toots. "You know all about those vast Other Places. You have kept very silent about them, but reports have reached me, some from you, and some from the old men who were not born here.

"It is a vast world, Out There. It has unlimited room. It has coal, ore, and oil. Room and material for more City-Organisms. This island is too small for us. Soon we shall fill it and exhaust its supplies. We need the World for its supplies and its room. We must continue our rapid progress into wider activity and higher organization. Imagine a hundred cities, all under one brain—the wonderful possibilities of such a system!

"I am getting ready to build ships to carry our machines out where wider and more promising fields await

us. You know the different regions where supplies are, and where stations might be advantageously located. You know the habits of the people, and could anticipate what they might do to defend their cities against us. Your knowledge is very valuable to us. I am the ruler of this city. *I want to be ruler of the whole world!"*

Cassidy and I looked at each other for a moment in dumbfounded amazement. Before I had recovered, the machine was tooting again.

"In a short time," it continued, "I can cover the world with wonderfully organized machines, infinitely better than the feeble, foolish, incompetent humans that occupy it now. What are *they* good for? What can *they* accomplish?

"You be my guide and adviser during my advance into this big Outside, and you may have the beautiful girl. If you wish to promise now, you may have her at once!"

I interrupted again.

"Just a minute, now!" I shouted, almost beside myself. "Do I get you right? You mean for me to betray my world to be overrun by your devilish apparatus? You mean that I'm to advise you how to kill and conquer my fellow-beings and get them out of your way?

"You big, tin crook, you haven't learned a hell of a lot about human beings yet, have you?"

"Very good," came Cassidy's translation; the mechanical tootings showed no change, no such thing as an emotional quality, as one might have expected in such a tense situation. "I'll get along quite well without you. I'll have the World anyway. In the meanwhile, I'm taking your lady back to the laboratory."

CHAPTER XV

The Island Starts Over

A DETERMINATION had been gradually forming in my mind while the Squid was tooting out its ultimatum. The proposition of tackling the machine with such weapons as I had left was beginning to seem not so hopeless after all. There were a number of possible plans by means of which I might overcome it and put a stop to its activity. In fact, there was no other choice for me, except to jump in and smash the thing somehow; not only was my own happiness concerned and the fate of Mildred, but here was a catastrophe hanging over the whole world!

"The fate of the human race hangs in the balance," was the thought that flashed through my mind during those few seconds; "the safety of countless cities and the lives of dwellers within them; the fates of nations and their millions depend on what I do in the next thirty minutes!"

My own little life counted for very little against a stake like that. Stealthily I loosened my handax in its sheath; and laboriously I opened my knife in my pocket with one hand. As Cassidy spoke the last words of his translation, I made a leap for the machine. As I leaped I snatched my handax from its sheath, intending to smash the Squid's eyes.

I might have succeeded in surprising the machine and blinding it had it not been for Cassidy. I did not blame him, even at the moment. Solicitous for my safety, he reached out and seized me by the arm; probably he did so more or less involuntarily. I broke away from him, but it delayed me just long enough to enable the Squid to turn and avoid me. In a moment, a black, snaky arm was coiled around me.

The fight was on now, and I had lost the first break. My chief advantage, that of unexpectedness, had failed me. However, that knowledge lent me desperation, and I was more determined than ever. All my hatred for that hideous machine blazed up within me, and gave me strength and keenness for the fight.

"For Mildred!" my heart shouted within me; "for all my fellow-humans, unconscious of their danger from this ugly monster!"

"You think you're Alexander the Great, do you?" I muttered at the thing. And I shouted to Cassidy:

"Stand back and keep out of this!"

I caught one glimpse of Mildred, standing rigid, with her hands to her face.

One whirling blow with the ax cut off the tentacle that held me and stretched it limp on the ground. The stump of it waved about, emitting blue sparks and clicking furiously. I leaped backward, out of reach of the rest of the coiling, waving arms.

I spent some minutes maneuvering around, trying to find out just what the thing could do against me. I learned that it was adept at dodging. It could whirl about with unexpected quickness to avoid a step of mine toward its side. I also concluded that it was quite as anxious to settle me as I was to finish it; otherwise it could have turned around and run away, and I never could have caught it. In speed, I should certainly be no match for it.

I tried to get in front of it a couple of times to get at its eyes, but it had apparently surmised my intention, for it always swerved sidewise. Its movements were clumsy lurches in appearance, but effective, for I could not approach the front of it at all.

Then, I endeavored to ascertain if it had any other method of attacking me except its tentacles. Had I been in its place, I would have considered running down my adversary as the surest bet. Had the thing once run into me, it would have broken all my bones; and had it decided to run me down, I might have had a difficult time keeping out of its way. But, it did not try that method, and I rather felt that its chief desire was to capture me alive. It still underestimated the capabilities of human beings.

The machine and I circled around each other till I was dizzy. It must have been a trying time to Mildred and Cassidy. I know that I looked small and soft and ineffectual beside that huge, agile monster, as it plunged this way and that and clutched at me with coiling, snaky tentacles. Only the limp, black, motionless thing on the ground was any encouragement to my well-wishers.

I tried to get behind it to get a cut at its rear tire with my handax, out of the range of its vision. But, it always avoided me, and each time I found myself to one side of it and a little in front. It seemed to be maneuvering to keep me in that position. I in my turn took care to keep out of reach of the grasping tentacles that waved and curled at me, six or eight at a time.

The machine and I danced and dodged around each other, plowing up the sand, until it seemed that it had lasted for hours. I caught myself wondering whether I would have to quit from exhaustion and run to the shrubbery for shelter before the machine's fuel was all used up in this maneuvering. I wished I had possessed some definite idea of how long its fuel would last; but I rather felt that my chances in an endurance contest were against me. For that reason I decided on an offensive program.

As it came circling toward me, I leaped suddenly toward the side of it, right into its mass of waving, grasping arms; and before I found myself tangled up in a snarl of them, I had landed a crashing blow with my ax on the brain-case. I had both my arms up above my head again in an instant, and free; but my body was swathed in spasmodic black coils. I slashed with my left hand at the most accessible tentacle, while with my right hand I landed ax blows on the cover of the machine's brain.

A tentacle unwrapped itself from my shoulders and sought my busy arm. I lopped it off with my ax, and hit the plate of the brain-cover again. It dented. With the next blow it caved in.

Thereupon a terrible roar came up from the machinery beside me; a couple of tentacles spasmodically gripped my chest until my head ached and my side was splitting from the lack of breath.

But my arm was still swinging, though I was becoming dizzy. Another blow, and my ax sank into the soft mass of rods, the substance of the creature's brain. The machine careened wildly and dashed about in mad circles, carrying me with it. The knocks and screeches in its mechanism made my teeth grit, and roused me from the sinking stupor that was coming over me. I gasped for air, and put all my remaining strength into one more blow. I was going out, I knew; but one more blow, one more blow at that brain. My ax widened the breach in the plates as it crashed down, and smashed deep into the soft stuff inside.

My head was big as a dome, and stars danced all about in it, because of the spasm of the black, ropy arms, which were squeezing the breath out of me. But, once more I raised my ax; I knew I would never do anything more; with a dizzy, sickening singing in my head, and a sensation of collapse all through me, I sank my ax once more into the substance of the thing's brain. I remember that the clattering creature reeled. I remember a great crash, and then, nothing.

I DO not know how long I was unconscious. There were numerous fitful gleams of returning sentience, with lapses back into oblivion. I seemed to hang on for a long time on some sort of a brink, tottering alternately between consciousness on the one hand and unconsciousness on the other. I know that I awoke for an instant and felt the crushing weight of the iron apparatus on top of me. The several tons of it clamped me down hopelessly to the ground; I gave up hope, and sank away into unconsciousness again.

Later on I awoke for an instant just enough to perceive that there were some little leading-machines nosing around the scene; but I must have fallen away again and remained unconscious for a long time following that. For the next thing I knew, there were several trucks about with leading-machines darting about between them; they were hoisting the Squid off me and carrying it away. Of Cassidy and Mildred there was not a sign. I lay leadenly helpless on the ground, unable to move hand or foot.

I had landed a crashing blow with my ax on the brain-case.

Periods of consciousness came and went. The next thing I knew I was in a room; I recognized it as being in the old house in the Central Gardens of the City of Smoke. How I had gotten there, I could not remember. I must have lain in bed in that room for interminable weeks; it seemed like years or centuries, although I was conscious only part of the time. At times there would be food on a table beside the bed. A few times I saw the old man with whom I had talked on my previous visit to the house; I mumbled to him, but he only flitted about the back of the room, like a ghost. When I could finally get up out of bed, I had a crippled leg, on which I hobbled slowly and clumsily. My progress, merely across a room, was desperately slow. I was overwhelmed with a sinking, dismal despair; but somehow things kept dragging on forever.

THE fight with the Squid must have affected my mind somehow; that was the only answer that occurred to my puzzled ponderings on why things looked as they did. I could not seem to remember the passage of events connectedly; there were great gaps and forgotten intervals; yet each time my consciousness was clear, I could observe everything, and reason back to what had happened in the meantime. The isolated episodes I remembered were sufficient to tell the whole story. I remember riding around with the Squid a good deal, on a step at the side of its brain box. The Squid had shiny new plates, like patches here and there, and new parts were visible here and there among the old mechanism.

The City of Smoke was building ships; there were scores of them on the river and scores of them in the ocean harbor. I saw the skeleton framework rising; and later I saw the finished ships, all enameled black, like automobile-fenders; great long rows of them all alike, like a day's job of Fords coming out of the factory at Detroit. Later on, I also saw numerous Squids, a little smaller than the original Squid itself, but otherwise perfect duplicates; all new and shiny and looking as though they had just been completed, but already busily dashing about on complex and important affairs.

There was a vast amount of painful and turbulent goings-on; I tried desperately to remember it and could not; though in some vague way it disturbed me and kept me uneasy and worried. One episode stands out vividly; a journey across the sea in countless black ships; aeroplanes above the ships; terrific explosions, and black ships sinking. Then again, I was back in the house on the island, in the center of the City of Smoke, or dashing about with the Squid. And there were aeroplanes under construction; thousands of them. The beach to the north was covered with aeroplanes.

With my hands I could feel that my face was covered with a long beard. It told me that a long time had passed; how long, I had no idea. How long it was before the automatic airplane took me for a ride, buckled down in its seat with a bar across my chest, and tooted out its explanations to me, I could but vaguely guess. It must have been many years. Suddenly the fact occurred to me that I had learned to understand the tootings of these machines; it came as natural as though some human being were talking to me. It must have taken me years to learn that. But, that same leaden oppression that kept my feet from moving, also enchained my mind. I couldn't remember how nor when I had learned it. I just had to accept things as they came, like a child does. Mildred and Cassidy were but sad memories of the dim past.

The automatic airplane took me along on a vast survey, over millions of square miles. I recognized the Missouri and the Mississippi Rivers and the Great Lakes and the Appalachian Mountains. In lovely valleys in Texas and Missouri and Indiana were beautiful cities, like little glimpses of Paradise, with silk-clad people engaged in athletics and artistic pursuits among their soft and vividly landscaped parks, and their buildings of wondrous architecture; gay, brilliant, happy-looking people. But, a sudden revulsion came over me, as I looked down upon them.

"Pets!" I exclaimed in disgust to myself. "Stupid, helpless, domesticated animals. No better than poodles! To the end of my days I'll fight it. I'll never be like what they are!"

Then, there were other cities, huge, smoky, congested clots, in mining districts and in oil areas, whose streets were congested with clattering machines and totally devoid of human beings. Each of these cities had its gigantic electrical brain, controlling the entire iron community as a single, coordinated unit. What marvelous efficiency! The human brain is a poor, rudimentary attempt, in comparison with these huge, perfectly functioning, all-embracing electrical brains.

FINALLY, the airplane carried me over the great World-Brain, the Central Electrical Exchange, in which the consciousness of the entire planet was centered. A vast building stood in the Ohio Valley; beside which the hugest of our old dirigible hangars was diminutive; and it was crammed with millions of the electrical neuron-units, receiving impressions, impulses, reports, and stimuli from the whole world, and sending out its coordinating, correlating messages which operated the entire planet as a single, conscious, thinking unit—a consciousness which was quite as real as my own, even though it consisted only of metal and electricity; the whole world as unified, as conscious as I am myself. In spite of my crippled and stupid state, I could not help being impressed with the vastness and wonder of it. And all about this vast brain, there was huge machinery throbbing.

Somehow, that throbbing went all through me, and shook my entire helpless being. Throb! throb! throb! went my whole body. But of a sudden my head was clear again; great weights and oppressions seemed to float away from me. The throbbing continued, but it was only in my right leg. The rest of me felt strangely light and vigorous.

I opened my eyes, and sighed in vast relief. It began to dawn upon me that I had been having an ugly nightmare, and that I was now waking up. People were moving about. I lay on the sandy beach. I could only see the people's legs; and a little distance away, the trunks of trees. Far away, some sort of an explosion boomed out, and was followed by a slow, reverberating roar.

Something trembled in my right hand, something soft and infinitely comforting. I looked down at it. It was a little, brown hand. And bending over me was Mildred's face, wet with tears, but radiant with joy. I was so glad to see that face again, that I closed my eyes in happiness.

"Davy!" she whispered, "are you awake?"

I looked around me again. It was twilight, almost dark in fact; although stars shone brightly above me, I could still see things plainly. I lay on a soft cushion of green leaves, considerably wilted. To the west of me was a screen of green branches, with their leaves quite wilted. I recognized that I was lying right on the spot where I had fallen.

Mildred sat beside me on the sand. Everywhere there were men; there seemed hundreds of them, standing about quietly in groups, or busy at something. Some of them were lighting sticks, which flared up with a resinous sputter, and they were being used as torches.

I tried to rise. An agonizing pain in my right leg made me drop back again with a groan, but also, it whipped me wide awake at once.

"Lie still, lad," said Cassidy's kindly voice on the other side; "your leg is broken."

"Did I finish the Squid?" I asked eagerly.

"The Squid is no more!" Cassidy pronounced solemnly.

I raised myself up carefully on my arms and looked around.

"Where is it? I don't see it anywhere. Did it get away?" I was disappointed not to see the wreck of it lying somewhere near.

"The Squid is a pile of junk at the bottom of the harbor," Cassidy said cheeringly. "Mildred and I could not get you out from under it. I cut the fingers loose to let you breathe, and we started to break it up in order to release you. Then Perry Becker's regiment arrived, looking for us. Before I could stop them, the men threw it into the water."

"And I've been knocked out all day?"

"We had a time getting you to breathe at first. After that you slept naturally. You must have lost a lot of sleep lately."

Just then there was a flash of blinding, greenish light. For an instant everything was ghastly in its illumination; and then it was gone, and the blackness seemed twice as dense. It was followed, somewhere afar off, by a dull, reverberating boom-m-m!

"Storm coming up, eh?" I remarked. "I've never seen a tropical storm. They're supposed to be pretty rough."

"No!" Cassidy said cryptically. "The night is clear and quiet. There is nothing to disturb the stars above us."

Several more flashes, and a horrible roaring, rumbling interrupted him. A queer, soft crackling noise continued for some time, as he waited to continue.

"Can't you guess what is going on?" he asked when again opportunity permitted. His voice sounded elated.

I stared at him for a moment. Wasn't my head clear yet? Or what did he mean?

"Don't you see?" he pointed exultantly. "It's the northern horizon. I told you to watch the northern horizon——."

"Whooppeee! Hooray—Ouch! Oh!" My hilarious shout changed to a groan as my broken leg made me wince.

"Careful!" cautioned Mildred. "We must take care of your—of your fracture. We've been waiting for you to show us how."

"Just imagine it!" I breathed, all fired up by the idea. "Remember how things popped and roared and banged on the Squid when I hit its brain? Imagine that infernal city over there run wild—the crashing of hurtling hulks against each other in the streets, the roar of machinery running wild in the buildings, the toppling of walls, and all the pandemonium of boilers and gas tanks blowing up and smashing things, and the havoc and flashing of electrical currents of terrific strength as circuits are shorted; and that whole vast, terrific bedlam all crashing into a heap——"

I stopped because Mildred was sobbing violently.

"What—what——?" I began, faltering and bewildered.

"My poor grandfather!" she sobbed. "How *can* you, when you know that he—that already some awful thing has happened to him."

Cassidy shook his head grimly.

"Poor little Perry was hopeful. But no human being could last a minute in that roaring hell."

I remained silent. I did not know what to say. I was overwhelmed by a flood of reverence for those two heroes, that would not permit me to speak. The others must have felt the same way, for we all devoted a few minutes of silent meditation to the memory of the martyrs. Various thoughts came flooding over me. I had been anxious to go on that mission myself. Where would I be now if they had let me go? And wouldn't that grand old man have died happy, could he also have known that his granddaughter was safe? But, at least he knew before he died that his people would now be free to work out their own destiny. And Perry Becker was already a saint among the men of his regiment, for Cassidy had told some of the men of the story during the afternoon, and it had quickly spread throughout the organization.

IT was in silence rather than with cheering, that a thousand of us here, and the other thousands in the City of Beauty, watched the terrific greenish flashes, heard the crashes and reverberations, and the rustling, crackling commotion that came across the many miles to our ears, and watched a red glare appear on the northern horizon.

Late into the night we watched that terrible red glow to the north, from which occasionally shot a huge, flaming tongue high into the sky; and before long the stars were obscured by clouds of black smoke, while unpleasant, acrid odors were carried to us from the distance.

"It is time you were taking care of your own self," Mildred remonstrated with me several times. "It's terrible to leave a broken bone that long."

"Just a minute," I put her off. "It doesn't hurt, and won't do any harm. It's straight and needs no setting. I want to watch a while, and then we'll splint it up."

For hour after hour the noise and the glare showed no sign of dying down. We grew weary of watching; the very monotony of it tired us and made us sleepy. So, finally by the light of the torches, a first-aid kit was brought. A week before I had given instructions in preparing these sets, and had had no idea that I would be the first one on whom the material would be used.

My right tibia was broken, almost in the middle. The fibula was intact, and the broken fragments of the tibia were not displaced. It was not a difficult injury to dress. I directed some of the first-aid men in cutting splints and making pads, and in putting on the bandages. Mildred hovered around; she would have liked to do it all herself, and yet hesitated to let all these men know how she felt about it. The men gathered about me thickly. I was a hero to them, for I had "stopped" the Squid single-handed.

"Please don't look so distressed about this," I said to Mildred when they had finished the dressing and brought an excellently made litter to carry me on. "It isn't bad. It doesn't hurt much. And it will heal without leaving a trace. The only thing that gets my goat is that for several weeks I'm going to be a helpless cripple."

"That is a problem too," Cassidy observed, "in view of your promise to Kaspar. He wished in case you found Mildred for you to leave the island at once. He meant just that."

"No problem at all!" I replied. "I'm not sick. Help me to the boat, and the rest is easy. As I understood Kaspar, the vessel is designed so that it does not need much working. He intended for Mildred to navigate it all alone to some Gulf port. However, I don't see any reasons for my being in such a rush to leave."

"Neither do I; but he did. I'll trust his reasons. Under the circumstances, respect for his desires should prompt us in carrying them out literally." I could see that Cassidy was thoroughly in sympathy with Kaspar's intentions. Although everything seemed settled

upon the island except details, yet he did not trust Mildred's safety there, and was anxious to see her removed to some safer region.

"Anyway, we'll have to wait till morning," I reminded him. "You can't get through the woods at night on a litter."

Cassidy agreed to that.

"What puzzles me," I continued, "is how Kaspar managed to make a boat large enough to cross the Gulf, and keep it a secret? Why haven't the machines found him out long ago?"

Mildred looked at me out of the darkness, somewhat alarmed by my query.

"But the forest is dense, and they cannot get through it," she urged. She talked as though she really feared that the *Gull* might have been discovered.

"Yes," I mused, "but it requires material, machinery, fuel, and time to build a boat. Where could he get things without their knowledge? How could he transport the stuff to his hiding-place in secret?"

"Kaspar could," Cassidy said simply. "Nobody else could."

"When is the last time you saw the boat and knew that she was safe?" I asked Mildred.

"Not more than a few days ago. One of us visited it at least once a week." Her voice was troubled.

I also went to sleep with considerable doubt in my mind as to whether or not it would be possible to carry out Kaspar's wishes literally.

The circular space between the cliffs, the sea, and the forest was now crowded with a great variety of shelters; blankets, robes, and draperies over poles, leantos of sticks and leaves, and nondescript shapes in the darkness. The men had made an elaborate one for Mildred, surrounded by a rail fence of cut saplings. Those husky young fellows seemed to take a great delight in manual labor. For me, they built a shelter over me right where I lay, with canvas and poles, though I did not even consider a shelter necessary on that balmy night.

I was very proud of these young men, for the way they had responded to my training. A very few days ago it seemed they had been helpless and hopeless. Now they were taking care of themselves, and doing the work of real men. Now I was confident that the people of the island could work out their destiny. There was plenty of good material among them; even plenty of good leaders. All they had needed was a beginning.

BY morning a squad of messengers had arrived from an errand to the City of Beauty. They also brought Mildred's belongings and my suitcase. The rest of the regiment pressed them for news.

"What's going on back there?" I asked of a tired, sleepy youth of about twenty, who brought me my suitcase.

"The regiments are busy!" he said enthusiastically.

"What!" I exclaimed. "Did they have to fight some of the machines?"

"Not fighting—relief work!" he answered proudly. "All mechanical service broke down suddenly. Just went out, like a light goes out. The people are helpless as babies; can't do anything. Our trained men are handling the panic. Too bad we can't repair the machines and run them; but we'll learn that later. Now the regiments are helping with feeding, sanitation, and other immediately necessary services—and most important of all, are recruiting new men for training from the helpless, panicky mass——"

The young fellow's enthusiasm was fine to see. He was heart and soul for the cause of the regeneration of his people; his fatigue left him as he warmed up to his subject. I let him go on.

"One by one we're going to build up their backbone, and make them able to support themselves. We'll have a different island here before long——"

This was one of the chaps who, prior to ten days ago, was passing his ennui in idle social amusements, and afraid to soil his hands. I thought of Ames with a little pang of sadness. After all, Ames had been a fine fellow, and I think he would have made an excellent soldier in this organization—the organization which I had set going, but which was now going forward of its own accord. Never before had I had brought home to me so forcefully the real importance of human values in a world full of machinery and mechanical forces. Everything is blind chaos, unless it is developed by or under the control of real *men*.

We breakfasted on fresh fruits, grain porridge, and preserved meats, with water to drink. Eating was unpleasant, for the air was full of nauseating odors, scorched oil, burnt rubber and enamel; and sickening vapors kept eddying from the north. Mildred was very solemn, and I missed her customary attitude of constant smiles and quiet fun. But she had plenty of cause for seriousness. The fate of her grandfather, her only remaining relative; the crisis of her people; the devotion of all these quiet, disciplined young fellows to her; the thought that she was leaving forever the only home she had ever known: who can be light-hearted under such circumstances? She looked so tiny and so woebegone, that my arms ached to fold her in and just take care of her.

Before long, I was swinging along through the woods on a litter carried by four men, and Mildred was walking along beside me. The men had offered to make her a litter and carry her, but she would not hear of it. I was comfortable as long as I lay still, though any effort to move the broken leg caused pain. For the first time, I really had the leisure to observe the wonders of this luxuriant tropical forest, the wealth of green vegetation, the brilliant colored birds and flowers, and the myriads of insects. But, with the brown eyes beside me, watching me solicitously, the little brown hand laid on me occasionally looking out for my comfort, how could I become interested in the forest? Especially with the thought uppermost that I was going home, and bringing with me the most precious thing I had found on this wonderful island. And the occasional haunting fear that perhaps the machines had found the *Gull* and that our escape might be foiled.

THE men had cleared a path through the brush for my litter; and about twenty-five of them were marching with us. The rest had gone back along the road toward the City of Beauty. A group of them went ahead of the litter, picking out a clear pathway, which was necessarily quite devious and winding. If no other way through was found, a tree was felled and out of the way before I reached the spot. We were headed almost straight southward according to my compass. Mildred seemed to be the only one who knew the way, for the young fellow in command came back frequently to consult her. She put him to a lot of trouble by insisting on remaining beside me instead of going on ahead with him. It was a full two hours before we saw a thicket ahead of us, and Mildred pointed ahead.

"Somewhere along here, in that thicket, is the shop and the boat. We'll have to search to the right and the left."

Then, of a sudden, we were all petrified into silence by a chugging sound behind us, for all the world like that of a leading-machine.

"What!" I gasped, blankly.

"Naturally!" Cassidy snorted. "They weren't all in the city to get smashed up."

"But here in the forest! They can't go through the trees!"

At that, Cassidy looked dumbfounded. We could hardly hear him as he grumbled:

"That's right. I never saw one in the woods before."

"Didn't I tell you," he continued, after he had thought the thing over for a while, "that electrical brains are quick and keen? I am confident that the thing we hear is a machine developed within the past couple of days, for traveling in the woods. Probably your antics have stimulated it, and it was designed for your benefit."

The chugging grew louder and louder, and was soon directly on our left. Everyone stopped and looked intently about. I could see nothing anywhere. The men stood with clubs and axes ready; in fact they looked eager for a fight with the thing. How I wished for my gun, which was in the water of the harbor! For now I had plenty of cartridges in my suitcase.

However, in a few minutes, the noise was in front of us, growing fainter and fainter. Evidently the machine had overtaken and passed. And that was puzzling to me. Surely it could not have blundered past and just missed us? That didn't look plausible. It was looking for something on ahead! The others must have thought the same, for they hurried ahead at a doubled pace.

We arrived at the thicket and separated into two parties, one to the right and one to the left, to look for our goal. By this time, I had learned that a thicket always indicated a thinner place in the roof of the forest, where more light got through. Light was necessary in order that things might grow upon the ground. I could see that ahead there was a space clear of trees, and as a result, the dense roof was not continuous; there was a thinner portion, through which the light blazed brightly between the leaves.

Suddenly, there was a commotion behind us, in the direction the other party had gone. There were shots and tootings and the volley of an engine. The men with me whirled around and ran toward the noise; only the litter-bearers stopped doubtfully. I took compassion on them.

"Put me down and go on!" I shouted, and in a moment they were running after the rest.

I heard quick commands from the leader, and the ringing of axes on wood. I squirmed around, but could see nothing from my supine position upon the ground. Mildred still stood beside me.

"If you'll help me," I suggested, "I can prop up against this tree and see what is going on."

She demurred some at first, but finally agreed, and without much pain I got up on one leg. I could see a tree plunge over and fall, and men running about swinging axes. Gradually I made out things ahead of me. Another tree swayed and lurched and fell, and another followed it.

There was a small concrete building and an oil tank in the thicket, both almost concealed by the dense growth of verdure—evidently the secret shop where the *Gull* had been built. Between it and the men was a queer machine. It suggested in appearance, two leading-machines hooked in tandem; and it wound about like a snake between the trees, with each wheel changing direction independent of the others, each wheel pointing at a different angle. It was an uncanny-looking thing, the way it wound about; but it was certainly admirably adapted to traveling among a dense growth of trees. A man attacked it with an ax, but was knocked over by a projectile from the machine. I couldn't tell exactly how it happened; some large black object was catapulted at low velocity from the machine. It hit him in the shoulder, and he fell over and lay still.

"The machines have found the *Gull!*" Mildred gasped, with all her color gone.

Sharp commands were ringing out. Several fallen trees had the machine barricaded up against the dense hedge; one of the logs was being quickly stripped of its branches. Then twenty men seized the great trunk and rammed the heavy butt of it right into the machine. They caught it in the side; there was a crash and a lot of little rattling sounds, and several puffs of blue smoke. The machine toppled over and lay still.

Mildred clapped her hands.

"Hooray!" I shouted. I tried to wave my hat, but lost my balance on account of the heavy splint, and fell over with a crash and a yell. The litter-bearers came running toward me.

"Positively the last appearance of the iron villain!" I yelled deliriously as they turned me over. I saw Mildred's clasped hands relax, and her woebegone face light up with a smile.

"I'm so happy, I'm crazy!" I shouted. "Not so much because the machine has been conquered; but because of this splendid team-work. Why, these boys can accomplish anything! Just think of what they were two weeks ago, and what they have just now done! I've never seen anything like it."

IN the meanwhile, the rest of the men clustered about the machine like ants about a crumb; they were pushing it and dragging it through the thicket. In a few moments I heard it splash and sizzle and gurgle as they dumped it into some water that I could not see. That seemed to be their way of celebrating a victory over a machine.

I was carried up to see the injured man. He was regaining consciousness, and had a broken clavicle. I supervised the application of his dressings, and he was left there to wait a while, and to be carried back to his home upon my litter as soon as I was through with it.

They carried me through the swath they had made in the thicket. It was of a different character than the ones I had been through; the plants were light green and wiry; some of them were brittle and salt-crusted. I recognized them at once as plants that grew in salt water. I soon saw what seemed to be a canal, whose straight sides and placid green water stretched endlessly to the south, disappearing as a tiny thread into the distant depths of the leafy tunnel.

And right in front of me was a graceful little yacht. It was smaller than the one that had brought me to the island, and was painted a cream color, which made a rich contrast with the deep green of the water and the forest, and was likewise a grateful relief to my eyes which were weary with the endless black enamel of the machinery that I had been seeing for days upon days. My bearers deposited me in a chair on the deck.

"This must be sea-water," I remarked. It was a commonplace little remark to make, when I felt like singing and shouting, because I was on the way home, and Mildred with me. Mildred's reply was also quite calm and commonplace; only her breath came a little quickly, and I knew she was holding herself down just as I was.

"Yes," she replied. "Grandfather says this is a sort of deep crack in the rock of which the island is composed. There are many of these bayous over the southern end of the island."

For a moment there was a little constraint all round.

"First of all, will someone please see if there are some tools aboard," I requested. "One of the boys is bringing me some sticks to make a crutch with. Before long I'll be all over this ship."

The men were solemnly shaking hands with Mildred and myself, and filing down the gangplank. Only Cassidy remained standing on the deck in silence for many minutes. None of the three of us knew what to say.

(*Continued on page* 401)

Monsters of

FOR years on years, men, interested in ancient ruins, have been hypothesizing and theorizing and formulating new views about prehistoric times, the ancient Egyptians, the Mayas, the Incas and other races, from their findings among the ruins in Peru and Mexico in the Western Hemisphere, Africa and Asia on the Eastern Hemisphere, and wherever else research of that kind has appeared to give results. By a process of building-up, we have learned much about the old Inca and Maya tribes of early America, and about the races that preceded them. Mr. Verrill, being an archeologist of much note, particularly interested in the story of ancient North and South American Indians, is thoroughly conversant with what is known of the legends, so-called myths, and "beliefs" of the Incan and Mayan races, and is therefore well qualified to write scientific fiction based on this subject. If he deviates somewhat from the subject of Indians in "Monsters of the Ray," Mr. Verrill does so only for the enhancement of the interest of his tale. We say unreservedly that this is one of the best stories we have published by this author in many months—which is saying a good deal.

Illustrated by PAUL

A Breath-Taking Trip

TO ninety-nine people out of every hundred the name of Frank Ogden Harris means nothing. Nine hundred and ninety-nine people out of every thousand have never heard of him or, if they have, the name has conveyed no more interest, nothing more of importance than the name of John Smith or William Jones.

To a certain number of people, however, Frank Ogden Harris was well known and his name meant a great deal. Among the more advanced members of the chemical profession he bore a high reputation for a number of noteworthy discoveries in inorganic chemistry. Several of his formulæ were in constant use, and metallurgical chemists were all familiar with the Harris system of assaying the rarer earths and minerals.

Among scientists at large, but more especially among those interested primarily in astronomy and physics, Harris had a reputation of being a revolutionary, an iconoclast and something of a visionary. Even the most advanced and open-minded of the younger generation looked upon Harris' theories, prophecies and ideas as somewhat fantastic and impossible. But all admitted that he knew the subjects, that he was logical, that he could bring up points that could not be denied nor argued down, and that, in one or two cases, his theories had been completely borne out.

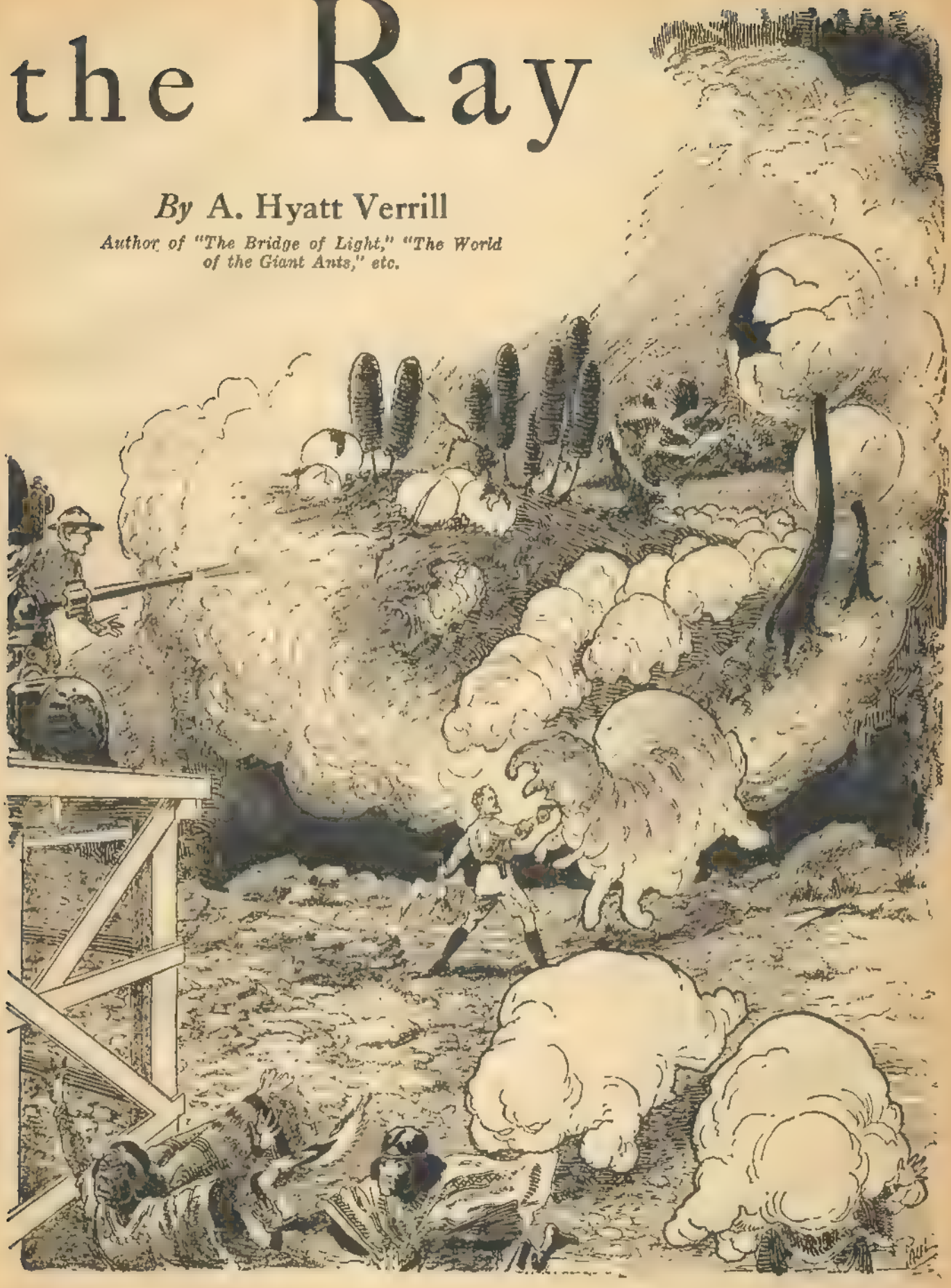
And in the circles of the most prominent electrical engineers, or rather among those who specialized in electro-magnetic phenomena and ether waves, Harris' name was one to conjure with. The multi-electronic tube was Harris' invention and its royalties brought him a princely income. The chromovisor, by means of which television had been brought within the reach of all, was the direct result of Harris' active and revolutionary brain, and that most important radio accessory of all—the static-nullifier—had been conceived and developed by Frank Ogden Harris.

The medical profession also knew Harris' name and had good reasons for remembering it, for his Z-Xray apparatus had made those twin terrors of mankind—cancer and leprosy—of no more consequence than chicken-pox and whooping-cough. Yet for some unknown reason—it most certainly was not modesty—Harris had never permitted his name to be associated with any of these inventions or discoveries. He was quite willing to blow his own horn, as the saying goes, among men who could understand what he was talking about, and he had no illusions in regard to his own abilities, his own intellect, or his own knowledge of the most abstract and complicated sciences. But he detested publicity and notoriety. To him a newspaper reporter was the epitome of stupidity, vulgarity and impertinence combined, and nothing would arouse his fury so much as some flippant, inaccurate press account of some scientific discovery or attainment. He avoided publicity as the devil avoids holy water, and he carried his detestation of notoriety to such an extent that, fearing lest some reporter might bring his name into the limelight all his contracts with the manufacturers of his various devices, apparatus and reagents contained a clause to the effect that, if the name Harris was used in any manner as a trade mark, a trade name, or for sales or advertising purposes, the contracts become null and void. He even went further and carried on his experiments in his magnificently equipped laboratories under an assumed name. Only in Peru, where he maintained a private observatory, together with a work-shop, a laboratory, a charming residence and a vast library, among the sublime Andes, was he known as Frank Ogden Harris to the Spanish-American public. And

the Ray

By A. Hyatt Verrill

Author of "The Bridge of Light," "The World of the Giant Ants," etc.



¶They had neither bodies, heads, legs nor appendages of any sort, yet they seemed to possess all. . . . They seemed endowed with intelligence, with purpose, for they hesitated, they gave an impression of peering about, of listening, and then they moved on as if with a definite goal in view.

there, as he laughingly admitted, nobody bothered over what a "crazy Gringo" was doing, and nobody cared who he was, as long as he paid his taxes, obeyed the laws, spent a reasonable amount of money and did not mix in politics.

So, as I said in the beginning, not one man in a thousand ever heard of Frank Ogden Harris, or, having heard the name, remembered it ten minutes later. Yet Harris came very near being the cause of wiping humanity from our planet, and, for a space, he held the fate of all mankind, the future of the earth, in the hollow of his hand.

ALTHOUGH Harris' name had been known to me for years, and although I had met him casually on many occasions when we were both present at scientific meetings and other functions, yet I never became really acquainted with him until I met him aboard ship. I was on the *Ebro* of the Pacific Steam Navigation Company, bound for an archeological expedition to Peru, and to my delight found that Harris was a fellow-passenger.

Naturally we became friendly; we exchanged views on the country, narrated experiences and discussed the past, present and future of Peru. Harris expressed the greatest interest in the ancient Incan and pre-Incan civilizations—although admitting he was woefully ignorant on the subject—and plied me with questions. He was a keen observer; he had a marvelously clear mind, and to my surprise I found that many of his deductions, based on his superficial observations, were remarkably close to the conclusions reached by the most eminent archeologists. Being an astronomer—although he had perfected himself in that science merely as a side issue and to aid him in other lines of research—Harris was deeply interested in the astronomical attainments of the ancient American races.

He had gone into that phase of the subject pretty deeply, and really knew more of the technical and scientific details of the Mayas', Nahuas', Incas' and pre-Incas' astronomical instruments and calculations than myself. Also he was absolutely fascinated with the mystery of the accomplishment of the ancient Peruvians' engineering feats, particularly their marvelous stone-cutting, and he informed me that there were some very remarkable ruins near his place. In the end he gave me a pressing and whole-hearted invitation to visit him for as long as I wished and to study the remains in his vicinity.

As I had never heard of any important ruins near Tucin, I very gladly availed myself of his invitation, and a few weeks after my arrival in Lima I set out for Harris' place. It was by no means an easy journey. Tucin itself was a tiny Indian village far from the beaten track of railway trains, motor roads and well-traveled highways and, being in an extremely rough and mountainous section, it could not be reached by airplane.

But even when I reached Tucin, nestling beside the brawling river in a verdant, rich-cultivated valley in the heart of the Andes, the worst of my journey lay ahead. At least, so I thought, when after three days of travel over deserts, *punas* (desolate regions) and mountains by motor-bus, horseback and muleback, I reached Tucin and asked the route to Huaro-Yana, as Harris' place was called. Imagine my astonishment when an Indian, in conventional clothes, pushed his way through the throng of poncho-clad, sandal-shod, coca-chewing, stolid-faced natives, who were all chattering in their Quichua tongue, and smilingly announced in excellent Spanish that Don Francisco had sent him to meet me, and that the Señor's car awaited me! I could scarcely believe my ears, for a motor car, in this remote out-of-the-way section of the Andes, seemed as impossible and incredible as a skyscraper in a desert. And when I had been guided to where the "car" was parked, I could scarcely believe my eyes. I had expected to find a rattle-trap Ford or a battered "camion"; instead I saw a low-hung, speedy-looking roadster in shiny maroon paint and flashing nickel. As far as appearances went, it might just have left a Detroit factory, except that its tires were of enormous size and of a peculiar light-green color.

I stepped into the car and settled myself back on the luxurious cushions, my saddle bags and burro-pack were stowed away in a rear compartment, the Indian servant took his place at the wheel, and the next moment, amid the shouts of the villagers, the barking and yelping of scores of mongrel curs, the shrill cries of scurrying children, and the stampede of a train of supercilious-looking llamas, we rolled along the narrow cobbled streets between the thatched stone huts and left the village of Tucin behind. Before us stretched a steeply inclined, rocky plain or *puna* merging into the colossal mountains, their bare sides scarred and seamed as though hewn from a solid mass by some titanic axe, their topmost summits gleaming white with perpetual snow against the clear blue sky. Across the rough *puna* a well-marked road had been made by removing the rocks and piling them in low walls on either side, and the car sped swiftly and smoothly onward towards the mountains.

Presently we reached a deep *arroyo* (brook) with precipitous sides, and with a frail-looking suspension bridge spanning the torrent fully two hundred feet below. The structure, evidently ancient and probably dating from Incan days, was composed of llama-hair ropes with a flooring of narrow strips of wood, and my heart seemed literally in my mouth as the chauffeur unhesitatingly swung his car down the slight grade of the approach. To have ridden over that sagging, swaying bridge on muleback would have been a nerve-trying feat, and that an automobile could cross without mishap appeared incredible. However, the Indian assured me it was perfectly safe. He reminded me he had driven over it only a few hours before, and with a mental prayer I resigned myself to fate. It seemed ages before we reached the farther end of that bucking, lurching, creaking structure, though it could not have been more than a couple of minutes, and in shaken tones I asked the Indian if there were others to be crossed. He shook his head, grinned, and commenced the steep upward climb of the mountains. I gazed ahead in amazement. Zigzagging up the almost perpendicular mountain side was a smooth, perfectly graded road, narrow to be sure, so narrow that there was barely a foot of space between the wheels of the car and the edge of the roadway. But, aside from the dizzy gulf that stretched beneath and the even more dizzy wall that rose above us, it was safe as a city boulevard. In places the mountain side had been built up with great walls of massive stones to support the roadway; in other places *barrancas* or ravines had been filled with masonry to form causeways, and at each sharp abrupt turn a retaining and guard wall of stones had been built.

It was the most amazing thing I had yet seen in this wild, uninhabited district, more astonishing even than the car, and I marveled at Harris—for I could think of no one else—having gone to the tremendous expense and the herculean labor of building it solely for the use of his car on his occasional visits to Tucin and the outside world. Not until we rounded a turn some eight thousand feet above the *puna* did the truth dawn upon me. Here was a small plateau overgrown with giant cacti, immense bromeliads and thickets of the wild purple heliotrope trees. But I scarcely saw these details. I was gazing at the ruined stone buildings in the center

of the plateau, ruins whose exquisitely fitted blocks with the round "Pucara" tower rising above them were unmistakably Incan. Instantly at sight of these ruined buildings I recognized them as the remains of a "tambu" or rest-house and a signal-tower. Everything was explained. The highway over which we were traveling had not been built by Harris, but by the Incan engineers centuries before the first white man set foot in America. It was a section of that most marvelous of ancient highways—the great Incan Road—that, before the conquest, had stretched for over four thousand miles from Ecuador to Chile!

So filled with wonder, so intensely interested did I become when the truth dawned upon me, that I scarcely noticed the character of the country, the strange form of Andean vegetation, the terrific gorges and vast heights as we climbed steadily upwards. All my attention was fixed upon the road and the engineering feats that had been necessary to build it. In many spots it was hewn from the solid rock; in one place it passed through a tunnel over one hundred feet in length and, not until the Indian brought the car to a halt, did I realize that we had surmounted the crest of the Andean range and that within a few hundred yards was the foot of a magnificent, gleaming glacier.

The Indian half-turned in his seat. "Huaro-Yana," he announced, pointing ahead. I craned my neck and stared in the direction he indicated. Far below us, seemingly so directly beneath that a stone might have been dropped for three thousand feet upon it, was a tiny square of vivid green cut by the white thread of a river. Scattered about its edges were the red-tiled roofs of buildings, like poppies in a green field. At its foot a precipice dropped, a sheer perpendicular wall for a thousand feet or more, to vanish in a hazy purple abyss, while behind it, and framing the charming picture as a proscenium arch frames a back-drop—was a natural arch of coal-black basalt—the *Huaro-Yana* or Black Bridge which had given Harris' place its Quichua name.

Only for a moment could I gaze upon the scene that, dwarfed by distance, and so amazingly at variance with its surroundings of awe-inspiring, bare mountain heights, seemed like a painting rather than reality. The next instant we were speeding down grade, traveling at a pace that caused me to hold my breath and to grip the sides of the car convulsively, swinging around horse-shoe curves and hair-pin bends on two wheels, roaring across masonry culverts, and dashing along the verges of precipices, where I gazed directly down through half a mile of air.

In vain I gasped orders to the Indian to slow down, he merely grinned and, like an imp from the pit, seemed to speed the faster. Each second I expected to find myself and the car hurtling into space. And then, suddenly, before us loomed that stupendous arch of black stone. With a roar we raced beneath it and the next moment came to a stop before a low stone bungalow embowered amid blossoming vines and blooming shrubs.

Harris rose from his chair on the shady porch and stepped forward with a cheery greeting and, still unnerved, but thanking God I was yet alive, I clambered stiffly from the roadster.

CHAPTER II

A Laboratory in Huaro-Yana

"WELCOME to Huaro-Yana!" cried Harris, gripping my hand. "Did you enjoy the trip?"

I sank into the nearest chair. "Do you enjoy dreaming you are falling to certain death and then bringing up with a start in your bed?" I exclaimed. "Well—that's the way I feel about this trip—I have never enjoyed anything more than coming to the end of it."

Harris chuckled as he poured me a drink from a frosted shaker. "You'd become accustomed to it in time," he assured me, "Cusi *is* inclined to speed a bit in the home run—likes to come in with a flourish. But it's safe enough—the car couldn't leave the road if it tried. But what do you think of my place here—of Huaro-Yana?"

"It's the most fascinating spot I've ever seen—viewed from up there," I told him, gesturing towards the zenith, "and from what I have seen of it, it's just as beautiful from here. And that natural arch—that black bridge—beats anything in Zion Park or the Grand Cañon. You've a wonderful place here, Harris, but the the devil of a place to reach—quite out of the world." He smiled. "That's why I chose it," he observed, lighting his pipe. "But you've made a mistake. That arch is *not* natural—it was made by human hands."

I sat up with a jerk. "What!" I ejaculated. "Impossible! Why, it's fully one hundred feet high, twice as wide and fifty feet through. "No——"

"Nevertheless it *was* cut by men," he insisted. "Didn't I tell you there were some interesting remains here? But I'm not surprised that you doubt it—I did myself at first. However, you'll see for yourself presently. By the way, what did you think of the car?"

"That it was an optical illusion, at first," I laughed. "How on earth did you get it here? And what sort of tires do you use?"

"It wasn't so hard getting it here," Harris assured me. "These Indians can carry a load of two hundred pounds for day after day. And a bunch of them together will lug more than a ton, when slung upon poles. I brought the car in sections and reassembled it here—I've a fairly well-equipped machine shop, you know. Oh, and about the tires, they're a sort of an experiment; made of a chemical composition I invented—something like elastic Bakelite, and solid—no chance of blow-outs or punctures."

"Good heavens!" I cried, "why don't you put them on the market then? There'd be a fortune in them. They rode like regular balloons."

He smiled. "Maybe I will—some day," he said. "But I don't need money and I've a lot of more important things to attend to."

I gulped down the contents of my second glass and stared at him. "If half of what you say is true, you're a magician dwelling in fairyland," I told him. "I——"

Again he interrupted me. "Piffle!" he exclaimed, waving his hand as if dismissing the astounding matter as of no consequence. "Anyone could do such things. However, before you leave, I hope to show you something really big. Do you know——" after a moment's thought, "I'm afraid I wasn't entirely unselfish in asking you up here. I—well, to tell the truth I wanted some intelligent scientific man to be here when I tried out what I hope will be my greatest discovery. And I didn't want a fellow in my own line. Besides—" with a grin—"I took a liking to you from the first; you've got so many theories and ideas about as wild as my own. And finally, well, if my ideas work out, you'll be well rewarded; you may solve all the mysteries of the pre-Incas."

Amazing, incredible as were the feats he mentioned so casually on the day of my arrival, they were nothing in comparison with those I witnessed later.

FOR the first few days I was busy going over the place with Harris, and a marvelous place I found it. How he alone, with no aid other than his Indian servants, had ever accomplished such wonders was absolutely astounding. His house, a bungalow-like structure,

which to my intense delight I found to be an ancient pre-Incan building repaired and adapted to modern life, was as well furnished and as well equipped with every convenience and luxury as any home in a great city. In fact, it was far better equipped, for Harris had installed many of his own inventions that were still unknown to the world. Such was his lighting system, produced by some intricate means and transmitted by some form of radio, and the lights themselves were masses of some composition that emitted an intense incandescent glow. But there were other ordinary, everyday comforts—hot and cold water, modern baths, and in the big comfortable living room a grand piano. Knowing that Harris was no musician and cared nothing for music, I was vastly surprised at finding such an instrument in his remote Andean home, especially as it must have been a tremendous undertaking to transport it over the mountains. But when I asked him about it, he laughed and opened the instrument. To my amazement I discovered that instead of a piano it was a most astonishing radio receiver, a receiver that bore about the same relationship to the best and most perfect set on the market that a grand piano bears to a music box.

"It keeps me in touch with the world's news," he explained. "I can get practically every station on the face of the earth. You'll have a chance to hear what's going on tonight."

But it was the laboratory, the work-shop and the observatory that aroused my greatest interest and in which Harris took the most—and well warranted—pride. He must have spent a fortune on them and their equipment, and I felt myself wondering more and more how he ever had brought the stuff in. But, as he said, the mountain Indians are marvelous porters and from Tucin the heavy stuff could be brought by Harris' motor truck—that is after he had really got started. Being neither a chemist, an electrical expert nor an astronomer, I could not of course grasp what all the devices and apparatus were for. But I could appreciate the mechanical equipment of his machine-shops, the lathes, milling-machines, presses, shapers and dozens of other machines. And I could understand and appreciate the farm, the dairy, the gardens, and the perfection of Harris' sanitary and economic arrangements. Much to my surprise I discovered that he used water power for practically everything, for somehow—with his seemingly almost magical feats in evidence—I had expected to find some new and amazing source of energy.

Harris' help, as I have said, consisted wholly of Indians. Not the dull, stupid-looking Quichuas I had become accustomed to throughout Peru, but tall, finely built, intelligent-looking chaps that somehow reminded me of the Navajos of our southwest. I asked Harris about them, for they were wholly new to me and I thought I knew all that was to be known of the South American aborigines.

He chuckled. "That's the greatest compliment you ever paid me," he declared. "Imagine you—one of the most eminent; if not *the* most eminent of ethnologists, asking me about Indians! Why, old man, it's as if I asked you to explain the formulae for determining the vibratory speed of the Eltham ray!

"And the worst of it is—" he pretended to sigh— "I can't answer your question any more than you could answer that imaginary query of mine. All I know is that they were living here, when I found the place—no, not just here either, for they had a holy fear of the Huaro-Yana, but over to the south a bit. Their village is still there and a few of the older men and women still live there. But after I hired some, and the others found the white man's magic had driven away the devils of the place, the rest flocked over here. I don't know how many there are. I only know how many I pay—the rest are inquilines, self-invited guests, as you might say. I do know they're superior to the other tribes and they have a lingo of their own. You can while away some of your time making an ethnological study of them."

Naturally, I devoted considerable time to a study of the Indians and found them a most interesting lot, at the same time adding not a little—I flatter myself—to our ethnological knowledge of South America.

To make a long story short, I became convinced that the natives were not of the Quichua race, but were remnants of the far more ancient pre-Incas, in all probability the light-skinned people from whom the reigning Incas came, for they spoke the ancient Hualla language, from which the later Quichua was derived, and they alone, of all Peruvian Indians I had found, still retained legends and folklore regarding the pre-Incan works. And unlike the other natives of Peru they wore—or at least those who had not adopted European garments and had taken to Harris' old clothes, wore, the costumes of the Incan races; short drawers or trousers, loose sleeveless smocks, moccasin-like slippers and the "llantu" about the head. But most interesting of all that I learned from them, and that which had the greatest bearing on subsequent events, was the fact that in their legends or myths they had a story to explain the means by which the pre-Incas had cut the gigantic stones of which their prehistoric walls and buildings were constructed. According to this tale—which of course I put down to folklore and fable—there had once been a very great king, who was also a god, who could call upon the stars and the Sun-God for help. And this man called down giants from the skies and the Sun-God sent his fire and with this fire from the Sun-God the great king cut the rocks and the sky-giants lifted them into place.

But in the end, so the legend stated, other giants or devils followed the good giants and slew them and destroyed the works of the great king, and though the king, in a great battle with the devils, killed them with the fire sent by the Sun-God, yet in the doing of it he was wounded and died, and with him died the knowledge of calling the sun and the stars and the sky-giants to cut the rocks and build the mighty walls.

I told Harris of this and remarked that it was a rather good myth and, ethnologically, entirely new.

For a space he was silent, puffing as always at his pipe and evidently thinking deeply. "Hmm," he muttered at last. "I thought you were an imaginative fellow and not bound about with old-fashioned ideas. I thought you were almost as revolutionary in your theories as myself, but I'm afraid you're not unlike the rest. You call that a myth, folk-lore. How do you know it's not true?"

I looked at him in amazement. Then I broke into laughter. "True!" I cried. "Of course it's all bosh! I'm as willing as yourself to admit the possibility of almost any theory, as long as it's reasonable and not contrary to the laws of nature, but I draw the line at the supernatural. Sun-Gods, sky giants, devils—tommy rot!"

"Sometimes," he observed judicially, "things that *seem* supernatural are actually natural and *vice versa*. And we're constantly learning new things, new facts about the 'laws of nature,' as you call them. Bosh, tommy-rot, you say. Wouldn't your father—or mine—have said the same thing if they'd been told we could sit here and listen to someone speaking in London or New York—or even if they'd heard stories of my car? Mind you, I'm not saying these Indians' legends *are* true—I don't believe they are literally so—but I don't feel so sure that they're not merely exaggerations—more or less poetical versions of actual historical oc-

currences. Didn't you tell me that you'd never heard an Indian legend that wasn't based on facts?"

I nodded. "Yes, and I'm willing to admit that much in this case," I told him. "We know the pre-Incan stone work is here. We know someone cut and placed the stones. I haven't any doubt it was done by the orders of some powerful ruler. No doubt, to his subjects, his superior intelligence and knowledge appeared like magic. And I haven't any doubt but that he and his people were destroyed by some savage enemies. As for the rest—fairy tales!"

Harris smiled. "In that case, old man, won't you tell me *how* the pre-Incans *did* cut their stones?"

"I wish I could," I replied, "but I admit neither I nor anyone else knows. However, we'll find out some day, and when we do we'll be amazed to find how simple is the explanation and we'll kick ourselves for not having thought of it before."

"Think so?" he raised his eyebrows and looked at me with a strange half-amused, half-quizzical expression. "Well, I don't. However, we may find the answer much sooner than you expect. Remember what I said when I asked you up here—and hinted that you might learn the answers to some of the puzzles?

"Well—one of the puzzles I hope to solve is this very mystery of the pre-Incan stone work, though that's merely incidental—that will fade into insignificance beside other mysteries I hope to solve before long."

"If you keep on talking like that I'll begin to think you've made some contract with the stars and the Sun-God," I told him with a laugh. "But," I added, "all joking aside, if you can answer the riddle of the stones, you'll confer a tremendous benefit on science and archeology. I don't suppose you'd be willing to give me any more definite idea of your plans or theories?"

He shook his head, refilled his pipe and rose. "Sorry, I can't—not just yet," he said. "Before long perhaps. In the meantime, there are the ruins to occupy your mind—and the Huaro-Yana—cut by the 'giants of the sky'!" He grinned mischievously as he left me.

CHAPTER III

A Mysterious Discovery

IF Harris had been an archeologist, whose sole aim in life was the solving of the mysteries of Peru's prehistoric civilizations, he could not have selected a better site for his investigations. He had hinted—quite casually—that there were some interesting ruins on his place. Then he had astounded me with his bald statement that the Huaro-Yana, the great basaltic arch, had been artificially formed. I had noticed that his house and most of his buildings were pre-Incan structures restored and repaired. But all this had not prepared me for the astonishing ruins and remains I found on every hand. I had visited every known pre-Incan site in Peru and Bolivia—Tiahuanaco, Cuzco, Viracocha, Pisac, Ollantay, Macchu-Picchu, Chavin and scores of less known ruins, but all together would not have equaled the stupendous remains that I found at Huaro-Yana.

The entire valley—I say valley, yet Huaro-Yana was not a valley but an upjutting spur of land—(a sort of mesa)—rising for at least a thousand feet above the bottom of the real valley between the ranges—with an area of perhaps two hundred and fifty acres, was, or rather once had been, completely covered with the gigantic structures of a prehistoric civilization. So numerous, so immense were the ruins, that it was days before I even obtained a general idea of their plan and arrangement.

And the more I studied them, the more amazed I became. Not only did I find that Harris had been correct when he had stated that the Huaro-Yana itself had been hewn from the living rock, but I discovered that the neck or ridge of rock that connected the flat-topped mesa with the neighboring mountain side, and across which I had come in Harris' car, was actually a stupendous piece of masonry. More than this I found that the bed of the river that led across the ridge and flowed through Harris' fields, to fall in a magnificent cataract into the gulf below, was a channel constructed by man, and that the stream itself had been deflected from its natural course down the mountain side and had been led across the mesa. And the only approach to the place was through the stupendous arch of the Huaro-Yana. It was in fact an absolutely impregnable spot, or would have been in the day antedating gunpowder and heavy artillery. A mere handful of men could have held the approach and the arch against thousands, and when, after risking life and limb a dozen times, I managed to reach the summit of the arch, I found—as I had half expected to find—that it had been planned as a fortress. There were the remains of buildings, of walls, of parapets, and there still remained great piles of stones ready to be hurled down upon an enemy attempting to pass under the archway.

Evidently the place had been a stronghold, a city and a religious centre combined, for there was an enormous temple topping an artificial mound; there were ruins of magnificent palaces, there were hundreds of low walls marking the homes of the inhabitants, and in one spot I came upon the finest specimen of an Inti-Huatana that I or any other archeologist had ever seen. Not only was this gigantic stone sun-dial in perfect condition, but the disk—to my unbounded delight and astonishment—was sculptured and bore marks and unquestionable inscriptions—the first evidences of a written or recorded language ever discovered in Peru.

But this story is not a dissertation on ancient Peruvian cultures nor an account of my archeological studies and discoveries at Huaro-Yana. All that will be found in my, "The Cultural, Religious and Astronomical Centre of the Pre-Incan Civilization in Peru. Proceedings of the Museum of American Archeology," and I must apologize to my readers for having, quite unconsciously, been momentarily side-tracked.

BUT to resume. I had expected to stay a week or two at Harris' place, but with so much to occupy my time, so much to interest me at every turn, the days sped by with miraculous swiftness and a month had gone almost before I realized it. Of course, to dream of making a thorough study of the ruins in the time at my disposal was quite hopeless. There was more than enough work to occupy members of a large expedition for several years, and the most I could hope to do, was to make a general survey, record the most interesting features, make measurements, and possibly carry on some excavatory work. Hitherto, very little material of value—such as human remains and perishable objects—had ever been found in the pre-Incan Andean sites. But Huaro-Yana was in such an excellent state of preservation that I had high hopes. And I was not disappointed. I located several stone tombs, and from these obtained some most remarkable mummies completely clad in magnificent robes, together with a number of specimens of unique pottery, various bronze, silver and a few gold objects, wooden utensils and weapons, beads, ornaments, etc. I was, of course, elated at my success, and Harris was as enthusiastic as myself.

Many, in fact, most of the objects were easily identified, but among them was one vessel that puzzled me. It was a globular vessel with a long neck—something

like a carafe in form—and with two smaller openings, both closely stopped with plugs, one on each side of the neck where it joined the body. It was formed of what I took to be gold at first, but the instant Harris examined it he declared it was not of that metal.

"Then what is it?" I demanded. "Obviously it's not bronze, copper or silver. Neither is it iron, lead, tin or brass. What *is* the metal?"

He shook his head as he examined it with a lens, hefted it and scratched it with his pocket knife. "I don't know," he admitted. "Off-hand, I should say it's some composition—if modern I'd say aluminum-bronze. But of course, that's impossible. If you'll let me, I'll analyze it."

"I'd be glad to let you," I assured him. "I'm as curious to know what the material is, as I am to solve the puzzle of its use. Can you offer any suggestion?"

He laughed. "It looks more like an old-fashioned bomb or hand-grenade than anything else," he replied. "But as that's out of the question, we'll have to think up something else. Now let's see. It has three orifices, of which two are closed. Why should it have these two stoppered holes, when the main opening would serve to empty or to fill it? I think you'll find the answer to that question in the inside of the pot. Personally I believe it's a triple affair—that it had three separate compartments and that the two stoppered holes lead to two of these and the neck opens into another. Admitting that for the sake of argument, why is one opening left open and the others closed? Answer: the two contained something that was to remain within them while the third contained material that was to be poured out or used."

I clapped my hands. "Bravo!" I cried. "Go to the head of the class, Harris. But what the deuce could the pre-Incans have had in the secret compartments? Answer me that, old man!"

Harris grinned good naturedly. "May have been a prehistoric thermos bottle!" he laughed. "Or," he added, "one of those gadgets for holding three kinds of liquor—no, that wouldn't do—it would have had three spouts in that case."

"Why don't you suggest it was some sort of a box of tricks belonging to that fabulous old king who was also a great magician?" I asked him banteringly. "Or maybe he kept a couple of genii—two of the sky-god-giants—locked up in the thing!"

"Hmm," observed Harris, who was shaking the pot and listening intently. "There's something inside. Genii don't rattle, do they?"

"Then let's pull out those plugs and dump it out," I suggested.

"I don't know about that," said Harris, and I stared incredulously at the expression on his face and was amazed at the seriousness of his tones.

"We don't know what might be in it," he continued, staring fixedly at the metal vessel as if trying to penetrate its sides and see what was within. "Somehow I don't approve of taking chances with these old things. You may laugh at me, but don't forget Doctor Ledell—remember how he opened a sealed jar at Ur and dropped dead instantly? And there was Barstow in Yucatan—you told me about him yourself—how he went raving mad after smelling the contents of an innocent-looking stone box. How do we know this thing doesn't contain some damnable poison that'll knock one or both of us out, if we get a whiff of it?"

"Maybe you're right," I admitted, as his words brought vivid memories of Ledell and Barstow. "Perhaps we'd better leave it as it is."

"We can do that and still find out what's in it," declared Harris. "I've got an X-ray machine, a fluoroscope and several more modern devices of the same character at the laboratory. When we go back to the house, we'll see what we shall see."

Perhaps Harris was more interested than I in the strange metal carafe and its contents, or perhaps my greater interest in the other specimens caused me temporarily to forget the thing. At all events, I gave it no further thought, and during the rest of the day and the evening I was busy preparing, studying and labelling my specimens. Not until the next day at breakfast was it mentioned. Then, with a peculiar glance at me, Harris asked: "Remember that metal vessel you found yesterday?"

I nodded. "Been doing anything with it?" I inquired.

"More than you'd guess," he replied. "I've been working on it most of the time since we got back here yesterday."

"Well, what did you find?" I asked, helping myself to a luscious grafted mango. "A genie or ice?"

Harris did not smile at my flippancy. "In the first place," he informed me, "I analyzed the metal. It's not what I thought it was—in fact, it's an entirely new and unknown metal. It——"

"What?" I exclaimed suddenly, all attention. "You mean to say it's not an alloy as you thought?"

He shook his head. "I flatter myself I'm as good a chemist and as expert a metallurgist as any living man," he said. "And I'll pledge my reputation that the thing is composed of some metal at present unknown to us. But that's not all. It contains, as I assumed, two lots of material in two separate compartments. But the third compartment is empty."

"Well, what *are* the materials?" I asked him. "Poisons?"

"That I cannot definitely say—as yet," he replied. "But" he added, after a moment's thought, "I'm not sure that your discovery has not paved the way to solving the problem I've been working at and worrying over for the past three years. If I'm not mistaken—and my spectroscope and other tests convince me I'm not—the contents of that flask hold the secret I've been trying to solve. Would you object very much if I should ruin the specimen?"

"It's a darned valuable thing," I reminded him. "But—Oh, the devil; see here, old man. I'm not curious, I'm not asking what you're after. I know it must be something big and if that old brass bottle, or whatever it is, will help you, go to it and rip it apart, melt it down or do anything you please with it. It was on your property anyway and you're welcome to it."

"Thanks!" he cried with more than mere thanks in his tone. "I'll try not to spoil the thing. And—well, I don't like telling my plans until I'm morally certain I can carry them through. But what I have in mind *is* rather 'big' as you put it, and if it works out you'll learn how the old pre-Incans cut their stone and—perhaps—a lot more."

CHAPTER IV

How the Pre-Incans Cut Stone

I HAD been with Harris six weeks when we found the metal vessel and it was not until ten days later that he again referred to it. Often, during that time, I had wondered what he was doing—for he was buried in his laboratory from morning until night nearly every day—but I understood him well enough by this time to know there was no use in asking him questions. When he was ready to announce anything of interest he would do so.

Then one day, without the slightest reason—for the conversation had been of totally different matters—he asked abruptly: "Remember that old legend you told me?"

I nodded. "What about it?" I retorted. "Heard another one?"

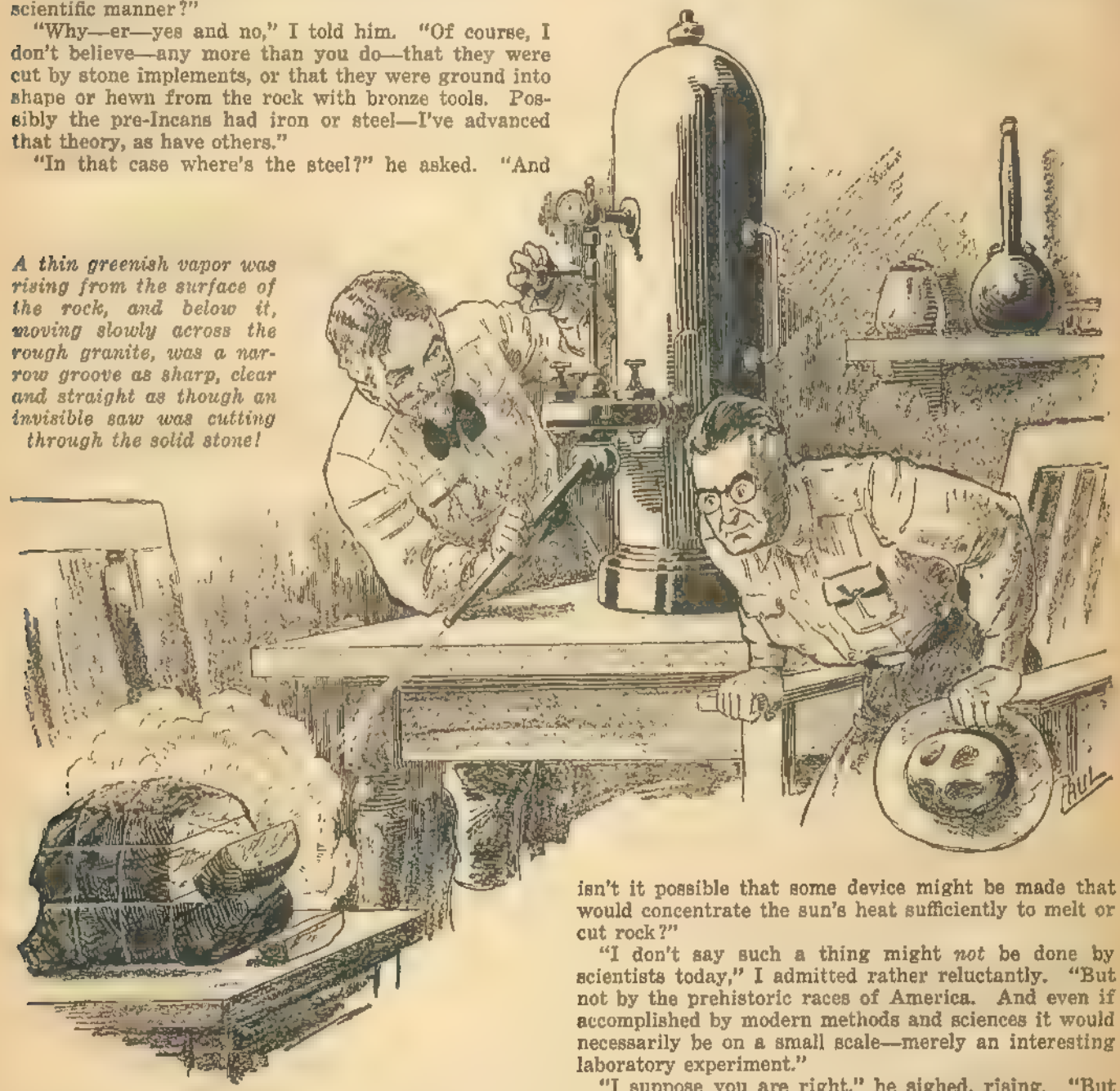
"No-o" he drawled as if measuring his words. "But I'm inclined to think there was a lot more truth than fiction in it."

I laughed. "Still thinking of that myth, eh!" I exclaimed. "Well, what's on your mind now?"

"Have you ever really given much thought to how those stones were cut?" he asked, ignoring my question. "I mean," he hastened to explain, "have you set down all possible theories and then checked off the fors and againsts each? Have you tackled it in a really scientific manner?"

"Why—er—yes and no," I told him. "Of course, I don't believe—any more than you do—that they were cut by stone implements, or that they were ground into shape or hewn from the rock with bronze tools. Possibly the pre-Incans had iron or steel—I've advanced that theory, as have others."

"In that case where's the steel?" he asked. "And



A thin greenish vapor was rising from the surface of the rock, and below it, moving slowly across the rough granite, was a narrow groove as sharp, clear and straight as though an invisible saw was cutting through the solid stone!

even if you say—as you will—that it's disappeared, has been lost by corrosion through thousands of years—how long would it take men to cut such gigantic stones in such numbers as are used in any one of the thousands of walls and buildings in Peru? And how long would it take a horde of men to cut that archway, even with steel tools, by hand? With modern machine-drills it would be a tremendous undertaking—requiring years of steady work. No, my friend, you'll have to think up a better theory than that."

"Well," I said sarcastically, "I once met a man in Bolivia, who claimed to have solved the problem. He said the pre-Incas never cut the stones, but cast them. Knew where there was molten rock and ran it into moulds."

"Well, I've had a theory in my head for a long time," he said, "not precisely what you think, however, and your legend of the old king and how he called on the Sun-God and used the latter's fire rather bore my theory out. If you can burn wood, can even melt metal by concentrating the rays of the sun through a lens, isn't it possible that some device might be made that would concentrate the sun's heat sufficiently to melt or cut rock?"

"I don't say such a thing might *not* be done by scientists today," I admitted rather reluctantly. "But not by the prehistoric races of America. And even if accomplished by modern methods and sciences it would necessarily be on a small scale—merely an interesting laboratory experiment."

"I suppose you are right," he sighed, rising. "But if you're not too busy I'd like to have you come over to the laboratory. I've been working on that metal flask you dug up, and I think you'll be interested in the results."

Of course I became interested at once and accompanied him to the work-shops, where he unlocked a stout door and led the way into a small room adjoining the laboratory. I had expected to see the flask—probably cut in two or taken apart—together with its contents, but as I glanced about I failed to see the thing anywhere. The room contained a couple of chairs, a low stand on which was a brass cylinder equipped with

valves and a sort of miniature hose nozzle, and a strong wooden trestle on which rested a good sized chunk of rough, irregular granite.

"Have a seat and make yourself comfortable," Harris invited, indicating a chair as he stepped to the brass cylinder.

I seated myself and watched him curiously as he adjusted the valves and moved the nozzle, which I now saw was attached by means of a universal joint that permitted it to swing in any direction. What he was up to, I could not guess, but I knew he must have some interesting demonstration to show me, and I knew him too well to ask for explanations. For the life of me I couldn't see what the cylindrical tank—which looked more like a fire-extinguisher than anything else—had to do with the metal vessel I had found.

Quickly turning the valves, Harris grasped the nozzle and commenced moving it slowly from left to right. Nothing came from it—not even a sound—and wondering when the show was to begin I glanced at the mass of granite a few feet from where Harris stood.

A sharp ejaculation came from my lips, I leaned forward, clutched the arms of the chair, my amazed eyes fixed upon the stone. Was I dreaming? Had Harris hypnotized me? I could not credit my own eyes, could not believe I was in my right senses!

A thin greenish vapor was rising from the surface of the rock, and below it, moving slowly across the rough granite, was a narrow groove as sharp and clear and straight as though an invisible saw was cutting through the solid stone! Unable to utter a sound, my incredulous eyes glued upon the phenomenon before me, I watched the deep scarf move across the rock until it had traversed the entire length of the mass of granite.

WHAT did it mean? How was it done? Before I could frame a question, before I could collect my senses, I saw Harris swing the nozzle and begin moving it in a perpendicular line. Instantly my eyes turned to the rock, and now I saw a second scarf cutting slowly from the top of the stone at right angles to the first. A moment more and the two grooves met and Harris' voice roused me from the semi-trance in which I had been held spellbound.

"And the king summoned the Sun-God and the giants of the sky to cut the stones!" he quoted with a laugh. "See here!"

As he spoke he stepped forward, grasped the upper portion of the granite, and lifted a section of it from the rest! I actually gasped. The rock had been completely severed, as smoothly as though it had been sawed from a block of wood!

"There's the answer to your mystery!" cried Harris triumphantly, as he dropped the piece of stone back into place. "Easy enough when you know how—like everything else! Just have a look and see if you can find any traces of 'fused stone' along those cuts."

"But what—how——?" I stammered, as I bent close and examined the marvel.

"By the same—or at least a very similar method to that used by the pre-Incas," he stated. "I've had a theory, a suspicion, for three years, and have been working and experimenting on that line. But it wasn't until you came upon that metal flask—by the way I've learned the secret of the metal alloy—that I obtained any really worth-while results. That flask, my friend, was one of the gadgets the old fellows used. I don't imagine there were many of them knocking about, and this one still contained the materials that were essential to success and that had baffled me. I——"

"But I don't understand it—yet." I broke in. "How was it done? What has that cylinder to do with it?"

"Everything," he replied. "That tank is merely an enlarged version of your flask. The nozzle represents the neck of the old jar and the valves are modern conveniences to control the operation. I expect the old Peruvians used up the contents of their flasks each time and had to make new ones.

"As to how it was done," he continued, "you saw for yourself. All that is necessary is to turn on the jet, move it along the surface of the stone and the trick's done. See here!"

As he spoke he again grasped the nozzle, adjusted the valves, and before my still incredulous and amazed eyes he cut the granite into various forms. He might have been using a jig-saw on a piece of pine, as far as results were concerned. Even then I could not force myself to believe I was not suffering from some hallucination. I felt as if at any moment I would wake up and find it all a wild dream.

But Harris was again speaking as he lifted and examined the circular, elliptical, octagonal and other shaped blocks he had cut out with his mysterious apparatus. "You see," he said, as he ran an exploring finger along a surface of the cut stone, "it's a good deal like the acetylene torch in its results. It——"

"But," I objected, "there's no flame, no jet, no glow, not even a sound from the nozzle. How the devil can the thing cut this stone without showing any trace of a jet or flame?"

"I was coming to that," he said, "but you keep interrupting me before I can finish. Not that I blame you"—he hastened to add, "for I can well understand your feelings, your excitement and your incredulity. I felt that same way myself when I first saw the thing work. But about the flame or jet. There is nothing of that sort, for this apparatus differs radically from the acetylene torch. The only resemblance is in the results obtained. But even in that there is a great difference. This doesn't melt or fuse the stone—you very cleverly brought up that argument against the melting theory yourself. No, it causes a disintegration, a chemical or rather, I think, an electronic alteration in the rock. That greenish vapor is, I think, the fumes of various constituents—perhaps mainly pyroxene—being thrown off as new atomic combinations are formed. Perhaps I might compare it to the vapors or fumes that are produced when you treat a mineral with an acid. But——"

"Yes, yes!" I again interrupted impatiently. "But how, man? How? You say it's not heat, not a flame. Do you mean it's some chemical action?"

He shook his head. "You're hopelessly impatient," he declared. "No it's not chemical. For that matter I can place a piece of wood, my hand—for all I know my whole body—between the nozzle and the stone without affecting the results or the organic matter. If you don't believe that, just watch me."

Before I could expostulate, he had again turned on the valves, and though his hand was pressed over the opening in the nozzle, I saw the stone once more being cut (sawed is a better term) as marvelously as before.

I sank back in my chair, spent, exhausted, utterly limp with the nerve-tension, the excitement of the whole incredible affair.

Harris was grinning from ear to ear. "No wonder the natives thought the old king called on the Sun-God and the genii of the sky," he cried. "And you weren't so far off when you suggested the flask might hold a couple of imprisoned genii. Metaphorically speaking it did—it contained the genii that cut the stone. I——"

"I honestly wish," I said, "that you'd drop all that and explain *how* the marvel is accomplished. Just what *does* cut the rock?"

"A ray," he replied. "I thought I'd said so already. I don't know myself just what sort of a ray it is. Pos-

sibly it's just some new form of vibratory wave. But I call it a ray—though for that matter, what's a ray except a vibratory wave—and tentatively I've called it the Inti-ray in honor of the old chap who—according to the fable—called on Inti the Sun-God for help. You see I've been so busy getting the thing to work, I haven't had time to work out the peculiarities of the ray itself—its vibratory rate, its properties, etc. I——"

"But I thought you said the contents of the old flask solved the problem? How the deuce could anything in that flask help you to produce an entirely new ray? I suppose you'll be telling me next that there was some electrical or magnetic or radio machine in the thing."

Harris smiled. "No, not that," he assured me, as though I'd been in earnest. "You see this ray—like a lot of others—is produced by some complex chemical reaction—some sort of decomposition, though no doubt the ray itself is an electric, a magnetic or an electronic phenomenon. In a way—well, perhaps I can make it clearer to you by comparing it to the current generated by a battery. In the cell—whether dry or wet—we have a chemical action, but the resultant current is *not* chemical. And I might further point out that by passing an electrical current through many substances, a chemical change is produced. Frankly, I don't believe I'd ever have succeeded if it hadn't been for the old flask that luckily contained two chemical compounds that were essential. "And—" he laughed heartily— "the funny part of it is, I'd had both those chemicals under my hands all along and had never thought to test them."

"What made you think the stuff in the jar had anything to do with the ray or the stone-cutting?" I asked him. "How did you know they were not poisons or—well, stuff used in ceremonies, for example?"

"By deduction and elimination coupled with plain logic and a fairly comprehensive knowledge of chemistry, plus a 'hunch'," he replied. "Having the solving of the problem of stone continually on my mind, everything new or inexplicable or puzzling became, subconsciously of course, associated with the problem. It's a habit I possess, and it has more than once helped me to solve seemingly insoluble problems in the past. You see one never knows when one may come upon the key to a puzzle. I work like a super-detective of fiction. Everything regarding which there is any question appears to me as a possible clue. And your flask came under that category. It was new, puzzling, mysterious. Neither of us could think up any reason for the thing, any use to which it might have been put. Consequently, I reasoned, it must have been designed for some purpose of which we were both ignorant. And naturally, first and foremost to my mind, came the stone-cutting. Then, when I found it contained some sort of material, I jumped to the conclusion that the material might and probably did have something to do with the same problem. And when I found the metal was different from anything known, I reasoned that it, too, was an essential part of solving the puzzle. Finally, when I got at the contents, I was convinced I was right and having long before theoretically reached conclusions and having reasoned out the soundness of my theory to my own satisfaction, I knew beyond any doubt that I'd found the secret. All I had to do was to construct a better and more efficient tank of the same metal as the flask, fill its compartments with the chemical compounds, subject them to the proper reagent, and—Presto! the thing was done."

"It all sounds quite simple," I said. "But I can't really believe it yet. To think that those old pre-Incans had a knowledge of chemistry and rays! It seems incredible."

"I doubt if they did," declared Harris. "In all probability they hit upon this thing by accident. Such a thing is perfectly reasonable."

"But what *were* the chemicals and what sort of metal was used in making that flask?" I asked him.

"The metal was an alloy of gold and lead," he replied. "At first I mistook it for a new metal, but I soon discovered my mistake. The chemicals—well, I don't suppose you'd understand if I gave you their formulae, but both are of the radioactive group of metallic salts. One is derived from vanadate of lead, the other from a complex mercury ore that is quite common in Peru, especially at high altitudes. And the reagent is—well, spring water!" Then, seeing my expression of incredulity, he added: "But not common everyday spring water. It's a highly mineralized water with slight radioactive properties and I don't doubt you've imbibed many quarts of it—it's widely used in Peru."

I BREATHED a deep, long breath, almost a sigh. "No wonder the pre-Incans could do marvels in stone cutting," I observed. "But why do you suppose the secret was lost? Why wasn't it handed down? And—good heaven, Harris—I hadn't thought of it before; but your discovery will revolutionize the world! It will do away with rock-drills, tunnelling machines, dynamite—a thousand and one machines and devices for cutting, drilling and boring rock! And—by Jove! No wonder the Chavins could hew forts and buildings out of mountain sides. No wonder the old fellows here could cut that arch, that Huaro-Yana. It must have been mere child's play."

"I expect it was—for them," he agreed. "But I'm afraid you're over enthusiastic and optimistic as regards the benefits that will accrue to the modern world owing to the discovery of how the pre-Incans cut their stones. You see, as far as known, there is not enough of these mineral salts in the world to enable anyone to use the method on a commercial scale. Possibly that's why the pre-Incas lost the art and failed to hand it down—probably used up most of the material and didn't know where there was more. Possibly the old tale of devils may be allegorical of that fact."

"Well, you've solved the biggest mystery of the ancient races of America," I said. "And that's enough to satisfy anyone. Now you've explained the thing, it strikes me as rather remarkable that no one else ever hit upon your theory. But——"

"I don't agree with you," he interrupted. "I haven't solved the mystery any more than you have. If you hadn't dug up that old flask, I'd be no nearer proving my theory than ever. And someone has always got to be the first to think up some new theory. But I'm not done yet. I want to learn all there is to be known about that Inti-ray, as I call it, and I want to test the thing on a big scale—I want to try cutting a block of the solid mountain side."

CHAPTER V

The Invisible Inti-ray

I COULDN'T blame Harris for wanting to try out his discovery on a big scale, as he put it. I could quite appreciate his desire to see the invisible ray saw through the solid mountain side and cut a mass of granite or diorite, weighing thirty or forty tons, from the mother rock. But Harris had even more ambitious plans. A few days after his amazing demonstration he informed me that he had calculated the amount of materials required to cut a definite amount of stone, and that he had enough or could secure enough from a deposit not far away, to enable him to do some cutting on a gigantic scale.

"Do you know what I plan to do?" he asked.

I shook my head. "Give it up," I said. "Cut a tunnel through the mountain so you don't have to come at breakneck speed down that grade? That would be to some purpose."

He grinned. "Not quite as big a thing as that," he assured me. "No, I'm going to duplicate that arch—the Huaro-Yana. Not on quite such a big scale, however. You see that basalt dyke to the west? Well, I'm going to cut—or at least try to cut—an arch through that!"

"But," I asked him, "why waste so much time and material on doing that? Isn't there anything of real use that you can accomplish with your apparatus? Why throw away all that material just for the sake of showing what you can do?"

"It won't be altogether a waste," he declared. "It will let the afternoon sun shine through—think how glorious it will be to see the sunset through the arch?—and besides, there's a second lovely plateau beyond that dyke. I can increase my property here. And somehow it appeals to my imagination—the idea of hewing a way through a vast mass of solid rock to reach a spot no man has ever trod before."

That was Harris all over—a queer combination of the romantic adventurer, the dreamer, poet and artist with the practical scientist and with his love of the spectacular fighting against his detestation of notoriety.

But the strange kink in Harris' character or mentality was that it made no difference to him if nobody was aware of what he had done. His pleasure, his entire satisfaction lay in the doing—in the accomplishment. It was in the *empresa* as the Spaniards say—in the enterprise—that he gloried, and the more difficult a thing was the more he liked it. To solve the insoluble, to explain the inexplicable was as the wine of life to him.

Whether the world—or even fellow scientists—ever heard of his triumphs didn't interest him. Having solved the mystery of the pre-Incan stone work he merely wanted to do as much as the pre-Incans, and he frankly told me he had no intention of publishing an account of his discovery, although I was welcome to do so, provided I didn't give him all the credit.

The idea of bursting through a seemingly impassable barrier to reach a hitherto unknown spot was to him an even greater achievement than the amazing discovery he had made. In some ways he was still a boy, and just as a boy takes immeasurable delight in navigating a mill-pond on a home-made raft and landing on the opposite shore, so Harris would find inexpressible satisfaction in cutting through that forbidding dyke of basalt to reach the little plateau that lay beyond. There was nothing marvelous, strange nor particularly desirable there. From the cliff tops one could gaze down and see every detail of the place. But neither is there anything new, strange nor unknown about the opposite side of the mill-pond. And—well, I might as well admit it—I was a little that way myself and was just about as enthusiastic at heart as was Harris. Besides I was rather curious to learn if Harris' apparatus could accomplish the feat.

But to my surprise he took no steps to carry out his plan. For several days he devoted all his time to painting, and apparently completely forgot the rock-cutting ray, the experiments and the basalt dyke. To my surprise the picture turned out to be a very striking view of the Huaro-Yana mesa as it must have appeared in the days of the pre-Incans.

With consummate skill and fidelity and accuracy that showed what a really deep knowledge of the subject he possessed, he had restored the ancient buildings and had peopled the scene with men and women dressed as the mummies I had found, taught us that the inhabitants of Huaro-Yana had dressed.

There towered the great black arch with its garrison of warriors upon its summit. There rose the vast temple with its magnificent sculptures and bright-colored frescoes. There were the palaces, the houses, the Inti-Huatana, the priests winding in a procession up the temple stairs. But most prominent of all, most vividly portrayed, was the group in the foreground of the painting. There, before a mass of the living granite, stood a number of men armed with bars, wedges and rollers, while in their midst a superior-looking fellow held a vessel of gleaming polished metal and was cutting the rock—as I had seen Harris do—by means of the invisible Inti-ray. The picture was, in fact, a marvelous revisualization of Huaro-Yana to illustrate—far more clearly than was possible by words—the manner in which the pre-Incan inhabitants performed their seemingly miraculous feats.

It was by far the finest thing Harris had done, his masterpiece, and I complimented him unsparingly upon it.

"I don't know why I did it," he said with a sheepish grin. "It just came into my head and had to be finished before I could do anything else. You're welcome to it, old man. I don't believe it would interest anyone else. But it may serve as a sort of record some day."

Then, with the inspiration off his mind, Harris again vanished in the seclusion of his laboratory and workshops. From time to time, as we met at meal times or in the evenings, he'd drop a hint or a few words in regard to his investigations and work. Once he announced that he was busy studying the new ray. "It's an amazing thing," he told me. "As nearly as I can work it out, it's related to the gravitational ray. I——"

"Hold on!" I broke in. "What do you mean by 'gravitational ray'? I've always understood gravitation was like a magnetic phenomenon."

Harris uttered an impatient ejaculation. "You're out of date," he informed me. "Macdonald proved the existence of the gravitational ray years ago. And what's magnetism but the effect of certain rays? However, as I was about to explain, this Inti-ray is the most remarkable ray I've ever studied. It has a speed of almost three times that of light rays and it's as rectilinear as the X-ray. It penetrates practically all metals—even lead—as well as all organic substances on which I've tested it, without injuring them, but minerals are resistants and the alloy of gold and lead is impenetrable. It lies somewhere between my Z-ray and the infra-red, and it produces a cold, pale-greenish fluorescence in combination with certain substances. Do you know I have great hopes of being able to accomplish some astonishing results when I know more about its peculiarities and the laws that govern it?"

"Sounds interesting," I commented, "but as I don't know anything whatever about rays—except light and heat and sound rays, and mighty little about them—I'll have to take your word for the details. But there's one thing I'd like to ask: How can it penetrate certain substances without injuring or affecting them and yet cut that rock?"

"Simple enough," he declared. "Heat rays penetrate certain things—metals, cloth, etc—even glass, but not asbestos. Light rays penetrate glass, paper, water, various materials, but not metals. It's the same with electro-magnetic, sound and all other rays—even X-rays that are held back by lead. And as far as cutting the stone is concerned, that, as I have told you, is a chemical or electronic decomposition."

"Well, if you accomplish anything more astonishing than that, you're a magician and not a scientist," I told him.

A few days after this conversation, Harris announced that he was leaving Huaro-Yana for a few days—going after some of the minerals he needed—and told me to make myself at home during his absence.

"As soon as I return we'll be ready for the big test," he declared. "I have everything else prepared—the tanks and all the rest of the apparatus."

INSTEAD of going by his car as I had expected, he set out afoot with a string of llamas and several of his Indians, and took a route to the south, in the opposite direction from Tucin. I was surprised to find how much I missed Harris' company. Although of late we had seen but little of each other, we did meet at meal times and in the evenings. Now, with no one to talk with and alone in the house, I had hard work to shake off the inexplicable and ridiculous sensations I have already mentioned.

At any rate I was heartily thankful when Harris returned with his llamas laden with sacks of the ores he required. He was worn, haggard, brown and weary, for he had had a long, hard journey over the highest ridges of the Andes, but he was in high spirits and announced that he had located a large deposit of the minerals—enough, he declared, to "cut fifty arches like the Huaro-Yana."

Evidently, too, his brain had been working overtime on theories and problems connected with the newly discovered ray and its properties and possibilities, for he hinted—mysteriously—at a new scheme he had evolved by which, if successful, he would astound the entire world.

"But first the stone-cutting," he declared. "I don't know why it is so but the thing has got me going, as the saying is. Anyhow I can't settle myself down to work out the other—and the bigger thing—until I've cut a hole through that dyke. And"—with a sigh—"we'll get at that in a couple of days more."

CHAPTER VI

A Pre-Incan Scene Materializes

HARRIS kept his promise. Two days after his return he announced that all was in readiness for his great feat. Indians, llamas, even the car, were busily employed in transporting his apparatus from the work-shops to the vicinity of the massive basaltic dyke that rose like a great black wall for fully two hundred feet above the eroded rock at its base.

At a distance of perhaps one hundred yards from the face of the dyke a staging platform was erected, and on this the apparatus was installed. Harris was in his element. He bustled about, directing, giving orders to the Indians, who appeared to regard the whole matter as uncanny and savoring of some impressive magical ceremony about to take place. He worked as hard himself as anybody, yet he took the time to explain this, that or the other to me.

"Have to begin cutting at the top, of course," he replied to one of my questions as to why the tall staging. "If we cut the bottom first, we'd be in a mess. And I've put the platform well back in order to get an almost direct incidence of the rays—don't want them to hit the rock at too great an angle, you see. Besides, there'll be the deuce of a lot of fumes generated, and they may be poisonous or injurious."

"But how are you going to get the pieces of rock out after you cut them?" I asked him.

"I've planned for that," he assured me. "I'm going to cut wide horizontal grooves and run them in at an angle. Then the weight of the sections as they are cut will break the masses free and they'll slide out of their own accord."

"Maybe," I replied, "but if one or more happen to jam you'll have some job on your hands."

"If necessary, I'll cut the darned thing into pieces so small we can pull 'em out with our fingers," he cried impatiently. "Anyhow, tomorrow we'll know whether it'll work or not."

Naturally we were keyed up and filled with suppressed excitement when, on the following day, we set out to make the assault upon the dyke. Even the Indians, usually so repressed in their emotions, were excited, and I noticed that they had donned their best dance or ceremonial garments, as if about to take part in some great religious celebration.

As we reached the vicinity of the platform, Harris warned the Indians not to stand near the dyke, but to keep to the rear of the staging. Then, noticing that a number of llamas were grazing on the scanty herbiage about the base of the dyke, he called to some of the men to remove them. As they were doing so he abruptly changed his mind, and shouted to the herders to tether two of the beasts midway between the dyke and the staging.

"What's the idea?" I asked him.

"Test of the fumes," he replied curtly. "I want to be sure whether they are injurious or not."

"Rather hard on the llamas," I observed. "Haven't you tested the stuff in your laboratory?"

He appeared to hesitate and seemed a bit put out. "To tell the truth, I have not," he admitted. "I've meant to, but there have been so many other things of more importance that I didn't get around to it. But I haven't felt any ill effects; in such small quantities as were in the laboratory I wouldn't expect to. But the fumes are heavier than air, so we're safe up here, and the llamas down below will be a certain test. Now for the great work!"

As Harris spoke he stepped forward, adjusted the valves just as I had seen him do in his laboratory, grasped the huge nozzle, that was fitted with handles like the nozzle of a high-pressure fire-hose, and aimed it at the dyke. Never will I forget the scene: The great black rock wall before us, the two shaggy-coated llamas grazing unconcernedly in its shadow, the crowd of Indians, ablaze with color and silver ornaments, standing and squatting, motionless as bronze statues, in a semicircle behind us, gazing with fixed, wondering, expectant faces at the two white men beside the gleaming metal machines, tensely expectant of something, they knew not what; and finally, Harris, standing like a gunner behind the shining golden nozzle and squinting along its barrel, as if about to launch a projectile at the massive dyke. Absolute silence reigned. Not a sound came from the throng of Indians; even the birds and insects seemed to have ceased their chirpings in awe and wonder. Overhead stretched a cloudless sky against which the snow-clad peaks stood out clear as cameos, and far up in the blue vault a condor soared in endless circles.

Suddenly from the scores of Indians a deep, half-terrified sigh arose. Every eye was fixed, wide open, staring, at the face of the dyke. From the black rock a thin greenish vapor curled and drifted, and across the surface a broad, deep groove was slowly forming.

No wonder the Indians were frightened, filled with superstitious dread. It was uncanny, terrifying in its wonder. Even I who had seen the amazing demonstration in the laboratory, who had known what to expect, found myself gazing with bated breath and wide eyes at the ever-forming, ever-widening cut in the solid rock, that was now partly veiled in the wavering, drifting,

tenuous fumes. Only Harris remained unmoved, unaffected. Steadily, calmly, he moved the great nozzle from left to right, up and down, until several hundred square feet of the dyke's surface was checkered with the deep, straight cuts his invisible, mysterious ray had gouged into the basalt. By this time the vapor had spread until it formed a fog-like screen over the lower portion of the dyke, and lay in wisps like mist above the nearby ground. One wisp half concealed the llama nearest to the dyke, but the creature appeared to give no heed to it, and continued to graze as unconcernedly as though the fumes were ordinary fog. Harris straightened up, turned off the valves and stretched himself.

"Gosh, I've got a crick in my back," he said, and somehow his matter-of-fact tones, his commonplace remark, seemed strangely incongruous and out of place in the presence of such a marvel as he had produced.

"Well, we've made a good beginning," he exclaimed, "but I 'll have to find some way of getting rid of those darned fumes—they hide the rock so I can't see what I'm doing. Guess I'll have to rig up a blower or a suction machine of some sort. At this rate, it'll take a month to cut a hole in that dyke. Anyhow, we know the fumes are harmless—those llamas don't mind 'em."

I glanced at the Indians. Men, women and children were gazing at Harris as if he were a deity—as no doubt they felt he was. I touched his arm. "Look at the Indians," I said.

He turned, and instantly every Indian bobbed his head until his forehead touched the ground. "Darned

It had all happened in an instant. . . . It had been similar but not the same and . . . I shivered at the thought . . . the figures we had seen so vividly had lived, had moved! . . . Utterly incredible, it seemed, impossible of belief!

idiots!" ejaculated Harris. "Anyone would think I was their high-priest."

"No, their king—and God," I corrected him. "They remember their old legend and in you they see their mythical ruler summoning the Sun-God to aid you with his 'fire' to cut the rocks. I haven't any doubt they expect to see the 'sky-giants' materialize at any moment and pull the cut rocks out of the dyke. You see, they still believe in the old fable."

"So do I," was Harris' astounding declaration. "Well, here goes again!"

As he spoke he once more opened the valves, seized the nozzle and once more proceeded to cut deep scarfs across the basalt wall. I could not take my eyes from the rock. It seemed too marvelous, too impossible, too incredible to be real, and the effect of unreality in the feat was increased by the ever-spreading, greenish vapor that gave one the impression that the rock wall was visionary, the sort of thing one sees in that brief interval, twixt sleeping and waking, a hazy, intangible dream—creation that might vanish utterly at any instant.

But the Indians were real enough, the llamas were real, Harris and his shining metal apparatus were real, and as from time to time the fumes parted with some breath of wind, the black wall loomed as solid and as real as ever.

Then, as I gazed, unable to withdraw my eyes from the dyke and the ever-increasing grooves being cut across its face, I started, stared transfixed. In the centre of the drifting vapor a pale, luminous spot had appeared, a diffused circular patch of light like the sun shining through dense fog. What did it mean? What new phenomenon was this?

Tense, with throbbing pulses, I focused my wondering eyes upon the spot. The light was spreading, it seemed to emanate from the rock hidden behind the misty veil. In itself it was nothing startling, nothing uncanny, yet I felt an involuntary shudder and a haunting unreasonable impression that some extraordinary event was about to take place.

At the same instant the thing happened. It was sudden, instantaneous. It seemed to spring in a blaze from the depths of the vapor or from the rock wall behind it. A blaze of light, of a multitude of colors, of vivid hues swirling, gyrating in an ever-widening circle. I can think of nothing with which to compare it save a kaleidoscope. One instant there was a multi-pointed star, the next a rosette, the next it had been transformed into an octagon, a pentagon, a series of concentric rings.

I GRASPED Harris' arm spasmodically, pointing, speechless. But he, too, had seen the thing. He was gazing at it as wide-eyed, as unnerved, as shaking as myself. The Indians, too, had seen it. Half-consciously I heard their deep sigh of terror, of awe, and I knew, though I could not turn my head, could not tear my eyes from the amazing phenomenon before me, that they were gazing at it, fairly chattering with deadly fear. A great relief swept over me, for if Harris saw it, if the Indians saw it, then it was no illusion, no hallucination of my overstrained senses.

Now the thing had changed. The radiant colors, whirling around a fixed point, seemed to slow down. Luminous spirals, points of color, darker spots moved, gyrated, vanished. Then, like one of those trick moving pictures in which various dismembered portions of a thing rush into place upon a screen, the detached bits of color, of light and shade, appeared to join, to blend, until a vague, floating picture seemed to form behind the hazy veil of vapor. Indistinct, indistinguishable it hung there, blurred like a poorly focussed stereopticon view. Then, gradually, as we stared silent, bereft of speech and motion, certain features became clearer, more pronounced. Outlines took form, colors became intensified, and with a sudden burst of light, a dazzling picture was revealed, a picture as clear and sharp as if painted upon the surface of the rock.

A gasp of utter amazement escaped from my lips. I felt Harris start and give vent to a sharp ejaculation. The picture so magically revealed before was almost a replica of Harris' painting. There were the same temples, the same palaces, the same great arch. There in the foreground was the group of men with one of their number cutting the rock. But—before our eyes, utterly incredible as it seemed, impossible of belief, the figures moved, breathed—they were alive!

It had all happened in an instant. I doubt if five seconds had elapsed between the time I first noticed the struggling circle of light and the completion of that supernatural scene. And scarcely had the picture appeared from out the veil of greenish mist, when it vanished. The vapor drifted apart, the black basalt again stood revealed, and where the utterly impossible picture had been was the solid surface of the dyke.

Speechless I stared at Harris. Dumbly he gazed at me. What had happened? How had his paintings, half a mile distant and in his house, been reflected upon the wall of rock? These were the questions that filled our minds. Yet I knew, Harris knew, that the vision had *not* been a reflection of his painting. It had been similar but not the same and—I shivered at the thought—the figures we had seen so vividly had lived, had moved!

I felt as if I had gone suddenly mad. I wondered if it were not all a form of my insanity—if I were not imagining that Harris and the Indians had seen the vision. I felt like screaming, like giving way to hysterics.

And then suddenly Harris seemed to go mad. He jumped into the air, he shouted, yelled, danced, threw his hat violently upon the platform, pounded me on the back, jerked me by the arm. Horror, pity, fear of Harris' mental state drove all my own worries, my fears of my own sanity from my mind. Harris *must* be insane. His overtaxed brain must have given way. Evidently the Indians felt the same way. With wild, terrified cries they were rushing off in every direction. Only the tethered llamas remained calm, placidly chewing their cuds.

Presently Harris dropped, exhausted, on the platform. "Success at last!" he panted. "Triumph! It's wonderful! Marvelous! Incredible! And by accident, by chance! The dream of my life come true! The impossible accomplished!"

With a tremendous effort I controlled myself, strove to speak calmly, quietly, for fear any trace of my excitement might again send him into a fit of madness.

"Yes, yes," I said soothingly. "Of course it was wonderful, everything you say. And of course I cannot understand how your painting seemed to appear upon the rock here."

Harris leaped to his feet, wild-eyed, apparently beside himself.

"Painting!" he almost yelled. "Painting, indeed! What you saw—what I saw, was real—the actual happening! Don't you understand? Can't you guess? Good God man, we've looked into the past. We've brought back things that happened three—five—no one knows how many thousands of years ago! And the ray did it, the ray brought them back from space! It's what I've dreamed of doing, of trying to do, for years. It's the most wonderful, the most astounding

and important accomplishment ever effected. I'm staggered at its possibilities. But this was accident—pure chance! I must improve it, learn the secret, develop it. Come, there's no time to be lost!"

Forgetting everything else, the apparatus, the rock-cutting, Harris hurried from the platform, fairly dragging me with him, and actually raced toward his laboratory. But before we reached the buildings, he began to calm down.

"You must think me mad," he exclaimed with a laugh. "I wouldn't blame you if you did. I——"

"I'm not so sure we're not both mad," I replied, interrupting the words. "If we're not, how could we both have seen that—that vision or picture, or whatever it was?"

"Two people never go mad at the same instant and in the same way," he reminded me. "We both saw the same thing at the same time—so did the Indians. Therefore what we saw was there. And neither you nor I believe in visions, spirits, ghosts or the supernatural. Hence the thing was natural—the result of certain laws and conditions. But I knew that the moment I saw it—you see I had the advantage of you. I almost expected something of the sort to materialize. I——"

"Look here!" I cried impatiently. "You're talking in riddles and contradicting your own words. For Heaven's sake, get down to concrete facts and talk sense. Tell me what you expected, why and what the whole incredible thing means."

"When I said I rather expected the thing, I was speaking more or less figuratively," he began. "I'd been working, puzzling along these lines for years and I'd pretty well come to the conclusion that the new Inti-ray might hold the secret that had escaped me all along. So I expected, and hoped, that some development, some property, demonstrated in using the ray, might convince me it was what I sought. But, excuse me, old man, I'm getting the cart before the horse again. I keep forgetting you are in the dark. I must begin at the beginning to make you understand. But first about that—er, well—picture we saw in the fumes. As I said before, it was no picture; it was actuality. You don't get what I mean, but it's plain enough to me, and will be to you in a moment. You thought, perhaps for a brief instant, that it was a reproduction of the picture I painted. Why?"

"Naturally I thought so—at first," I told him. "It was the same thing—temple, palaces, arch—even the costumes and people. Only——"

"EXACTLY!" he exclaimed, not waiting for me to finish. "Because the same scene was reproduced, my painting immediately occurred to you, as I confess it did to me. But why shouldn't there be a resemblance? The arch is here, the temple, palaces—everything. I simply restored them, as I did the people, the costumes, the occupations. And"—he chuckled—"I happened to make a darned good job of it. That's a credit to you, too, old man! You told me how the things should be, you know, so you have the satisfaction of knowing your archeological knowledge was true and your deductions correct. Still, there were a lot of details wrong. The high-priest had a different robe and headdress from the one I painted. The columns of the temple were green, not red; and the palace façade was blue instead of yellow. And there were rope-ladders leading to the top of the Huaro-Yana. And another thing—the chap holding the metal flask and using the ray. He was on the left, not on the right like mine, and farther away. And—I noticed that particularly, he had a spout on the neck of the flask—a sort of nozzle. And——"

CHAPTER VII

Harris Explains His Theory

I DID not avail myself of Harris' permission to try my hand at cutting the dyke with his ray machine. I didn't relish the idea of standing there alone and perhaps evoking another of those startling scenes from the past, and Harris' last cautionary words regarding the order of opening and closing the valves had hinted of danger in monkeying with the thing. But I was curious to examine the results of his operations, so I made my way to the big dyke. Harris had been right in his calculations—as he seemed always to be right in whatever he undertook—and I found that two great masses of the rock had broken free and had dropped to the ground at the foot of the cliff. They were about twelve feet in length by ten feet wide and four feet in thickness. The ends, where they had broken free by their weight, were rough and crystalline, but their four surfaces, that had been cut by the ray, were as smooth and almost as even as though they had been planed off.

A great cavity in the dyke marked the spot whence they had slipped out free, and I realized that if Harris had continued at the work, a few hours would have sufficed to have cut an opening completely through the wall of solid rock. I then made a careful examination of the surface of the dyke where, as nearly as I could judge, the miraculous picture or vision or whatever it was, had appeared. I could detect no peculiarities, no differences in the basalt at this spot, and in order to be sure that I had made no mistake in the location I again climbed upon the platform and tried to visualize the scene. And when, feeling sure of myself, I calculated the size of the scene that had appeared so mysteriously, I found that, as Harris had said, the human figures we had seen in the fumes had been fully life-size. But with that commonplace, prosaic rock before me, it was difficult to believe that the thing had ever occurred, that it was not all a dream. Still, there was the platform with the ray machine upon it; there were the deep grooves Harris had cut in the face of the dyke; and there were the great blocks of stone that had fallen from it. No, it had been no dream, and yet, try as I might, I could not force myself to believe in Harris' explanation of what we had so clearly seen.

For a couple of days thereafter nothing worth recording occurred. My mind still dwelt upon the visionary scene we had witnessed, but by dint of hard work and by keeping my brain occupied by writing up my archeological notes, I kept the other matter submerged. And Harris made no comments in regard to his work except to report that all was progressing as well as could be expected. On the third day, however, he became more communicative and informed me that he had at last established certain facts, although, he admitted, he did not himself know the precise reasons for them. "The fumes serve as a rectifier or transformer," he said. "The Inti-rays, when passed through the fumes, become altered to visible light-rays or perhaps they produce effects upon the fumes that result in the reflection of light-rays in such a manner as to render the Inti-rays visible."

I BEGAN to understand, to grasp his amazing theory, and to realize how reasonable, how plausible were his deductions. As he said, was the materialization of a scene from the past really any more remarkable than the materialization of a sound from a multitude of radio waves? For that matter, wasn't it, in a way, the same thing as television, with slight variations and on

a larger scale? Views, scenes in Europe were transmitted every day to America and *vice versa*. Anyone could "tune in" and gaze at some distant spot and could see the living, moving men and women on their screen. And though the interval between the actual happening and the reception of the picture was infinitesimal, still there *was* an interval and, strictly and scientifically speaking, the person viewing the transmitted picture was looking at a scene that had occurred in the past—even though the past was but the fraction of a second distant. As far as I could see, about the only real difference between such a feat and the seemingly miraculous feat Harris suggested, was the difference in distance and time. So it was with an entirely altered mental attitude that I listened to Harris' next words.

"The great trouble," he observed, "will be to 'tune in' and secure clear, distinct pictures. Until I get the hang of the thing, I'm afraid there'll be a good deal of interference, and I haven't the most remote idea of how to bring in the views in their regular sequence. I'll have to fish around in the dark, so to say, trusting to pick up a piece here, another there, and then, by carefully noting the conditions and correlating the results, I think we'll be able to get somewhere.

"That's where I count on you, old man. You'll be able—or should be able—to determine the sequence of events. But the real thing I'm after isn't the record of things here. That will interest you no doubt, and it will enable you to settle many mooted questions of archeology. But what I'm trying to get, what I've had in mind for years, are views of the planets, or the planet, where these impressions are recorded. Think what that will mean if I succeed! We'll be able to see the details, the vegetation, even the life, if there is any!"

"Fine!" I commented. "But I'm afraid, Harris, that you'll have just as hard work making people believe you have accomplished that as I will have in convincing my fellow archeologists that I possess first-hand, irrefutable knowledge of the life of the pre-Incans. It will all sound like the wildest sort of a fairy-tale to the rest of the world."

"No it won't," he declared. "Once I get the thing under perfect control I'll demonstrate it in all the great scientific centres. You don't suppose I'll stay here and look at one spot in the universe, do you?"

"Judging from some of your statements I should not be surprised if you found the thing didn't succeed elsewhere," I said.

"I think we'll have to begin just where we left off," Harris announced. "I'm working in the dark more or less and while I hope eventually to simplify matters, at present I know of no way of bringing in a scene other than by turning the ray on the basalt and producing the fumes."

"Rather inconvenient if you carry out your plan and demonstrate the thing elsewhere," I observed. "It won't be the easiest thing in the world to carry a basaltic dyke from place to place to serve as a screen. And you'd have to provide a lot of them—they'd be cut into bits and destroyed after a few demonstrations!"

"Oh, dry up and stop your nonsense!" cried Harris with a good-natured grin. "Here," he continued, with something in the manner of a professor giving a lecture to his class, "is a special camera. My idea is to take motion-pictures—in colors of course—of the whole thing, the rock-cutting, the fumes, the views we obtain—if we do obtain them. Then we'll have a record no one can question. I might have used an ordinary camera, but this is my own invention and is far superior. It takes the pictures at the rate of 25 per second and reproduces natural colors perfectly. This"—turning to the projector-like device—"is a combination revolving mirror and camera. You see a motion-picture, when viewed with a rotating mirror, is broken up into separate images, whereas an actual scene is not. I——"

"Good Lord, you don't suspect the vision was a movie, do you?" I exclaimed.

"No, but one never can tell," said Harris. "How do we know that some being on some distant planet may not be projecting some unknown form of motion-picture on the cliff before us? How——"

"Be yourself Harris!" I cried. "That's an absurdly impossible idea if ever there was one."

"Why?" he shot back. "I admit it would be impossible by means of light-rays, but how about the Inti-rays or other unknown rays? For all we know there may be beings on Mars, on Venus, on any planet as much beyond us in scientific knowledge and attainments as we are beyond the apes. And if so they may have learned—ages ago, how to take photographic views of occurrences here on earth, using Inti-rays or other rays for the purpose. Then when, once more—after a lapse of thousands of years—the Inti-rays were again used here, they may have seen their opportunity, and in an effort to communicate with us, they may have thrown the pictures back on the vapor-screen, imagining, of course that we possess enough intelligence to understand. For that matter they may have assumed that we are the pre-Incans. A few thousand years to them may be no more than as many hours or minutes to us. But we'll be certain when we see the records made by the revolving mirror."

I shrugged my shoulders hopelessly. "It's all so damnably preposterous, I honestly can't draw the line between the impossibility and possibility of anything," I confessed. "But one thing's certain. Unless you succeed in getting a picture, you won't be able to prove or disprove anything."

CHAPTER VIII

Impressions Stored on Eros

ALTHOUGH Harris's initial preparations were precisely the same as when he had started to cut the rock, yet I felt even more excited and tense than on the first occasion. As for the Indians, they were filled with awe, but not knowing what to expect, or whether Harris was merely repeating the strange rites of the first day, they simply stared, awaiting any amazing, magical demonstration that might take place.

Only the tethered llamas were not there, for having clearly demonstrated that the fumes were not injurious to animal life, they were not needed, and were allowed to wander and graze at will.

As before, Harris adjusted the valves, grasped the nozzle and turned the ray upon the great dyke. But this time, as his object was to produce a dense screen of fumes and not to dissect the stone, he adjusted the nozzle to project a wide stream (if I may use the term) upon the rock near its summit. Instantly a broad, shallow groove appeared in the basalt and dense clouds of the greenish vapor began to form. Then, connecting an attachment that he had prepared, which, by means of a small electric motor, moved the nozzle back and forth and up and down, Harris turned to his giant camera, and started the mechanism that exposed the film. Then he sprang to his rotating mirror, set that in motion, and gave his attention to the dials and levers on other instruments, always keeping his eyes fixed upon the fumes that were now rolling, writhing and steadily descending, like a slowly flowing cataract of pale translucent green, over the face of the dyke.

Slowly the minutes passed. Only the clicking of the camera's mechanism, the low hum of the motors, the whirring of hidden mechanism, broke the silence.

With eyes glued to the dense screen of vapor, we watched eagerly but nothing happened. Heavier and heavier became the fumes as the ray cut deeper and ever deeper into the basalt, but no change, no sign of the vision broke the billowing masses of vapor. Then suddenly, when I had given up all hopes, I saw Harris grow rigid, a sharp exclamation escaped him, and once again I saw that dim, faint glow slowly illuminating the green depths of the fumes. Rapidly the light increased, a myriad colors flashed, gyrated, swirled amid the fumes, and then abruptly, as though a misty veil had been torn aside, a marvelous picture was exposed; a scene so vividly real, so deep in its perspective, so glowing with atmosphere and light, that I seemed to be gazing through a window in the rock at some actual view beyond.

Once more I was gazing at Huaro-Yana of the past. There loomed the great black arch; there was the temple with its green columns, the palace with its ornately decorated façade of dull-blue, and there once more were the people—men and women—in the costumes of centuries gone. But this time, no high-priest was leading a procession up the temple stairs, no workmen were lifting the blocks of rock cut by the ray emanating from a metal flask. Instead, the people were in gala dress, they shone with ornaments of burnished silver and gold, their ornate headdresses of feathers flashed in the sun, and all were dancing—weaving back and forth, in and out—to the music of drums and flutes played by musicians in the foreground. So full of motion, so perfect in its rhythm and so realistic in every detail was the vision, that I half-turned my head, striving to catch the music, the cadence of the dance.

I seemed to have been watching the scene for minutes yet—as we knew later—it was less than ten seconds before it began to fade, to grow dim, as though a thin gauze veil had been drawn across it. Then, more rapidly, it blurred, the forms and colors merged, and like a dissolving view it vanished. Before my eyes the masses of green vapor billowed and rolled down the face of the dyke.

A deep half-groan, half-sigh came from the assembled Indians. Harris, with a sharp exclamation, sprang to the camera and swung a switch. Hardly conscious of my surroundings, I stood spellbound, my eyes still fixed upon the spot where the vision had been.

"Wonderful!" gasped Harris, and at his words I came back to earth. "A perfect image! But I can't understand why it vanished—why it didn't continue as long as the ray was operating and the fumes were present. I'll——"

"It may come back," I suggested. "Something may have interrupted it. Don't shut off the machines. Let's wait."

Harris nodded, and silently, with eyes fixed on the eddying mass of vapor, we waited and watched for a reappearance of the miraculous-seeming vision. But nothing appeared. The sun swung towards the west, the shadows lengthened, and at last, satisfied that there would be no second manifestation of the marvel, Harris shut off the apparatus, and slowly the clouds of vapor drifted away.

"Well," he sighed, as he drew a reel of film from the camera and another from the rotating-mirror machine, "we'll have a record of it unless——"

"Unless what?" I queried, half-suspecting what was in his mind.

He laughed, a forced hoarse sort of laugh. "Well, unless—unless the darned thing wasn't there!" he finished.

"Nonsense!" I cried. "We both saw it. The Indians saw it. It was there."

"Hurrah!" he exclaimed joyously. "At last the Doubting Thomas is convinced! Of course it was there and I'll wager any amount I've got a bang-up picture of it."

HARRIS was right. The film, when developed, showed everything—the cloud of vapor, the great groove cut in the cliff, the unfolding of the vision, and every detail of the scene exactly as we had seen it. And Harris was jubilant when, having developed the photographic records of the rotating mirror, the results proved beyond a doubt that the vision we had seen had been no artificially projected picture from some mysterious and incredible cinematograph-like machine on another planet, but an actual happening, as real as though it had been enacted before our eyes, as genuine as though we had been transported into the past for a thousand years or more and had watched living pre-Incans dancing at Huaro-Yana.

Harris, however, was greatly puzzled and perturbed. He was at a total loss. The picture had come and gone exactly as had the first, and he freely admitted that he didn't believe his carefully designed instruments had had any effect upon its appearance. And he didn't attempt to account for the detached view—the single fleeting glimpse—having burst upon the vapor and then vanished.

"If the thing worked right, we'd see a continuous performance," he declared. "There's no reason why we shouldn't see everything that was going on from the time the picture appeared until the ray ceased to function. It ought to continue without interruption all through the afternoon. But instead, we just get one flash, like a snapshot, of what was taking place. However, I've accomplished something. I've got a photographic record to prove the thing, and when I've worked out my spectroscopic and other records, I'll know a lot more about the phenomenon than I do now.

"As a matter of fact I didn't really expect my instruments to help much. As I said, I was working largely by guesswork. But still I *do* think the picture was clearer, sharper than the first time."

The next day we mounted the platform again and repeated the operation of the preceding day, but nothing appeared, and at last, wholly at a loss, we gave up at noon; utterly baffled we returned to the house.

As we were eating our midday meal, Harris suddenly dropped his knife and fork and leaped to his feet.

"By Jove, I have it!" he fairly shouted. "Why didn't I think of it before!"

"Got what?" I demanded.

"The reason we didn't see a picture today; the reason the thing vanishes. It's a question of time. Remember, we saw the first picture between two and three o'clock. It was between two-thirty and three that we saw the next. Then, today, we waited until noon and saw nothing. I'll wager, if we go back between two and three, we'll see another view. It——"

"Possibly you may be right," I agreed, without waiting for him to complete his sentence. "But honestly I fail to see why time should have anything to do with it. In the first place, whatever it is, or rather, however the thing is brought about, the rays that carried the scene in the first place must have been going on continuously—not confined to any one hour. In the second place, the place—Huaro-Yana—and the people, must have been here right along. And in the third place, if the scenes—the impressions—are somewhere, stored away in space or on another planet as you claim, why shouldn't the Inti-ray or the fumes or whatever it is, bring them back to us at one time as well as another?"

"You overlook the most important thing," Harris told me. "I explained that the rays are strictly rectilinear—that they go straight and parallel, as I might say, and I even stated that I feared we could only secure revisualizations of events that occurred here at Huaro-Yana for that reason. So the way I look at it is this: Just as the scenes we can restore are local, so the area whereon they were stored or recorded must be restricted. It's as if they'd been reflected in a mirror at a distance and that mirror reflected them back to a mirror set up here. Unless the two mirrors were in line and placed at the proper angle or plane to each other, there wouldn't be any reflection visible. And as the earth is rotating on its axis, there would be but one short period of time when it would be possible to 'line up' the rays so the scenes would appear. Of course that's a crude way of putting it, but it's the only way I can make it clear to you."

"Thanks for your opinion of my mentality," I laughed. "But I think I see your point. However, another idea has just occurred to me—or rather several ideas. First: If, as you assume, the scenes were recorded on another sphere and that sphere is rotating as it must be, it seems to me the chance of getting the two points upon the surface of this earth and that sphere 'lined up' as you say, would be infinitesimal. And if both spheres are rotating and have been for thousands of years, wouldn't the time when the two points come into line vary daily? Finally, how does this theory strike you? Isn't it possible that on that other sphere there is a similar dyke to the one here and that the phenomenon is the result of some chemical peculiarity of the rocks, so that it would not be possible on any other portion of earth or on that other planet? Your simile of the two mirrors gave me that theory."

"Yes, I'd thought of that myself," declared Harris. "But I can't find any peculiarity of the basalt here. It's in no way different from any other basaltic dyke. But there is a possibility that on another planet there may be fumes—vapors—identical with that which we produce by the ray, and that the scenes were impressed or recorded on that. I don't think the theory tenable, however. Such vapor must move, must be tenuous, and hence any scenes recorded upon it would be broken up, would disappear. As for your other arguments, I admit there would be a constant change of time, but how do we know that the other sphere's rotational speed may not be such that it compensates for the earth's lag? But we're talking on theories, mere vague suppositions. We don't actually know anything about the matter—we don't even know if there is another sphere in the problem. But come on—let's see if my idea of the time isn't correct."

So once more we went to the platform and prepared for the reception of the phenomenon. And this time, just as Harris had prophesied, the picture appeared—precisely at two forty-eight. It is unnecessary to repeat the description of its materialization. In fact, we had now become somewhat accustomed to it, and watched it with less excitement and more analytically. In fact, the only manner in which the view that was vividly developed before us differed from those we had seen was in the actions of the people. We had seen them cutting the stone with the Inti-ray; we had seen them dancing; and now we saw them at their everyday duties. Some were cultivating the ground; in the distance, herders were tending flocks of llamas and alpacas; in the shadow of a building, women were weaving cloth on crude looms; and under a shed a potter was moulding earthenware vessels. I even caught a glimpse of a metalsmith working over a little furnace, but he was soon hidden from sight by a group of men who gathered about him, apparently interested in watching him at his art.

Harris was elated. Not only had his time theory worked out—for no other vision appeared, although we waited throughout the afternoon—but he insisted that the length of time the scene had been retained was due to his instruments and the manipulation of the controls.

"I'm making headway at last, thank heaven!" he cried. "I'm beginning to get the hang of the thing. The next time I'll keep the impression before us for at least fifteen minutes—perhaps more. Eventually I may be able to hold it for an hour—perhaps keep it continually there."

"In that case your time theory will be shattered," I reminded him. "Besides, you'll exhaust your supply of the ray-producing minerals."

"Don't worry about that," he advised me. "I've found how to make the stuff artificially. And as for my time theory—that's the key to the success of the thing. I kept this view ten minutes by adjusting my instruments to compensate for the movement of the earth. Now, if I can only calculate the speed of the other sphere—if there is one—I can adjust the instrument to keep pace with that, and so retain the views in perfect alignment continuously. It's not such a difficult problem after all; a good deal on the principle of taking photographs of the sun or any other planet in doing which we have to keep the telescope focussed on a certain spot regardless of the fact that both the earth and the other planet are moving. But, hang it all, in this case I don't know what the other planet is, or where it is, or if there is a planet in the case. But I'm going to find out before another day has passed."

WHETHER or not the unusually long period of time that the scene had endured was due to Harris's instruments, I did not know. But if he was right, if he could so adjust his apparatus as to keep accurate pace with the planetary movements, then I could see no reason why he should not be able to do as he claimed and retain a continuous picture for some hours upon the vapor.

I saw nothing more of him that evening. He did not come to dinner and it was not until nearly noontime the next day that he put in an appearance. His haggard face and the dark circles under his keen eyes told me of all night work even before he spoke. "I've got it!" he ejaculated, throwing himself into a chair and gulping down a cup of strong black coffee.

"Got what?" I asked. "You'll get nervous prostration or something worse if you keep this up, old man."

He shook his head. "I'd get a lot worse lying awake and trying to puzzle it out in my brain, than by going at it with paper and pencil," he declared. "But it's done. I've worked it all out—the question of the other sphere, you know—the place where the impressions are stored away, and now I've got that determined I can work out the rest. Today, tomorrow, we'll be the first human beings to look upon the surface of another planet as clearly as though we stood upon its surface. Think of that! Think of what marvels we may see!"

"But what *is* th[illegible] planet?" I asked, half-convinced that Harris had overw[illegible]ked his brain and was suffering from an hallucination.

"What is it?" he repeated. "Guess!"

"Hmm, I presume it's Mars or perhaps Venus or Mercury," I replied. "Let's see. I'm no astronomer, but if I'm not mistaken Venus would be visible in the afternoon."

"Wrong!" cried Harris. "It's Eros!"

"Eros!" I reiterated. "But Eros is an asteroid—it's outside Mars."

"Yes, ordinarily," admitted Harris. "But if you were as familiar with astronomy as with archeology, you'd know that although the orbit of Eros—and other

asteroids—is outside that of Mars, still, at certain times, owing to the nature of its orbit, Eros—and probably other asteroids as well—approach to within fifteen million miles of the earth, whereas thirty-five million is the nearest we ever get to Mars as in 1909 and 1924. And it happens that at the present time, Eros is at its nearest point to our old earth."

"But, but," I objected. "Isn't Eros a small—a tiny sphere? Why——"

"Don't ask me why!" cried Harris petulantly. "I don't know why anything. But it's Eros, I'm positive. Yes, Eros is small—a mere pin-point in the ordinary telescope. We don't know anything about it and that'll make it all the more marvelous to look upon. Why, man alive, it may be inhabited! And think what the denizens may be like! No one can think, no one can imagine. On Eros you, I, any normal man could easily lift a ton in one hand. We could fly for miles through the air by using muscular energy required to take a step here on earth! Talk about Columbus! Talk about explorers, discoverers! Why, we're about to go on the most amazing voyage of discovery in the entire history of mankind!"

"Provided," I reminded him, hoping to calm him, for he was becoming almost feverishly excited, "provided you can succeed and can produce a scene from Eros upon the vapor. I don't believe you can, Harris. I'm willing to admit that the ray impressions of past scenes on earth may be stored or recorded on Eros or on any other heavenly body, and that you may be able to 'tune' them in, as you once aptly put it. I've seen the visions and astounding, incredible as they are, I cannot doubt the evidence of our senses. But I don't see that that proves that it is possible to bring in a scene that exists on another planet or planetoid today. In fact, it would seem to me that scenes from Eros must be impressed invisibly here, and that the people of Eros—if there are any—would find it much easier to bring scenes of their past back from here than for you to bring scenes from Eros to earth. So far, we haven't had a hint of anything, aside from scenes that took place here. If your scheme were possible, why shouldn't we have had glimpses of Eros already?"

"Why, why, why?" cried Harris jumping up and pacing back and forth. "You're forever asking '*Why?*' How the devil should I know? Nobody knows. Perhaps nobody ever will know! Why does the earth rotate? Why do we live? Why are we here? Why life anyway?" Then, suddenly calming himself, "I'm sorry, old friend," he said apologetically, "I didn't intend to be rude or impatient, but the thing's got under my skin and that infernal "WHY?" is hammering in my brain continually. If you'll pardon me, I'll go get a bit of sleep. I can't do anything today—haven't had time to prepare the instruments I want. But tomorrow—well—we'll see what we shall see."

CHAPTER IX

The Battle Scene Retained on Eros

HARRIS slept soundly for several hours and arose much refreshed and once again his normal, good-natured self. During the afternoon he busied himself in his laboratory and work-shop. He worked late that night, and he was up and deep in his work when I arose the next morning. But he came to the house for lunch, and with a deep sigh of satisfaction announced that he was ready for another demonstration.

"This time," he stated, "I believe we'll get a glimpse of Eros itself, unless I'm off in my calculations."

I had, however, been improving my knowledge by reading the works on astronomy that were in Harris's library, and I had assiduously studied everything I could find that related to Eros. So I was ready to ask a question that, I flattered myself, would rather surprise him.

"I don't exactly see how you can accomplish that today," I observed. "Isn't the dark side of Eros presented to the earth this afternoon? In that case how can you see anything upon it?"

Harris laughed. "Been studying up on Eros, eh?" he observed. "Yes, you're right, but why should darkness have anything to do with the matter? You forget that we are not seeing things with light-rays, and the Inti-ray is present in darkness as well as in light. By the way, as you have shown you have an increasing interest in astronomical phenomena, let me ask you a few questions and—as I'm quite sure you cannot reply—give you the answers. You speak of 'darkness.' I suppose you picture space (so-called) as being dark?"

"Yes, why not," I replied promptly.

"Wrong!" he cried in much the same tone a boy will use when playing a guessing game. "If you were in what is commonly called 'space' you'd find light—blinding light—in fact such light as neither you nor any human being can imagine or conceive of; a glare like that from a vast furnace. And the most amazing feature of it would be that it would be cold light—practically absolute zero."

"I can't believe it," I told him frankly. "If space is light, how is it that after the sun sets we have darkness?"

"Our own earth shadow," he replied, "thrown upon our atmosphere. If you should step into an airplane and go up a few hundred thousand feet, you'd find it light enough."

"Naturally," I said, "for I would then be in sight of the sun."

"Or rather out of the earth's shadow," he retorted. "But if you could get off into space beyond all shadows, you'd find the blinding glare perpetual. There'd be nothing to interrupt it, nothing to absorb it and no atmosphere to soften and filter it. Now, for another question. If you were off there in space, how would Mars appear? What color would the sun be?"

"I suppose Mars would appear as a great red sphere," I replied. "And the sun would be a fiery, glowing, incandescent mass."

Harris chuckled. There was nothing he enjoyed more than tripping up people on scientific questions and then setting them right. Not that he ever bothered doing so with men who made no claims to scientific knowledge. He didn't expect them to know the answers. Neither would he amuse himself in this manner with specialists in other lines than his own; but he believed thoroughly that a "little knowledge is a dangerous thing," and having discovered that I had attempted to brush up on astronomy he was having a little harmless amusement at my expense, incidentally adding to my knowledge.

"You're entirely wrong," he assured me. "If you were beyond the atmosphere of the earth, the sun would appear as a brilliant blue sphere and Mars would be green."

"But enough of this. It is time we were off and getting ready for a glimpse of Eros."

As usual, by the time we had reached the platform, the Indians had gathered *en masse* to watch the magical ceremony, as they considered it. How they knew when we were about to 'perform,' by what inexplicable means they communicated with one another, I never learned. But despite the fact that there were now half a dozen Indians in sight when we left Harris's house, yet by the time we reached the vicinity of the dyke, a crowd would be on hand. It was as mysterious and very like

And then suddenly, as though flashed upon the bluish vapor of some gigantic magic lantern, there appeared a totally different scene. A scene so weird, bizarre, so utterly unlike anything I had ever seen or dreamed of seeing, that I started back with a low, involuntary cry.

the manner in which buzzards will flock to a dead beast, though not one may be visible until the creature expires. But their presence didn't bother us. In fact, I think Harris rather enjoyed having an audience—even if it was an audience of Indians.

This time he had brought along several new pieces of apparatus, as well as a sort of chart or map punctured with perforations—something like the music-rolls of a player-piano—which he inserted in one of the machines.

In reply to my question in regard to it he gave some involved technical explanation which I cannot recall, but I gathered the thing was some sort of device to synchronize the apparatus with the movements of the earth and Eros. Also he had brought a new supply of the chemicals with which to charge the ray machine, and he expatiated on the fact that they were synthetic compounds, which he was testing for the first time and that, as they were much purer than the natural ores, he hoped for better results.

Possibly it was due to these compounds, or for all I know to some other alterations or improvements he had made in his apparatus, but whatever the cause, the fumes appeared much more dense than usual as the ray began cutting into the rock, and instead of the pale-green, translucent tint—like the color of breaking wave-crests, the vapor had a decidedly bluish tint.

Harris waited until two fifty-three before he turned on the ray, and almost instantly we saw indications of the approaching vision. As before, a glow appeared as if a light was struggling to shine through the veil of fumes; it increased until a luminous ball seemed embedded in the vapor and for an instant I almost expected to see a glowing sphere emerge. I heard Harris utter a short, sharp exclamation, but before I could question him, the illuminated area expanded until it covered a vast area of the fumes; then once again, the swirling, gyrating masses of prismatic colors flashed and scintillated, until suddenly they rushed together, took definite form and before us appeared the picture, distinct and clear.

ONCE more we were gazing at Huaro-Yana in its heydey. Once again we saw the familiar surroundings, the familiar buildings, but now the inhabitants swarmed everywhere. They rushed about, ran hither and thither, seemed excited, and at times terrified. Then I noticed that the men bore arms—bows and arrows, spears, slings, stone and bronze-headed maces and battle-axes—and suddenly I realized that they were preparing for a battle. Gradually order was evolved from chaos. The scurrying women and frightened children sought refuge within the temple and the other buildings. The men, obeying shouted orders—yes we could almost hear the voices so realistic was the scene—gathered in columns and groups.

The warriors upon the summit of the great arch took their posts and drew up the rope-ladders, and from the palace came a cortège at whose head strode one who I instantly knew must be their monarch. Never will I forget his face. A splendid-looking man, a man every inch a king; erect, haughty, with keen, hawk-like features, a broad serene brow, strong high-bridged nose and firm thin lips. Upon his head rested a casque of burnished gold set off by three scarlet and black plumes. Golden bands gleamed upon arms and legs; against the deep blue garments that he wore gleamed a burnished breastplate. In one hand he carried an immense, bronze-headed, battle-axe and in the other a round wooden shield, gorgeous with mosaic work. The nobles who surrounded him were almost as richly clad and were splendidly armed, but he towered above them for inches, and beside him they appeared almost puny, insignificant.

Instantly, as their king appeared, a mighty shout evidently arose from the assembled warriors, and even in that tense, thrilling moment when, with bated breath I stood gazing enthralled at the vision before me, it flashed across my brain that the strangest, most incredible feature of it all was that no audible sounds came to my ears. I could see the men's mouths open, could see them raise high their weapons and clash spear-shafts and bows on shields in salutation to their monarch, yet all was silent, so silent that the whirring of the motors in the machines beside me seemed a roar.

Quickly the king stepped down from his palace and with a vivid gesture towards the west, led his warriors toward the great black arch. So intent had I been in watching the monarch and his nobles, that I had given no heed to what was taking place elsewhere. But now, as I turned my eyes towards the Huaro-Yana, I gasped, my heart seemed to skip a beat, and I felt as excited—yes, and as terrified—as though I had been actually upon the scene in person. Outlined by the black arch, moving steadily, inexorably nearer, were dark masses which I took at first to be close-packed hordes of men. Down upon them the garrison upon the arch hurled a perfect rain of arrows, javelins and stones, yet the hail of projectiles seemed to make no impression upon the enemy. Then, to my amazement and horror, I saw that the dark bulks were not mobs of savages as I had thought; they were gigantic beasts, monstrous creatures of some sort. The next moment they were blotted from sight by the onrushing army of warriors led by their gold-helmeted king. I saw axes and maces flash. I saw arrows speed. For an instant the arch itself was almost hidden by the struggling, fighting mob. I leaned forward, my breath came hard and fast, I strained my eyes to see what was taking place, how it fared with the monarch and his men.

But even as I gazed, for the moment forgetting it was but a vision, a scene by some miracle snatched from the distant past, a haze seemed to cover the view, the struggling warriors, the black arch, the distant mountains grew dim, indistinct, and the next instant the scene had vanished. And then suddenly, as though flashed upon the bluish vapor by some gigantic magic-lantern, there appeared a totally different scene. A scene so weird, bizarre, so utterly unlike anything I had ever seen or dreamed of seeing, that I started back with a low, involuntary cry. Before the sounds had fairly left my lips, the scene had vanished, the fumes billowed and rolled down the cliff. With a deep indrawn breath I turned toward Harris. He was standing, gazing transfixed, as if hypnotized, at the spot where the scene had been. Slowly, almost as if just awakening from a dream he turned.

"Did you see it!" he almost gasped. "Did you see that last, that—that bit of Eros?"

I gazed at him in amazement. "Eros!" I exclaimed, "What on earth do you mean?"

"Didn't you see it?" he repeated, with something of awe, almost of reverence in his tones. "Don't you understand? That last view—that fleeting scene was a bit of Eros. Think of it! We are the only human beings ever to have looked upon the surface of a planetoid!"

"What makes you think it *was* Eros?" I asked, although more than half-convinced he was right. "How do you know it was not some part of this earth?"

"How do I know!" he cried. "Is there any such place on earth? Is there any such scene? Are there any such forms of vegetation—such creatures?"

I had to admit I knew of none, still I could not believe Harris's assertion possible. "No," I replied, "not at present; but how do we know it was not a view of the earth—perhaps this very spot—in some past age, in prehistoric times?"

Harris snorted. "You, an archeologist, ask that!" he sneered. "Was there ever a time in the history of the world when there were such forms of growth? You know there was not. No, no, we were looking upon a scene in Eros. I——"

A wailing groan from the Indians startled us, caused us to turn, and our eyes fell upon the dyke, we stood transfixed, gazing speechless at what we saw. Harris in his excitement had not shut off the ray. Great masses of blue vapor covered the rocky wall, and once more upon the surface a picture had appeared. A scene terrible in its tragedy, in its desolation, the culmination of the battle whose beginning we had seen. Against a lurid sunset sky the Huaro-Yana loomed black and ominous, the palace, the temple, every building was silhouetted against the glowing sky, but not a living human being was in sight. Everywhere, strewn upon the ground, were weapons, accoutrements, garments, ornaments, missiles. With a shudder I saw in the foreground a mangled mutilated corpse, whose distorted features I recognized as those of the king, who, such a short time before, had led his shouting warriors to battle.

The horror of the scene was magnified by the fact that no triumphant enemy was in sight, that no man or woman, no living creature moved through that city of death. It was as if every living being had been utterly wiped out, completely disintegrated by some stupendous cataclysm, leaving only the twisted body of the dead monarch in the shadow of his deserted desolated palace. And yet—I stared, I strained my eyes in a vain effort to pierce the ever-increasing dusk that was settling over the scene as the sunset faded from the sky. Something had moved, something vague, shapeless, phantasmal, a form yet formless; a cloud-like wraith; an intangible, ghost-like thing that caused cold chills to run up and down my spine, as for an instant it hovered—no, drifted is a better term—into the shadows of the palace and passed on and vanished in the darkness. Then a cry of horror came from my lips,

for where, but an instant before the dead king had been stretched upon the ground, now only his golden helmet, his bronze breastplate and his shield remained! The next instant the last glow faded from the sky, darkness blotted the scene from sight, and the pale-blue vapors once more drifted and rolled across the face of the rocky wall.

"My God!" gasped Harris, as he turned, white-faced towards me. "Wasn't it ghastly?"

I bowed my head. "Horrible!" I managed to say. "The extermination of a race—the end of the pre-Incans. But the mystery is as great as ever, Harris. Who, what——"

A hoarse, dry, almost hysterical laugh came from his lips. "The old legend," he said, "the 'giants from the sky'! Did—" he shuddered and cast a furtive, half-frightened glance at the dyke—"did you see that, that *thing?* That—" he lowered his voice to a whisper—"that ghastly, spectral thing that, that devoured the dead king?"

With a tremendous effort I pulled myself together I grasped Harris's arm and shook him. "Nonsense!" I cried. "Snap out of it, Harris! The tragedy of the scene has got on our nerves. It was only a picture—a vision—a bit out of the past. We're acting as if it were real. Giants! Piffle! We merely missed the actual fight—the battle—and saw the place after the victors had cleared out. Probably savages from the *montaña.* And as for that cloud—the fading light merely distorted a wisp of fog or smoke. Come on, it's getting late, let's get out of here and go home."

For a moment Harris stared at me with a strange expression in his deep-set eyes. Then he burst into a peal of laughter. "Yes," he cried, "I guess you're right! We're a couple of damned fools. But—" there was a note of triumph, of elation in his voice—"I told you I'd keep the scenes going, and I did. Do you know how long that first one remained? Over half an hour! And I brought the last one in after four o'clock! I've conquered the time element, I'll get them whenever I wish now, and I'll keep them as long as I please. And we'll see Eros next time. We'll explore it, study its vegetation, watch its inhabitants."

But my mind was too much filled with the tragedy of Huaro-Yana for me to answer him.

CHAPTER X

A Vision Materializes

IF only Harris had been satisfied with what he had accomplished. If only he had been content to have revisualized the past of Huaro-Yana without attempting to penetrate the mysteries of another planet! Yet I cannot blame him. He had accomplished something that seemed almost superhuman. He had opened a new vista to science. No living man could have resisted the temptation, the desire to go farther, once he had peeped within the portals of the unknown. And no one could have foreseen the dangers, the perils, the horrors that lay within those portals.

And I must confess that I was equally to blame, equally responsible for what took place, for the thing had gripped me, too. I was as fascinated by the possibilities of Harris's discovery and amazing accomplishments as was he, and neither of us could possibly have foreseen the results that were destined to follow.

Perhaps, too, it was all for the best. If he had not done it, sooner or later some other scientist would, and perhaps it was fortunate for the human race that he was the chosen instrument of Fate, that it happened in that remote, almost uninhabited spot instead of in some populous, densely inhabited district, for I tremble to think of what the results, under such conditions, would have been. And now that there are not (as far as known) any of the essential minerals remaining on earth, and as all of Harris's formulae and apparatus, as well as his synthetic chemicals, are utterly destroyed, there is little fear of the world being jeopardized by a repetition of the incredible occurrence.

Such thoughts, such speculations, invariably fill my mind whenever I allow myself to recall the events that followed so closely upon that last vision which showed us the destruction of the pre-Incans, who dwelt in the city by the Huaro-Yana. Yet in a way, I realize that all such thoughts and speculations are idle and lead nowhere, for, as Harris was so fond of pointing out to me, the slightest alteration in any factor—no matter how trivial it may appear—will alter the entire course of events, and for all we know to the contrary, the entire universe.

"The biggest word ever uttered by human beings is the word 'IF,'" he used to say. "Don't ever forget that. That's one reason I'm a fatalist, my friend. In order not to have done a thing the entire course of events for immeasurable eras of the past would have had to have been different. In order to influence the present or the future, we would necessarily have to influence the past. Just as any alteration in the present would influence the future until the very end of time, so it would have to influence the past back to the very beginning of time. As long as it manifestly is impossible for us to alter the past, so it must be impossible to alter the future that is dependent upon the past."

But I forget myself. Here I am quoting Harris's arguments, when I should be recording the events as they transpired, and if poor Harris were alive today, he would be the very first to find fault with me.

Naturally, after that amazing experience of having seen three distinct pictures (I will insist on using that term, for regardless of what they may be scientifically called, to me they *were* pictures) we could think of nothing else, and throughout the rest of the afternoon and evening, and far into the night, we discussed them, argued over them, marveled at them, and wondered what revelation would be vouchsafed to us next.

Yet there were many points on which we did not agree. For example, Harris insisted that the indistinct forms that I have already described as gigantic beasts or monsters, which we saw approaching the pre-Incan warriors beyond the arch in the first vision, were identical with the wraith-like, misty thing we had both seen in the final vision. I could not agree with him.

"Well, what was it then?" he demanded. "The damnable thing did away with the dead king, so it wasn't any phantom. I never yet heard of a ghost that could cause any changes in material things."

"Who said anything about ghosts!" I snapped. "In my opinion it was a huge bird—perhaps some giant vulture—and that it simply picked up the body and flew off with it."

Harris sneered. "Is that so?" he cried. "And what sort of a bird can pick up and carry off a full-sized man?"

"Not any that exists today," I retorted, "but we don't know how long ago those events occurred and so we can't say positively that gigantic birds or, more probably pterodactyls, may not have existed at that time. A fair-sized pterodactyl could easily carry off a man. And if there were a lot of them—if they were as common then as buzzards are today—it would explain why no other bodies were visible. If you can suggest a better theory, let's hear it."

"Hmm, I hadn't thought of that," he admitted. "Perhaps you're right. But even so, the old fable wasn't so far off—pterodactyls would be 'giants from the sky' all right."

It was my turn to scoff. "Still harping on that old myth, eh?" I said. "Well, have it your own way. I admit that the legend of a king having called on the Sun-God to aid him in cutting the rocks may have had its origin in the use of the ray. But you can be dead sure that if there were carrion-eating pterodactyls about, the people would never have called them 'giants from the sky,' any more than these Indians today would regard condors as supernatural things. And whatever, or whoever the enemies were who defeated the inhabitants of Huaro-Yana, they certainly were *not* from the sky—they came marching in on the ground under the black arch."

So, quite as if we had been on the scene, we argued on the details of the tragedy, exactly as any two independent observers will argue on the details of a scene they have witnessed.

It was not until three days later that Harris was ready to make his attempt to visualize a portion of the surface of Eros. There were a number of changes and improvements to be made in his instruments and he had to prepare a new supply of the synthetic minerals that produced the ray. But at last all was in readiness, and once more we climbed to the platform, and once more the crowd of Indians gathered to witness the white man's magic pictures.

I don't know exactly what alterations Harris had made in his devices. In fact I knew nothing, technical, in regard to them. I am no chemist, no electrician and I know nothing of the complicated, involved and, to me, abstract principles and laws by which Harris worked. A lifetime of study would have been necessary to have mastered even a fraction of Harris' knowledge of such matters, and while I could understand, in a way, the principle of the ray-making mechanism and could grasp the mechanical operations of some of his instruments, their particular purposes and principles were all a closed book to me. As he worked, adjusting and arranging the various things, he kept up a running fire of explanations, most of it worse than Greek to me.

At last all was ready. Harris adjusted the valves, he started the nozzle moving and set his camera in motion. Then he moved various levers and switches on the other instruments and started the device that contained the perforated sheet or chart I have already mentioned.

Almost instantly the entire top of the dyke began to vanish, to dissolve, and dense, billowing clouds of the fumes poured down over the face of the rock. Presently, as before, a light glowed in the vapor; it increased until a fiery globe seemed about to burst through, and then slowly it died out, receded, vanished. An impatient ejaculation came from Harris.

"That light—that sphere you saw—that we've always seen—is Eros!" he declared, as he readjusted his instruments. "I've proved that—I'll show you later but—confound the thing—Ah!"

I uttered an involuntary cry myself. Covering the entire curtain of vapor that now completely concealed the dyke, was a scene so marvelous that for a moment I could not overcome the conviction that the dyke had been miraculously destroyed and that I was gazing upon the landscape that had been hidden behind it. I saw a flat, slightly undulating surface—with indescribably rough, jagged and weirdly eroded mountains in the distance. Something about the land, I don't know exactly what, gave it the appearance of a marsh or swamp, and everywhere it was covered with the same grotesque, bizarre and impossible forms of vegetation we had seen in that former fleeting glimpse I have described. I have said that in speaking of it to Harris I compared it to a painting made by a futurist or a lunatic. But such a comparison is wholly inadequate, to say the least.

NO futurist or modernist artist, no lunatic could have conceived such a wholly impossible, topsy-turvy landscape. Not until I had gazed at it for minutes did I realize just what was wrong with it. Then suddenly it dawned upon me that what I had taken for mountains and immense rock masses were vegetable growths; rough, bare, leafless trunks and knobby growths; that what I had at first glance mistaken for spreading shade trees and graceful palms were immensely magnified and exaggerated mosses; that the seeming forests were growths of lichens; that the areas of rough, irregular marshy ground were vast expanses of slimy, gelatinous moulds, and that the low-growing, brushy jungles were composed of dwarfed, pygmy trees. Among them I saw conifers, palms, cicads; trees that had the appearance of oaks and beeches. Everything was reversed. The forms of plant life that are smallest, most insignificant on earth were enlarged to the dimensions of our tallest trees, while the forms that are largest and most impressive on earth were here reduced to tiny shrubs and weeds. And such colors, such forms! I am no botanist. I had never studied the lowest forms of plant life through a microscope. No doubt if I had done so I would have been prepared for the strangeness of that scene before me and I might even have identified some of the families, genera or even the species represented. But as it was, it held me dumbfounded, fascinated with its impossible-looking absurdities. Out of thick, furry masses of silver-gray sprang square stalks bearing crowns of vivid scarlet that seemed so hard, so angular that they might have been cut from blocks of wood. From undulating, crinkled, pancake-like sheets of sickly white, rose thin, hair-like filaments that supported inverted cones of burnished copper and gold. Mottled, reptilean-looking, contorted vines thrust out feather-dusters of intense blue. Fuzzy-green stalks grew in dense groves, and topping each were a dozen discs of purple.

There were bare, straight poles covered with immense recurved hooks. There were plants that palpitated and seemed actually to breathe. There were growths that—ever and again as we watched them—exploded and shot clouds of golden smoke across the weird landscape, and there were others with long cable-like tentacles that coiled and uncoiled and felt about and seized anything within reach, as if a giant octopus lay hidden in the foliage.

Strangest of all, perhaps, were globular things that looked like titantic oranges and immense, leathery, gaudily colored plants that looked like giant starfishes, so symmetrical were their five-pointed rays.

As my eyes gradually accustomed themselves to the strange scene and I sensed the proportions of things, I realized that the hard, rough, leafless growths that I had at first taken for rocks and mountains were—fungi! Yes, there was no doubt of it. They were titantic, immense, colossal fungus growths, weirdly shaped, dull-red, pink, orange, flesh-colored, black, brown—almost exact counterparts of the fungi we see in northern swamps and woodlands, but here, here in this crazy, impossible landscape, out of all proportions; so huge in comparison to the other vegetation that they loomed like hills, peaks against the sky. Hardly had this amazing truth dawned upon me when I saw life. Flitting from one clump of giant mosses to another was a flock of what I took at first to be birds. But as they alighted upon the cubistic, pentagonal branches and folded their gaudy wings, I fairly gasped, for they were insects! Moths, soft-winged, thick-bodied, six-legged moths. Moths as large in proportion to their

surroundings as parrots or toucans in an ordinary forest. Then I saw tiny winged creatures—flies, bees, I thought, until an instant later one of the little creatures swept buzzing into the foreground and, coming to rest upon a lichen, revealed itself as a bird!

It was then that I first saw the rhino (I say rhino for it was nearer that than any other earth creature, though perhaps more like an Iguanadon) as it came charging, head down, horns lowered, out of the jungle of dwarf pine trees. So plain, so clear, so real it seemed, that I could almost hear the crackling of branches, as it tore through the thick growth, could almost hear the thud of its feet, as it charged madly at— Was I taking leave of my senses? The beast was charging at a caterpillar! Yes, at a woolly caterpillar half as big as itself that, panic-stricken, was striving madly to climb up a mould-stem to safety!

And there was something so inexpressibly ludicrous about that pygmy rhino charging that giant, lumbering, panic-stricken caterpillar that I burst into a guffaw of laughter. But the sounds died on my lips, my merriment changed to amazement and I stared in uncomprehending wonder. From the dark shadows of a forest of pale-gray mosses something emerged. A great, grayish, repulsive-looking thing; a thing that sweated, exuded thick, viscous slime. A thing that seemed to glide rather than walk, yet moved with incredible quickness. Scarcely had it appeared before it had swept across my vision and once more had vanished in the gray forest. A glistening, slimy trail marked its passage, but the charging rhino, the woolly caterpillar had vanished completely, destroyed, swallowed up by the monster!

A sharp cry from Harris broke the spell. "My God!" he gasped. "Look! They're real! Those birds!"

CHAPTER XI

History Repeats Itself

MY first wonder, the first shock of seeing them take life and wing was increased—if such a thing was possible—when I saw them increasing in size with incredible speed. A moment before they had been tiny things—scarcely larger than hummingbirds—perching upon a tiny twig; but now they were as large as pigeons. A moment more and they had become the size of crows! An instant later they were as large as macaws! And now they flew heavily, clumsily, with wearily beating wings, back and forth, uttering strange, terrified cries until having grown to the size of geese, they dropped to earth, and after a few feeble efforts to rise, sank exhausted and panting upon the ground.

The next instant, Harris, with a sharp cry, sprang up, leaped from the platform and dashed forward towards the strange birds, creatures from another planet. They fluttered and flopped as he approached, but were too utterly spent to escape, and I saw him stoop and seize one of them with a triumphant cry. It was at this instant that I again turned my gaze upon the picture and the blood seemed to freeze in my veins at what I saw; my heart seemed to cease beating; I was paralyzed with terror.

Rushing from the vividly realistic forest of giant mosses, straight towards the foreground, came a herd (there is no other word to express it) of those monstrous, gray, slimy things I had seen destroy the charging rhino. But the horror of it, the paralyzing feature of what I saw, was that the foremost of the things had left the picture and was rushing directly upon Harris, who, back to the dyke and intent on examining his capture, was utterly oblivious of his peril!

Never, not even in the most terrible nightmares, have I ever felt such numbing, helpless terror, and never until my dying day, do I want to experience such horror again. Even now I shudder and feel faint as I recall it, for coupled with the mad fever I had for Harris' life, was the horror of the thing itself, the loathing I felt for the monstrous shape, and the deathly fear that is always inspired by the uncanny, the unknown, the supernatural.

I tried to shout a warning to Harris, but my tongue refused to utter a sound. I strove to rise to my feet, to dash to Harris' side, but my limbs, my muscles seemed frozen into rigidity. Only my eyes seemed able to function; even my brain seemed numbed, dazed, as if hypnotized by the unthinkable sight before me.

Then the Indians did what I was powerless to do. Not a sound had escaped them up to now. They had been too awed, too terrified, too utterly overwhelmed to move, to even groan or sigh. But now, as they saw that horrible, terrible thing bearing down upon Harris, a hoarse shriek of mingled warning and dread burst from them and startled Harris into activity. Not knowing what their screams meant, yet sensing peril, he swung about to see—God, how I shudder to think what terror must have been his!—to see that vast, awful thing within a dozen rods of where he stood! No—not thing, but things, for by this time five of the monsters had leaped from the visionary scene and were sweeping across the ground.

Vast! Yes, bulky as mammoths, for like the birds, they had grown, swollen, increased in size, as they sprang from images into life, like balloons being inflated with air. How can I describe them? How can I convey to my readers an adequate idea of their appearance? They were shapes, yet shapeless; forms, yet formless. We can describe a cube, an ellipsoid, a cone. We can say a thing is elephantine, that it resembles a bird, a reptile, a cat, a human being or an insect. But how picture, how visualize by words something utterly unlike anything we have ever seen, something whose form constantly, ceaselessly changes? Can we describe the form of a drifting cloud, of a wisp of smoke? And these things, these monstrous, awful, supernatural things that had come swarming from out of that pictured scene were as vague, as indescribable, as constantly altering in form as clouds or vapor. Yet they were solid, massive, dense, endowed with sentient life!

They had neither bodies, heads, legs nor appendages of any sort, yet they seemed to possess all. They drifted, slid, rather than walked or ran—like gigantic slugs or more perhaps like masses of thick smoke—along the ground. They seemed endowed with intelligence, with purpose, for they hesitated, they gave the impression of peering about, of listening, and then they moved on as if with a definite goal in view. And—the horror of it causes cold chills along my spine even as I think of it now—from time to time, long, writhing, tenuous portions of their masses shot out from their bulks like—like, yes, like nothing so much as the viscous strings that may be drawn out from a mass of glue. Once I saw one of these sticky, adhesive, tentacle-like things touch one of the fallen birds and draw it into the mass itself where it was instantly absorbed, swallowed, like a stone dropped into a pool of tar.

ALL this I sensed rather than saw, for my gaze was rivetted upon Harris who, having seen what was behind him, dropped the bird he had seized and whipping out his heavy revolver, which he invariably carried and which had been the cause of endless raillery on my part, fired six shots in rapid succession into the formless, lurching bulk of the monstrous thing.

Even in that horrible tense moment, utterly unable

to move or to utter a sound, I crouched there upon the platform. I realized how incongruous it seemed for Harris to be firing a revolver, a man-made weapon, at a thing not of this earth. And I knew instinctively that his soft-nosed bullets would have no more effect upon the nightmarish shape than upon a mass of drifting fog. Harris also must have realized this, and looking back upon it, I feel sure that his action was wholly involuntary, the automatic reaction upon facing an advancing enemy. Yet for a brief instant the thing hesitated, it swerved, it seemed to writhe; its shapeless bulk heaved and altered in form—I can compare the effect only to the contortions of a wounded animal tied in a sack—and the slimy viscid excretion upon its surface fairly sweated. No sound issued from it—the silence of the things was one of their most terrible features and the next second it was again in motion.

But the momentary respite had enabled Harris to dash away. A long, wavering, gelatinous-looking, sticky streamer shot forth from the thing and I held my breath, thinking it would capture Harris in its glutinous grasp. But it missed him by the fraction of an inch. The next moment he was close to the platform and to my dying day I shall be haunted by the unspeakable terror, the expression of knowledge of certain death, that was on his face as he looked up at me. But he did not shout, did not speak, and I realize now that he feared to do so, that he dared not call to me or attempt to climb to my side, for dread of drawing the attention of the monsters to my presence.

The next second he had passed below the platform and, dashing into the midst of the assembled Indians—who sat immovable, unable apparently to rise and flee of their own accord—he struck them, kicked them, shouted to them, cursed them. Physical pain, fear of the maniacal white man roused them from their lethargy, from the trance into which they had fallen in their fatalistic awaiting of death. Howling with fear, groaning from his blows and kicks, they scrambled aside, sprang to their feet and scattering, raced off towards their homes.

Only half-consciously I had seen this, for my mind, my gaze, were still centered upon those awful shapes, those intangible, living, fearsome monsters that now—at least a dozen in number—swarmed over the plain.

Before my horrified eyes I had seen them creep—no, drift, or roll, is better—over the spots where the llamas had been. And each time the frightened animals had vanished completely, had been absorbed like bits of twigs in a rolling snowball. One after the other the llamas had been swallowed up, and in hunting down this prey, the things had been delayed and many of the Indians had had a chance to escape. A chance, I say; but, losing their heads in the stark terror of the catastrophe, many stumbled and fell, many ran in circles, screaming at the top of their lungs, and others turned and ran directly into the paths of the approaching, monstrous forms. I felt nauseated, sick ready to faint as I watched these wretches overtaken, swept down by those silent, slime-coated formless things that passed inexorably on, leaving nothing but broad trails of slime, where a moment before, had been living, terrified men and women.

It was then, for the first time, that across my benumbed mind flashed memory of the ancient legend, recollection of that fearful scene of desolation of the pre-Incan city. Giants from the sky! These things, these awful beings were the "giants"! These were the enemies that had swept the pre-Incans from the earth! It was one of these things, these living shapes, that had passed over the dead king in the dim twilight of that vision we had seen! It was all clear to me now. Somehow, by some means, perhaps, probably by that same damnable Inti-ray, by which they cut their stones, the pre-Incans, too, had brought these monstrous things from Eros or another planet.

They had been wiped from existence by them, by these "giants from the skies." But what had become of the things once they had established themselves on earth? How, why had they, too, vanished? Why had they not increased, spread until they had utterly wiped humanity from the face of the earth? Such thoughts, such questions drummed and thrummed in the back of my brain, even while I watched and stood transfixed, as the things moved about, annihilating the few remaining Indians.

Suddenly Harris' voice aroused me as if from a horrible dream. I peered down. He was racing madly about, dodging, striving to evade two of the now gigantic things that had centered their attentions upon him.

"The ray!" he shouted, as he dashed beneath the platform. "Turn it off! Stop them! They'll destroy the world! I——"

His words were lost, as with a prodigious leap he sprang aside just in time to avoid the clutch of a waving, outflung tentacle. The next second he was dashing at topmost speed towards the distant buildings, and to my immense relief I saw that in that direction there were few of the things—that he might yet escape them.

For a fraction of a second I crouched there transfixed, still unable to move. Then, as one of the vast, glutinous things rose, billowed, swelled upwards towards the platform, I was galvanized into life and action. Harris' last words still rang in my ears. I understood. I sprang to the machine from which the invisible ray still played upon the cliff.

With shaking, trembling hands I seized the valves. I was about to turn them when before me one of those impossible monsters reared itself to the level of the platform where I stood.

I uttered a wild maniacal scream. I grasped at the cylinder for support, my hands clutched at the nozzle, and as I reeled back it swung downwards and to one side.

Instantly, as though it had been a gigantic balloon that had been pricked, the monstrous, slime-coated form collapsed and vanished before my eyes!

For a brief instant I gazed uncomprehending, utterly bereft of reason, unable to grasp what had happened, what had caused the destruction of the thing.

Then suddenly, like a flash of light, like an inspiration, I knew. It was the ray!

Within my grasp I held the power to slay, to destroy, to annihilate the awful, irresistible monsters from another sphere. Yelling like a madman, shouting, laughing like a maniac, I grasped the nozzle, and sighting along its barrel, aimed it at another of the horrible things. The result was magical. There was a puff of vapor—I could think of nothing so much as the effect when one steps on a puff-ball—a faint pop, and where the gigantic, repulsive thing had been there was—nothing!

As though I were handling a machine-gun I swung the nozzle to right, to left, up and down, picking off one of the things after another. Each time as that terrible, invisible ray fell, it was as if it had been struck by a sixteen-inch shell. Never was there such hunting! Never such gunnery!

I danced, I shouted, I chortled with glee, with the pure joy of destruction. I was fighting unearthly supernatural beings with an unearthly, supernatural weapon.

I felt a strange exaltation, as if I were a superior being, almost as if I were a spirit battling with con-

quering evil spirits. I was drunk with my power, my invincibility.

THE power of that ray was inconceivable. No matter how far distant the monsters might be, it picked them out, exploded them, disintegrated them. Some were already far across the plain, traveling rapidly towards the buildings, following after Harris, who was nowhere to be seen, who, I felt sure, had reached the shelter of the house or the laboratory in safety. Every monster had been wiped from existence in the neighborhood of the platform. Several that had been about to pass through the arch, had been overtaken by the ray and destroyed. Only the three that were rapidly receding towards the buildings remained. For a moment I hesitated, fearing that if I turned the ray upon them I might inadvertently injure Harris, who had fled that way. Then I remembered his statement that the ray was harmless to organic matter, that he could stand before it without injury. I waited no longer.

Carefully I swung the nozzle, aimed it at the lurching, undulating, gray forms looming vast against the buildings beyond.

A volcano seemed to burst into eruption. The world seemed to thunder and crash about my ears. I had a faint, a fleeting vision of lurid flames, of a rending, thundering detonation that seemed to rock the earth—and then: oblivion.

The sun was sinking when I came to my senses. The world was bathed in a lurid glow, and for an instant I thought a terrific conflagration was near at hand. I groaned with agony as I tried to rise. I felt bruised, as sore as though I had been pounded with giant hammers. My head was splitting. With an effort I moved my arms; they at least were whole; I felt my head gingerly but could find no fracture; nothing more serious than a deep scalp wound. Little by little I moved my legs. I thanked God there were no bones broken. And though I suffered excruciating pain in so doing, I gritted my teeth and, rising to a sitting posture, gazed about.

I was surrounded by wreckage, by splintered timbers, by the remains of instruments and apparatus that I recognized as the devices Harris had installed upon the platform, the platform that had collapsed with me upon it.

Sudden memory flashed back to me. What had happened? What had caused that terrific explosion? I managed to turn my head. Where the great dyke had stood was a mass of tumbled, jumbled blocks of stones, blocks with their edges clean-cut by the ray. Only two rough, jagged, columnar fragments of the dyke remained standing. Everything else, all the centre, weakened by the continual cutting, had fallen by the concussion of that terrific blast.

Groaning, raising myself inch by inch, I rose to my feet. I stared about. The great black arch, the Huaro-Yana, had been riven, and a great gap showed in its centre. Not a living thing was visible upon the plain, but across it, gleaming, shimmering in the light of the sinking sun, were the slime-trails left by those awful monsters from another planet. A cold shiver swept over me at sight of the paths of hardening slime, at memory of the horrible things, at recollection of their destruction. Where, I wondered, was Harris? He must have witnessed the annihilation of the things. Why had he not come to my assistance?

I shouted his name as loudly as I could, but there was no answer.

Slowly, painfully, helping myself with a stick, I picked myself up amid the wreckage of the platform; I toiled step by step, dragging one foot after the other, towards the buildings. But before I had gone fifty paces I stopped, stared, rubbed my eyes, aghast. Not a building was in sight, not a tree rose against the lurid sky where Harris' house and gardens had stood!

Forgetting my aches and pains, filled with terror of what it might presage, I hurried forward. My worst fears were fulfilled. Only heaps of shattered masonry and wreckage were to be seen where Harris' house, workshop and laboratory had been. And where the latter had stood was a great pit, a miniature crater in the earth.

Slowly realization came to me as, overcome, utterly spent, filled with numbing sorrow, I sat there amid the ruins while twilight fell over the scene of desolation. The laboratory had been full of chemicals. Harris had great quantities of the synthetic ray-making materials on hand. The ray, aimed at the distant monsters rushing towards the buildings, had reached beyond them, had fallen upon the laboratory and had exploded the chemicals stored there. It was all clear now, all plain.

But realization had come too late. Bitterly I blamed myself. For a space I contemplated ending my mental tortures by my own hand. I had been the means of Harris' death. By accident I had destroyed him, while I was striving to save the world from the monsters of the ray.

There was but one consolation, one chance that I was not, technically, a murderer. There was a possibility, a remote chance, that the explosion had not killed Harris, that before it had taken place he had been overtaken by the things and had been killed, devoured by them. But that thought was, if anything, more terrible, more horrible than the thought that I had killed him. No, no, no! I cried to myself and to the silent night. Not that! Better a thousand times that he found death in the explosion of his laboratory, than that I killed him with my own hands!

The uncertainty was terrible. How I lived through that night with my mind tortured and racked with doubts, fears, self-reproaches and heart-breaking sorrow, I shall never know. But all things have an end and at last day dawned over that scene of death and desolation. And as I glanced about and the very place seemed dead, I remembered that other scene, when only the body of the pre-Incan king remained in the desolated city and I felt that history was repeating itself at Huaro-Yana.

Why I remained there, I do not know.

As day spread over the mesa and the sunlight streamed over the Andean summits, once more I rose and aimlessly, with no conscious purpose in view, I began to wander about, to search amid the ruins and the devastation for some trace of Harris, some proof that he had not met that other and more horrible fate.

Yet I could find nothing, no bruised and mangled flesh, no fragments of anything human. At last, utterly spent, realizing that I could do no more and faint for want of food and sleep, I turned my weary feet towards the Indian village.

Less than a quarter of a mile from where I had spent the night, I came upon him. So natural, so peaceful he seemed, that at first I thought him asleep. His face was calm, composed, and a smile was upon his lips. But as I stooped, hoping against hope that he was alive, full realization of what had happened came to me.

Still clutched in his hand was his revolver, and in his right temple was the round blue mark ringed with dry blood, where the fatal bullet had entered his brain. Harris had taken his own life, and glancing up I knew the reason why. Within a score of paces from where the body lay there was a heap of slimy matter. Beyond

(*Continued on page* 431)

Then these strange streamers of fiery red seemed to condense to two main streamers, reached out and out—touched the great ships

The Voice *of the* Void

By John W. Campbell, Jr.

Author of "The Metal Horde," "Piracy Preferred," etc.

THE science of astronomy concerns itself with the great and the small. The distances in the stellar world are inconceivable by man—so much so that the astronomer's unit of measurement is the light year. And within the suns of space, the ultimate smallest units of matter figure—the molecule is broken up and the smaller atom is formed, only to be disintegrated into electrons and protons. Energy and mass enter into the strange cycle. Our young author, who has already become a favorite with readers of scientific fiction, has woven a captivating romance out of the world of ultra-physics—captivating in its adventurousness as well as in its science.

Illustrated by WESSO

PERHAPS you or I would have hesitated to call him human, this strange small man. He seemed lost in the great dim-lighted observatory. On all sides of the room panels of some polished black material glistened in the ruddy light, and on all their great surfaces were instruments and faintly glowing screens. High above the smooth floor a great transparent roof was flung in a half-glimpsed arch, glasslike it was, but the lack of beams told of a strength and toughness no glass ever knew. Through it came every vibration that struck it, infra-light or ultra-light. Now in its center there glowed a great mass of lambent red flame, the dying sun. To Hal Jus, astronomer, the room was flooded with the light of the noon-day sun. The dull red glow that gave even his pale face a ruddy glow was to him pure white. But then Hal Jus could see heat, and to him blue light was a scientific term for a thing beyond human vision.

Ten billion years had wrought strange changes in the human race. For ten thousand thousand millenniums they had lived on the planets of the solar system, but now the mighty sun was dying. There had been no decadence in this race, through all their history had come a constant fight with a persistent enemy, Nature. But it was a kindly enemy, for the contest had constantly developed man to meet the new emergencies.

Ten thousand years ago the sun had grown too cool to supply heat enough for man; it was no longer possible to live on the frozen planets, and the two greatest of them had been hurled across the system to feed the dying fires. Jupiter and Saturn had been sacrificed. Neptune and Uranus had long since escaped from the weakened clutches of the vanishing sun, and now of the family of original wheeling planets, only four were left: Mars, Earth, Venus and Mercury. And now again the fires of the system were dying too low. One and a half million tons of matter must be destroyed every second in that titanic furnace to supply a comfortable amount of heat. In our day three million tons of matter vanish every second, to be poured out as a mighty flood of heat and light that sweeps across the depths of space to us. The inner planets had been drawn far closer to the parent body, but even these heroic measures were failing.

Hal Jus worked at the controls of the electroscope for a moment and on one of the lambently glowing screens an image began to form, grayish at first, then quickly taking form and color. A great sphere swam on the screen; slowly as Hal Jus increased the power the body seemed to come nearer—it grew larger; it filled the screen, then rapidly there came a picture of low, age-old hills, worn low till they scarcely lifted their heads above the surrounding country. A mighty city of glistening metal buildings rising tier on tier a few miles north seemed to dwarf the hills into utter insignificance. Once a hill had lifted its proud head far into the blue of a two-hundred mile thick belt of atmosphere, but now the once mighty Mt. Everest alone remained as a relic of the high-flung mountains that old Earth had once known.

High in the jet black sky, a scant hundred miles from the ground below, a mighty space-freighter was taking off for Venus. The thin belt of atmosphere permitted it to reach a high speed quickly. Already it was in full stride and heading at 1,000 miles a second for Venus.

The scene on the screen blurred, grew gray, and faded out. Hal Jus was shifting the great electroscope tube. Again the screen glowed, and again an image appeared. It cleared quickly, then suddenly leaped into full life and color. The scene showed mighty machines working in a great pit of freshly tumbled soil. It was a land of intense shadow and where the dim red light of the distant sun did not touch, there was intense, utter blackness. There was no atmosphere here. And now, as a great freighter swung low, a machine on the ground below turned on a ray that stabbed out sharp and brilliant; a moment later the freighter tug lifted a half-million-ton piece of the planet on its attractor beams and rapidly gained headway as it shot off toward distant Venus.

The view became wider, the figure of the machines smaller. Then, as Hal Jus increased the observation distance, the entire planet came into view, as much of the planet Mars as was left. The great excavations were extended over all the surface. They were paring it down from all sides lest they disturb the balance of the planet.

Again the scene went blank. Now there formed on it a view of the starry heavens with glowing pinpoint stars. Suddenly this began to expand; star after star was forced from the field as the growing picture centered on one that burned bright in the center of the field. Mighty Betelguese glowed in the center of the field. It was a blurred image, like a tiny disc, but tremendous as was the power of the instrument, it could not have enlarged the image to that extent. The disc-like appearance was due to the tremendous brightness of the star spreading a bit on the sensitive vision receiver cell.

Slowly the mighty instrument swept over the field. Here and there a star would leap out of the darkness to form a burning disc, as one of the stars distant less than a dozen light years, swept across the field. Then at last came a star that blazed out as a burning disc an inch and a half across, emitting long tongues of shooting flame. Slowly it crept across the field. The instrument was adjusted for the motion of the Earth and this slow creeping was due to the motion of the star through space. Around it, far off across the field, circled a lone, small planet. Hal Jus watched it a while, then turned with a call of greeting, snapping off the current in the mighty instrument as several men walked in. They were seated now in several rows of chairs before the largest of the screens that were suspended on the walls of the room.

For ages men had known that the sun was dying. In our day men can tell that within the next ten or eleven billion years it will become a closed star—not a cold star but a closed star. The energy of the sun comes from the destruction of the matter of which it is composed, which becomes floods of energy. This change is possible at a temperature of 40,000,000 degrees C., but below that it cannot take place. Thus, at the center of the sun, where this change is taking place, the matter is at that terrific temperature. As the sun grows older, more and more of the matter sinks into the center and reaches the region of awful heat. The atoms are so violently colliding with each other at that temperature, that the atoms themselves are knocked to pieces by the violence of their collision. If the molecules of a substance collide sufficiently violently, they are broken up. Thus, at 5000 degrees, the molecules of water collide so violently that they cannot maintain themselves, and the shocks break them down into hydrogen and oxygen atoms. But at 40,000,000 degrees the atoms collide so violently they are decomposed into protons and electrons. At this temperature, a further, subtle change takes place, and the electrons and the protons suddenly are gone, and in their place is an equal mass of energy. For energy in any form has mass, and mass in any form is a measure of the energy content. Thus to say "one gram" is an easier way of saying "nine hundred million million million ergs," but the two mean the same to Nature. Now an atom is something like a porcupine with his quills up; it is much bigger in looks than in fact, only an atom has much longer "quills." An atom has much more empty space than anything else. Suppose our porcupines have quills a mile long. If all those quills are on end we won't be able to pack the animals very closely, but if we can induce them to become more friendly and lay the quills down, then the density of our imaginary population of porcupines will be greatly increased. Similarly the atoms, with the electrons revolving in wide orbits, occupy a much greater space than they really need. In the tremendous heat of the Sun, the atoms are so battered, the electrons are knocked off the nuclear protons, and we can imagine the quills now lying down. The density will be far greater. This is demonstrated by the density of some stars which are now known to have a density of over 1000. This is the result of packing the electrons and protons in the center, which is gradually going on in all stars.

Gravity increases four times if the distance is halved. As the matter inside becomes denser and denser, the star contracts, till finally its density reaches a tremendous figure.

The Sun in Hal Jus's day was becoming a closed star. Long since the X-rays had ceased. Gradually the ultra-light and the blue light had diminished; the red and infra reds had been accentuated; for the light was changed by the passage through that intense gravitational field. Hal Jus had, less than two thousand years ago, predicted the exact time of the Sun's final decay. After ten more years the Sun would be unable to support its family. The planets they now inhabited—Earth, Venus and Mercury—were supported artificially. The atmospheres of all the planets had long since slowly dissipated into space, and with them had gone the water. These vital things were being replaced constantly by transmutation of the elements of the rocks of the planets. Long ages ago Earth had had a large satellite, which had been used through the ages to supply energy for the factories of man, and to supply the necessary atmosphere. The satellites of Mars had gone as had Saturn with its rings, Jupiter with its satellites, along with the asteroids; but before it escaped, much of Neptune had been freighted to the habitable planets. And now, since Mars had grown too cold, it too, was being sacrificed. Already it was honeycombed with great caverns that had been used as sources of materials and energy. Now it was being split up into small parts, and freighted to the other planets. Already the work was well under way. Mars was furthest from the sun, and smaller than either Venus or Earth.

But when men were assured that there was no hope of life in the solar system for more than half a life-time, they began an even more frantic search for still another way to overcome this last crushing blow of Nature.

But at last a thing was announced that switched the endeavor of the scientists to a new line. The impossible was done. Einstein had said that it was impossible to signal faster than light. But it had at last been done. A scientist had signaled the seventy-five million miles from Earth to Venus in so short a time that the care-

fully prepared cathode ray oscillograph could not detect it. The signal was sent by radio and by the new method exactly simultaneously, and when they reached the station on Venus, the difference in time was just long enough for the radio to make the trip. It was a modification of something that we know in our day, a modification possible only to these descendants of ten billion years of science. Phase velocity we know. When X-Rays pass through certain materials, the index of refraction is less than one, and this can only be true if the velocity in those materials is greater than the velocity of light. The true velocity of the rays is not, but there is a second velocity, the phase velocity, that under those circumstances is greater than the velocity of light.

Phase velocity is due to a wave traveling along the wave chain. A man can go faster than the train he is riding on by walking toward the engine, but practically speaking he cannot reach the station before the train. Similarly, the phase velocity cannot reach the station before the light or X-Rays do. But for countless ages the light has poured forth from the sun, and a message sent down that long train would be able to go many, many trillions of miles at a speed far greater than that of light. That was the new hope of life. For man must escape from the dying sun or perish with it. And now the experiments were pushed forward with new hope.

Then a brilliant young physicist, scarcely through the seventy-year course in one of the great technical institutes, devised a new machine that brought the idea considerably closer to complete success. Television had been invented many years ago and constantly improved. Long since had they gotten away from the scanning apparatus, and the principle was well nigh forgotten, but in some dusty, neglected volume Morus Tol discovered the diagrams. And, with a simple arrangement of known machines, he made a wonderful mechanism that had been worked on for many, many ages. He made a scanning machine that worked in the fourth dimension, thereby being enabled to scan all the other three simultaneously. His first experiments led to amazing images, which, thrown on a fourth dimensional screen, could be seen to pick up solid bodies The work of lifting them was done by the motor driving the fourth dimensional projector. The drag of the body's weight tended to throw the image out of adjustment, but by making a very powerful motor, they could show the image of a man lifting thousands of pounds! The images were absolutely solid. The man did no work.

And then came new developments. The experiments were safer now. Wherever danger was incurred, the scientist merely made his image do the actual experiment! But Morus Tol still led the field. It was he who finally developed the apparatus that could project the images and have them come into three dimensions, being without the aid of a projector at the receiving end. Already the machines had been used in connection with the phase-velocity signaling system.

IT was while he was working on the development of his apparatus that the fatal accident occurred and killed him. Luckily he had kept a careful record of all his experiments, and men were able to duplicate them with the aid of the remnants of his apparatus. He had been working on the actual making of the images; he wanted to be able to keep them real without the machine; in other words, he wanted to give them actual existence; he wanted to reconstruct, atom for atom, the object under his fourth dimensional scanner.

He had been trying to find some ray that would respond to the individual characteristics of the atoms under consideration. He had found it, but finding it he had met his death. The ray had attacked him somehow. It does not seem likely that he experimented on himself without trying it on some inanimate body first. But perhaps he did. At any rate, it did what he hoped, it scanned him, and recognized each individual atom, and each separate molecule, and as far as it went, it was successful. But in scanning him the ray released all the energy in the atoms of his body. He was killed instantly and most of his apparatus was utterly ruined. However, enough was saved to make a beginning possible for the others. And on this basis they built.

As the ray scanned and recognized an atom it drew out its energy, to leave it free. This had fused the apparatus, stopped the ray, and killed the scientist. Knowing the danger, others experimented. By draining the energy away safely they scanned a small object, and sent the signals to another station where, by feeding the necessary energy into the machine, they were able to reconstruct it. The first step had been taken.

But it required many years to develop this apparatus. Now came the greatest problem of all. They must find some means to send the material image to a predestined terminal without having a station there to receive it. This could be done with a three dimensional shadow image. Could they do it with the solid bodies?

The ten thousand years had dwindled steadily—five thousand had passed before the development of the fourth dimensional scanning. Morus Tol was still a young man when he was killed, but with four thousand two hundred years yet to go, they met their hardest problem, and they were without a genius to solve it.

The long years had dwindled to less than two centuries before there came a man who solved the problem of a refinement of the vibration control. It is as impossible for me to describe the machines of that day as it would be for a blind man to describe red to another. It is a thing inconceivable to each. But it was done—only to find that the shock of the journey killed all living creatures. And then, ten short years before the sun at last faded forever, the last bridge was crossed. A man in a space ship was projected from a laboratory on Earth to a point near Venus. All the System watched that demonstration through the news machines.

Long since they had decided where they would go. Now that they could travel with almost infinite speed, they chose a goal that would be safe to life for aeons to come. BETELGUESE! It was their goal now.

And now out in space the great sending station was constructed. The ship to be sent was put in position before it; the scanner viewed it; and the signal for each atom and each molecule followed each other in swift flight on the train of light waves that was their wire. One billion miles from Betelguese the ship would be reintegrated from the energy sent along the beam of the phase-velocity sender.

And now, in the observatory of Hal Jus, the greatest men of the system had gathered to watch those men far out in space. With them had been sent another machine to be operated by one man, a miniature phase-velocity sender that could, if necessary, send the ship back. This was to be stationed in space, going in an orbit about the mighty star.

Now, above the soft whirr of the news-casters focussed on the great screen, there came an audible sigh of excitement, as there flickered on the great screen a dim gray image, blurred and indistinct. Well it might be. Sent on the phase-velocity projector across the universe, it was bringing them the scene within the recreated ship—suddenly the great screen was filled with a brightly lighted scene, and through the sound pick-up came a subdued hum of the mighty engines in the power room. Through the windows of the ship they could see a brilliant shaft of bluish light pouring over the floor. Out through the main pilot's window they saw the

blazing field of stars—and there they saw one dim red one, barely discernible. Probably if they had been there they could not have seen it. Only the super-sensitiveness of the machine made it visible—their sun as it looked millenniums ago! For the light had been traveling slowly for thousands of years to reach the distance their machine had reached in less than an hour.

The men had been anesthetized before the process began, and now they lay in deep sleep. The automatic controls were running the ship, taking complete charge of it.

Strange those men would seem to us. They were under four feet in height, with great barrel chests, long arms and short legs. The dying planets had scant atmosphere, and economy advised a low pressure of the precious gases, lest too much diffusion take place; and Mercury, the smallest planet, put a distinct limit to the pressure. They journeyed from one planet to the other so frequently that an equal pressure on each was almost a requisite. The long arms ended in slender, delicate fingers that were the most perfect tools ever developed. And the toes, too, had become highly prehensile. The many machines that man had built had required all his directing powers. The feet had at first been used only to push pedals, but gradually there came other purposes. Those members could be so useful!

The head was not much larger than ours, but the high, straight forehead seemed much larger on the small man. The brain was deeply creased, the convolutions so complex that, without increasing the size greatly, the surface had been multiplied many times. And it is the surface area that counts. Their large eyes seemed to hold a gentle benignity that would so transcend us as to leave us contented to watch only; still, there was in them a fire of ambition, of hope and of adventure. But we can no more hope to understand their personality than a child of a few days can understand us.

But now the men in the car out in space were stirring; consciousness was returning. The Commander approached the view plate now.

"Sir, I wish to report a successful trip. Betelguese is within one billion miles. One man has died, but the ship's doctor will have him around shortly, as his body temperature is still above 95. We will head for the nearest planet, connecting you now with the outside view plate."

The screen went dark a moment later; the gray surface showed thousands of gleaming points, distant stars, and here and there were a few tiny discs. These, then, must be planets of this mighty sun. Rapidly one of them was growing, expanding. Soon it was an inch across; then it grew rapidly till the shining disc covered all the glowing screen. They had been approaching at 2000 miles a second, but they slowed down to the more moderate pace of 100 miles per second.

Now they saw a strangely glowing light coming up from the planet below. It seemed to approach quickly —then the screen went blank, to be lighted a moment later by the scene within the ship. There was a rapid but efficient scene of action. The commander stepped up to the view plate. Just as he began to speak, the screen went gray, the image blurred, then cleared for a moment; there was an expression of sudden astonishment and surprise on the face of the young commander —then again the screen was dark.

Three hours they waited, but there was no sign from the far-off ship. Silently the men filed out. But day and night that screen was watched. It was late in the evening of the second day that they were at last rewarded for their vigilance. The screen was suddenly shot over with a streak of brilliant red; it glowed green, then went dully gray. A few minutes later it was again illumined, but now the gray field resolved itself into distorted images; men seemed working frantically over the instrument, then the queer chirping sounds of the voices suddenly underwent a change. The screen cleared; then sharp and distinct came the words across the void and the picture of that far-off scene. They were looking from the top of a great rugged cliff of sharp rock such as no living man had ever seen, and the scene beyond was even more strange to their eyes! Great wooded hills rolled off into the distance, and over the carpet of bright green was flung a marvelous canopy of blue, in which there was set a wondrous jewel that flamed blue in majestic splendor. As large as the sun from Mercury it was, but so bright one could not look at it. And in the far distance there rolled a mighty ocean of sparkling water. Such a scene no living eye had ever seen, save in the ancient records, where there were shown the great space flyers hanging over mighty stretches of such water. But in the center of the field was that which riveted the attention of all. There they could see the twisted wreck of the mighty flyer. The great beams were bent and torn apart, the instruments and machinery were wrecked, and to one side there was a great pit that the machinery had blasted in the soil before it was shut off.

The projector now showed the members of the crew of the ship working busily at the makeshift apparatus. They were using hand disintegrators for power supplies. The apparatus was that which they could salvage from the wreck, and faulty. Frequently as they watched they would see the connections arc across, the scene would fade, then come back as quick work repaired the connection. The disintegrator power units were much overloaded and heated so badly that they had to run them in relays. They could not attach more; there was insufficient cable.

"Sir, we were attacked by hundreds of strange beings. They seemed pools of force, living, sentient beings, but the electronic-activity indicators indicated a frequency that denotes atomic forces. I believe they are beings living on atomic energy. They have no material body. Heat rays do not affect them in the least. They shed disintegration rays as a repulsor screen does meteorites. They are unaffected by our most powerful explosives. They have tremendous power. One of them took our space ship and threw it violently away with so terrific an acceleration that the neutralizer was damaged overcoming it. We tried to flee from them, but they seem to be able to go with a speed approaching that of light, and easily overtook us. Finally they forced us near this, the sixth of the ten planets, and threw us down. The machine was wrecked, but the neutralizer, crippled as it was, saved us. The matter disintegrator was broken open, and the power ray tore up the ground a bit. The atomic creatures are hunting us, I believe—they are—there they come—they can blanket our power somehow——"

The screen went gray-black. Never again did they hear from that expedition. But that voice across the void had served as a warning to those that followed.

IT was scarcely a month later that a second expedition of ten ships was projected, one after the other, across the infinite void. These ships were fully armed, but they had come to investigate, not to fight. The enemy seemed to have some strange weapon that they could control from a distance; it was a weapon not inconceivable to these people, merely one unknown. That the Things were in truth living beings was incredible; it was the terrible shock of the sudden attack that must have made the men engender any such strange belief. But the expedition now on its way would solve the problem, no doubt. Again came that silent meeting in

Hal Jus's great domed laboratory. The greatest men of the System had assembled; they were being called in in consultation to examine the weapon of the enemy. Hanlos Tonn, the System's greatest Moleculist, as they called chemists, was there. Tal Nos, the genius of Physics, and Tornok Lor, the great Atomist, and the greatest specialists in every line were present at that conference.

And now before them the great screens glowed mistily. Then slowly they cleared to show in gray outline the interior of the far-off ships. Each ship was represented by a great screen. And now, as the ship gained solidity, the screens cleared, the images became sharp and strong, color filled them out with greater detail. Then slowly the men stirred. They moved with returning consciousness, and took over the control of the ships from the automatic controls. One by one they reported back to headquarters. There was only forty-seven seconds' delay in the time of transmission of signals now, so they maintained two-way communication.

The outside projectors were switched on and the fleet fell into a small cone formation. With the flagship in the lead, they set out to investigate the planets from a distance. The electroscope on the flagship should permit them to make fairly close surface examinations from a safe distance.

Ten planets they found circling the mighty star.

Three of the planets would be directly habitable for man. But on none did they find the great cities they had expected to see. They only saw strange globes of lambent fire darting about. From planet to planet they went, the red glow lighting a great sphere twenty feet in diameter, but for a hundred feet about it the air glowed purple under the ionizing force of some strange radiance. When they moved, they were shooting comets, with brilliantly glowing heads of red and long tails of blue. But they seemed to live on all the planets. Even in the blazing minor star they lived, darting in and coming out of its flames as unconcernedly as a Solarian ship would dart in or out of an atmosphere. Could it be that those men had spoken the truth? It seemed incredible—impossible—but these men had learned millions of years ago that nothing is impossible, and were ready to credit anything if they had reason to believe it so.

For two days those great ships wheeled above the planets, deep in space, undetected. Then one of the glowing Force beings passed close—a scant ten thousand miles away, and through the electroscope, and by means of the electronic activity meters, by spectroscope and pyrometer, by all the complex instruments of their age, they studied him. And the result was conclusive. They were living, sentient beings—Force creatures, conscious pools of titanic energies, forces so great they lived by, that no material body could serve them, and their limbs were the forces that nature had given them. Those forces, which man had spent thousands of years in discovering, a kind nature had given these beings. But in return she seemed to have decided that they needed no brains, for they possess no intelligence. Had man waited another billion years, there might have been intelligence developed in these strange creatures. What an intelligence it would have been — an intelligence based on forces of atomic nature!

But they too had been discovered. In some strange way the creature had sensed them, and sent a call to his friends, for across all the system they could see the strange creatures racing at a velocity that could not be much short of that of light, for while the men were material, and as such could not travel at that speed, the force beings, by their very natures akin to light, could very probably attain to that motion.

THE battle was on. At first the force beings hung in a sphere, a three-dimensional cordon, about the ships, then suddenly their lambent red glowed more strongly, and the screens in the far-off laboratory went dark. They had in some way prevented the transmission of further messages. The men at once formed the ships in a great tube, with the one scanner ship in the center, and then one by one they dropped out and were sent across the void -back to the Sun.

Then one of the watching creatures darted forward, toward one of the great ships hanging there in space. As he came within range a disintegration ray flashed out, touched him, and was shed from him in great leaping sparks as the energy was met and opposed. A heat ray leaped forth—the creature paid no attention to that, did not even bother to oppose it—only circled closer. A stream of explosive bullets were launched at it, but they affected it no more than the heat ray. It seemed hopeless. And now the creature hung there, and suddenly he underwent a strange change. In the glowing center of his strange force-pool there suddenly appeared a strange nucleus of glowing violet light, a nucleus that spread throughout the twenty-foot sphere of lambent red force. But it was shot through by strange streamers of waving angry red. Then these strange streamers of fiery red seemed to condense to two main streamers that reached out and out—and touched the great ship. There was a blinding flash of red light—and in place of the great ship there floated a slow cloud of fine, fine dust that glowed softly in the light of the blazing sun. Then the strange streamers seemed to contract, to lessen, and with them the strange purple light from the creature. Slowly, gently he floated away. Of the fleet of ten great ships, and the accompanying matter-sender, six ships returned. The rest floated out there in the interplanetary space around Betelguese.

The men of the system had data to work on, but a great deal of work was yet to be done. They must find some way to destroy these pools of force. Only forces could affect them, and they must find one that was fatal to them. Only ten short years remained to them, so, although no weapon had been developed, a great battle fleet was started, that the ships might be ready when at last the weapon was developed.

And on all the worlds great works were to be done. The records of a civilization ten thousand thousand thousand years old must be collected and prepared for their journey across the void. The exhibits from museums, ages old, must be packed with tenderest care. They had strange exhibits there of the first beginnings of civilization, tools and weapons of savage man, strange things that killed or injured by throwing small bits of metallic matter at the enemy. Strange clumsy vehicles they had, made of metals that corroded so rapidly as to fall to pieces in a brief 1,000 years or so, unless they were preserved in an atmosphere of argon and driven by great clumsy engines tapping the slight energy of molecules with an efficiency of hardly 10 per cent. Other machines that had been intended to drag man through the air, not supported by forces, but held up by air! Then came the first ancient antigravitors; then the swifter machines propelled by the energy of matter.

Exhibits unutterably ancient they had, and these must be sent across all that void. Invaluable archives they were.

But with them must go their own great machines, mighty mechanisms for producing their foods, for making their ships; the thousand and one things that went to make up the great structure of their age-old civilization. And huge sending stations of inconceivable power had to be erected to transmit them. Titanic projectors capable of sending a machine weighing a quarter of a million tons in one scanning. Other machines were so

huge that they must be cut into sections and sent in pieces.

A GREATER work—a quieter, invisible work—was being done by tireless workers in the laboratories. Fifty-three hours a day they worked in the great government laboratories on Earth. On Venus the shorter day made shorter hours desirable. But steadily the scientists were working on their problem. At last the Minus Energy was developed. They were to try it out before equipping the entire fleet with it. At last ten ships were equipped and sent with a scanner machine to Betelguese.

Now they courted an encounter with the Force Giants. They were soon satisfied, for thousands of them came at terrific speed the moment they attacked one. That first one had floated into range as they threw a searchlight on it; then, as it began to color with the deadly violet and red destruction, a tiny projectile was launched at it. Not more than six inches long by two in diameter it raced at its target at nearly a thousand miles a second. It was carefully followed by the anxious watchers at the ship's electroscopes—it reached the floating Thing, and exploded.

But perhaps you or I would not have termed that action explosive. That little projectile contained several pounds of half-destroyed matter. It had been used as a fuel in an industrial plant, till it had been about half annihilated, and now it was in that curious, borderline condition, when it had a tremendous tendency to absorb energy and become matter again, and an equally tremendous tendency to release its energy and become free energy as light or heat. The conditions determined one or the other, and the new Minus Force shells were used under conditions of space that made them exert a tremendous tendency to become matter. Billions of billions of ergs of energy they could absorb, and would absorb. They drew it from all the surrounding ether so rapidly that it had the effect on all surrounding substance or sources of energy of being in contact with something at a temperature far below absolute zero. The result was obvious. When it was set off, all light, heat, or any other energy within a region of ten miles or so, was instantly drawn to it, until it had been satisfied. It was an energy vacuum shell.

That first Atomic Giant did not last long enough to warn the others. It was an entirely unexpected form of attack, and when the light of the mighty sun could once more be seen through the spot where the Minus Force had been sent, the Atomic Creature was not there, all its great forces had been drained from it. And, being only a pool of force, it vanished.

But now there came from all directions great streams of the Atomic Giants. They seemed to suddenly appear close at hand, apparently coming from nowhere. They traveled as fast as light, therefore they reached them as soon as the light, so that their approach was invisible. Only when they slowed down could they be seen. And now, from each ship came steady streams of these Minus Force shells. Thousands of the energy-absorbing projectiles flew in amongst the massed attackers—and many of them took effect, drawing the energy from the great creatures, destroying them utterly. The weapon was a success! They fired a second volley when others of the creatures came within sighting range—but they did not affect the Atomic Giants this time. Great dark patches appeared, but the creatures that had been there before, were there now, as powerful as ever, quite uninjured! What did it mean?

They did not know. They only knew that the enraged creatures were closing in on them, closer and closer—and now the ships were being sent back to the system as rapidly as possible—one—two—three—four—but more could not get through—the others were cornered, marooned in infinity by the destruction of the sender. The Force Creatures, utterly immune to the Minus Force shells attacked unchecked, gripped it with strange forces, limbs, hands or gripping force, that tore through the foot-thick alloy like so much tissue paper, metal, which was fifty times as strong as our frail steel, a metal whose molecules had been designed by the scientists of the race millions of years ago, and in all those ages no stronger, more inert metal had ever been found. But now that tough envelope was torn open, for the forces of atoms were greater than the forces of molecules, and the creatures used those forces.

But those marooned ships were lost—destroyed soon by the vengeful giants. And the forces of man on the far-off planets of a far-off sun were worried anew. Their weapon was a failure after all. Some new thing must be developed. But how did it happen that the first attempts were successful? The scientists believed it was due to the fact that the first attempts were utter surprises to the creatures—they were taken before they could prevent the loss of their energy. In some way they were able to build a barrier about themselves that prevented the loss of energy, even as it prevented the penetration of the energy of the disintegration ray.

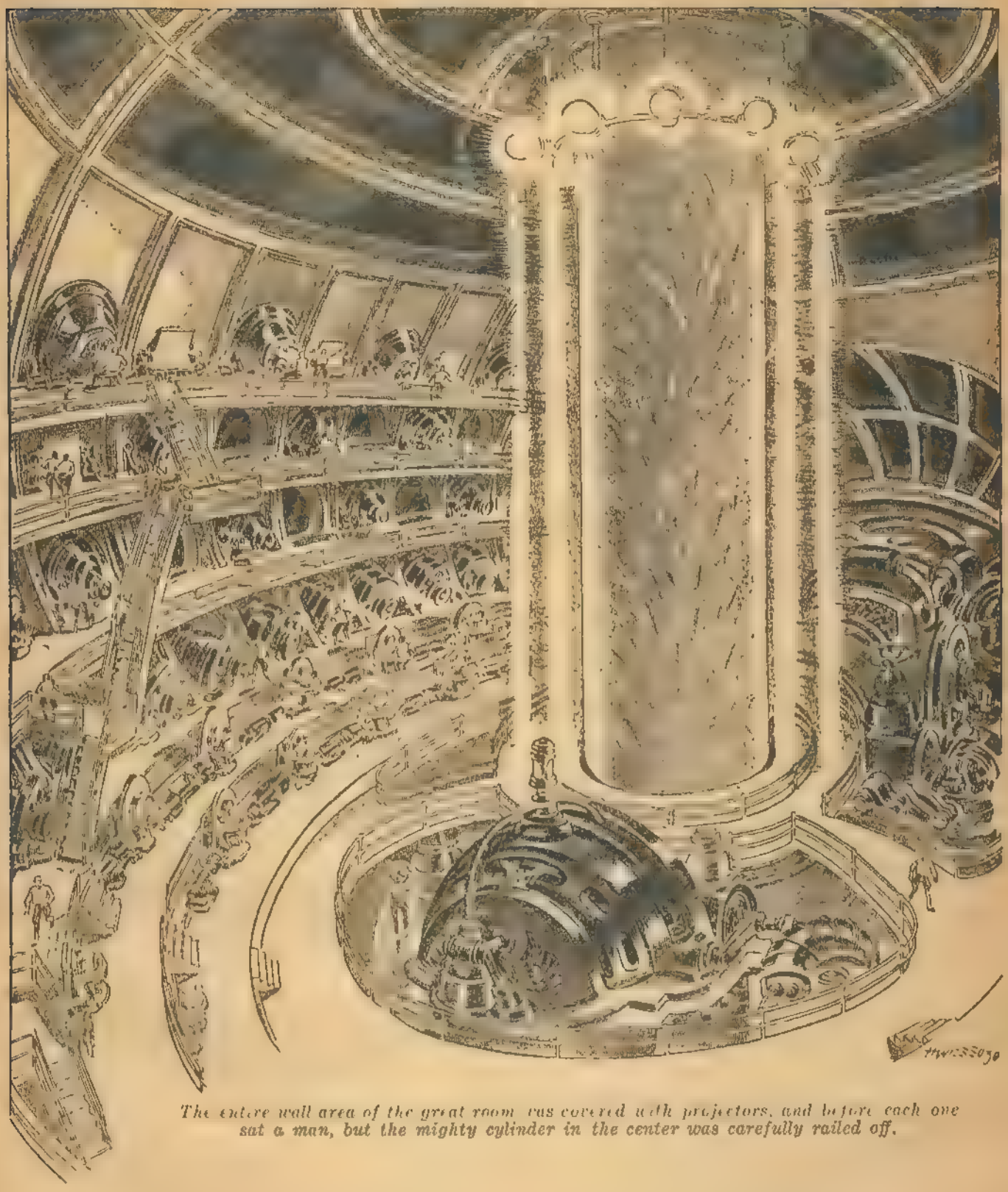
But man must develop some new, some stronger weapon. The time was getting too short for more failures. For Hal Jus had announced a discovery that made men even more anxious to abandon their age-old home. The Sun was to become a nova. These flaming stars had been known and studied for ages. Dim, old stars they were that suddenly flared up for a brief period of intense activity, then quickly faded back even lower than before. It behooved man to move quickly. A mighty people that for ten billion years had slowly built up the mighty structure of their science had to move.

Many weapons were tried, many expeditions of two or three ships made the trip, and attempted to destroy the creatures. Some succeeded moderately well, others met with ghastly failure.

Two brief years now remained to them. Expeditions to many of the younger stars within range of their great projectors were made, but always they brought back bad news. Here they found no habitable planets; there the sun had not yet developed planets, and there was no time to stop to make and cool off a planet. That would require a century, even for one as small as Mercury. They must migrate to Betelguese. But Toralk, the mighty sun without planets, was kept in mind. If necessary, they could make the planet, and while it cooled, float in space, living in their mighty ships, making air and food and all their needs from matter torn from the sun. The great battle fleet of thirty thousand ships was ready. Each ship, two thousand one hundred feet long and three hundred feet beam, was ready to start. They merely awaited the hoped-for weapon.

At last it was discovered. Another of the test trips was made. Three small ships went, and one sender, that they might return.

In the depths of space they were re-integrated, and now they slowly proceeded to the blazing star before them, then hovered near one of the circling planets. In a moment they were discovered, and literally thousands of the glowing creatures darted up from the green, brightly lighted world below. These creatures had learned that these ships were hostile and as they drew near, they were already changing to that fatal violet, streaked with red. Great flaming streamers of force reached out to the ships, but in that instant the ships suddenly seemed to shimmer, as an object seen



The entire wall area of the great room was covered with projectors, and before each one sat a man, but the mighty cylinder in the center was carefully railed off.

through heated air, and around them there was a strange, pale radiance, a radiance that seemed to have substance. It seemed to flow, to move, yet always remained as a strange, half-visible, milky shroud, that surrounded the ships. And then the streamers of glowing death reached out—touched it—and disappeared! The creature leaped back, as though in pain, writhing away. The usual color of the creature was suffused by a pale, but growing green—then as the red was more and more overcome by the rising green, the glowing shape grew misty—then like a puff of vapor before a breeze it was gone—the great Atomic Giant had been mortally wounded and before their eyes, had died. Instantaneous dissolution had taken place.

The others held back in fear. There was something new to combat and they went cautiously. Now there leapt out from the nose of the ship a long beam of the milky, glowing ray—it touched one of the great creatures—there was a slight flash of light—and it was gone. Then the glowing ray swept around and erased those forms there in space, erased them as one might wipe the image from the screen with the flick of the switch. And then, precipitately they fled. They were beaten; they could not attack this new ship.

ACROSS the void it was sent, while the few men left in the ray machine awaited the coming of the mighty battle fleet that would soon be ready. Around them glowed a pale, scarcely visible field of light. Defenseless they seemed as they lived and slept in the car swinging in its orbit about the blazing sun, but many of the Atomic Giants found the mighty strength that lay hidden in that thin wall of scarcely visible vibration. And constantly the men were observing the planets and communicating the data to the leaders on Earth and Venus.

And in the System wild activity was going on. The entire force of the machines of all the planets was concentrated on the production of the great generators of this new force. It was simple in principle. The Atomic Giants lived by using as their "fuel" the energy of the atoms. We live by burning the carbon and hydrogen of our foods with the oxygen of the air. If the supply of either oxygen or food were cut off, the incombustibility results and we die. If oxygen is cut off, we die because the carbon compounds will no longer burn. If food is cut off, we die because there is nothing to consume the oxygen with.

The Atomic Giants needed no oxygen or carbon—any element would do. But they needed elements that they could decompose for their energy. Any atom under normal conditions would do, but if that atom was made incombustible they too died. This new force that was so deadly to them, was a force created by the energy of matter. The electrons of matter were altered by the application of terrific spatial strains, and they would no longer react in the same way and would not decompose as did the normal electron. They merely prevented the use of atomic energy wherever they were. Thus the "fuel" of the Atomic Giants was made incombustible and they died.

But there was a tremendous amount of work to be done before they could be ready for the great offensive to be carried across space. The great ships were rapidly being equipped with the electron projectors and assembled in long rows outside the great transmitting stations, awaiting the final start.

It was nearly two weeks before the great fleet was ready. Then they were all assembled, ready to start. The control ship went first. Since the cessation of the release of atomic energy did not affect the release of material energy, they did not have to worry for the safety of the men when projected out into space. They would regain consciousness soon enough, and the wonderful automatic devices that ran the complex mechanism would hold it in place, maintain its temperature and the distance of the one ship from the other. The protective shield of the strained electrons would protect them.

In the darkened observatory on Venus, many men were watching in silence. The room was absolutely silent; only the smooth, gentle hum of the smoothly operating news-casters marred the utter quiet. They had come to observe, not to comment, and they waited quietly.

There was a flash of light on the screen and the image became clear and sharp. They seemed to be in a huge room, the walls were lined with small electro-vision boards, tier above tier of balconies ran around the sides of the great room, and in the center rose a mighty cylinder. The entire wall area of the great room was covered with the projectors, and before each one sat a man. But the mighty cylinder in the center was carefully walled off. Now, as they watched it, it suddenly glowed faintly bluish—the air about it was being ionized—there arose a faint, deep hum; then there appeared about it an intense corona of air, ionized under the titanic forces within it—tiny shooting sparks crackled blue over all its polished surface——

The view faded; another replaced it. Now they seemed to be in a smaller room, a room whose front wall was lined with a series of large view boards. Twenty of these boards there were, and on each was the image of a room whose metal walls glistened in the light of the dull red sun. They were looking into the operating room of the greatest of the ships—the flagship. This ship, unlike the others, was a cube, surmounted by a smaller cube control-top. The mighty cylinder inside generated a field that surrounded all the ship with the protecting force, but triply intense. The fighting machines were two thousand one hundred feet long, and three hundred beam. These carried powerful protective force generators, but also they carried fourteen sets of the projectors, three along each side, the top and the bottom, and one at each end. Inside, the terrific energy needed to operate these was being generated in smoothly humming machines. Titanic they loomed above the tiny men tending them. These same giant machines would, later, with a few simple adjustments, furnish the power for the receiver machines to receive the things from the Solar System. But now they were engines of war. Over each thousand of these great ships was a division leader. The twenty division leaders were represented by the twenty view boards in the flagship. The individual ships were each represented by one of the boards in the central control room, so that in any case they knew the fate of every ship, and aid could be sent them.

Now the scene on Hal Jus's screen became misty—the ship was being sent into space. It would be close to an hour before the scene reappeared. Now they shifted the adjustment to watch the sending of the armada of space.

With the many stations in operation, the work went along smoothly and within two hours all were there. The twenty thousand ships had automatically assumed the formation of a mighty cone; the three dimensional equivalent of the flying wedge of their remote ancestors.

Gradually now the men within were awakening. The scene in the control room shifted to the flagship's engine room, as clicking relays shifted the connection to another viewplate on the distant ship. The mighty engines loomed huge above the tiny cots of the sleeping engineers. Here too was the mighty cylinder, but now it was seen as the core of a gigantic coil, into which ran great cables from huge, soft-purring generators. Even the forces of material energy required straining to operate that great electron distorter.

Hal Jus pushed another button. Again the tiny relays out in space reconnected him. The commander was awake. The control room was soon a scene of the greatest activity. As soon as the necessary weapon had been discovered, the plans for the great action had been sketched. The formations were rapidly being worked out.

The great fleet was divided into ten parts of two thousand each, and to each of the nine smaller, cool planets one of the ten divisions went. The tenth stayed as a guard to the flagship. Now they went in ten great cones of glistening ships, a mighty armada of space, coming across the void to conquer the new universe for Mankind. And now they separated as they drew closer to the System, for the ships had been re-formed nearly four billion miles from the central sun, Betelguese.

THE expeditions swept along over and close to the surface of the planets they had been sent to investigate. Heat, cold, size, made no difference to the Atomic Creatures and all the small planets would be taken first. The smaller planets would be attacked first. The creatures would probably flee to the outer planet, but it was necessary to plan to attack them there.

Low over the sunlit surface of a great planet they were swinging; below them there rapidly unrolled a terrain of mighty forests of green trees, vast green meadows of gently rolling land, and all bathed in the blinding glory of a blazing white sun. What a scene for eyes that had been starved of light for countless years! What a land of hope and promise and pleasure it seemed to these small gentle men. For generations the only plants they had seen were the poor small things raised artificially in the museums. Here they saw magnificent trees that towered two hundred feet into the air, in wondrous profusion of leafy green.

Now they were swinging over mighty oceans, gigantic patches of water that were large enough to cover all the surface of their smaller globes, for this planet was large as the long gone Neptune, or Uranus. How wonderful those vast areas of magnificent blue water, sparkling brilliantly in the light of the gigantic sun, seemed to them. Each man, before he started on this expedition, had his eyes treated that the new light would not be too bright and that it might appear white to him, so that now they could fully appreciate the wondrous beauty of the scene beneath.

And wondrous it was to men who had never seen water except as it had been manufactured in their great plants for community use. No oceans, no rivers, no lakes had there been in their system for over five billion years.

Now they were following a mighty river, a river larger than any that Earth had ever seen, for it drained a vast area of a humid planet. Yet it was a new planet, with mighty mountain ranges, mountains that towered in mighty snowcapped peaks in the blue distance, over wide ranges of green forest! What a sight it was for the eyes of these men! What a wondrous country! And now, as they rounded the bend in the great river, they cried out in excited wonder, for before them the great river, vaster than three Amazons, was pouring over a mighty ledge of rock, nearly four hundred feet in height; and from it rose a tremendous wave of sound that made the great ships tremble with the force of it, as they slowed to a few hundred miles an hour to watch the gigantic cascade. Then on again—There was much to do ere they could claim this beautiful country.

And on a low ridge among the mighty mountains they came upon a grim reminder that it was not theirs yet. A great hole lay carved out in bare soil—a sharp contrast with the rich green of the country. Here and there they saw scattered brightly shining bits of metal and a section of heavy metal armor plate, torn and twisted by some enormous strain. To one side lay a heavy girder, torn and bent into a U. They recognized the spot whence the voice of the lost expedition had come across the void to them. Careful electroscopic and photographic studies of the spot were made ere they moved on.

The Atomic Creatures feared them now, it seemed, for though they had come even to one of the planets, they had seen none of the enemy. Surely there must be many hiding!

On the other side of the great mountain range they found their answer. Here, too, was a vast area of green, rolling meadow, but far out across it they could see a great bare spot, where only the dark, raw soil was visible. They swung the armada toward it, and shot forward to investigate, but before they had come within a thousand miles of the spot there suddenly appeared as from nowhere an army of the Atomic Giants. No doubt this bare spot was their home, and from the great area it seemed that they must inhabit it in great numbers. The powerful radioactive effects of their force-fields no doubt killed every plant.

These creatures were not entirely defenseless, for if their numbers were great enough they could exert a powerful interfering force and break down the protective field. But they knew that many would be required. And now all in an instant the battle for this world was on, the great creatures striving to destroy the ships, while burning rays of milk radiance stabbed and slashed at their strange glowing force-pools. Soon they found the vulnerable point of the ships and began to attack single ships in numbers. Slowly, slowly, the milky radiance would contract, while the smooth purring of the mighty generators rose to a throaty hum, then became a vicious snarling roar. The great electron distorter cylinder would become a mass of shooting sparks, crackling, snapping till the atmosphere about it was alive with twisting streamers of flame twelve to twenty-four inches long. Then slowly it would heat—and if the attack was still unbroken, there would be a queer sighing hum from the generator, and a slight explosion—and the ship was gone. The generators, however, would withstand the attacks of ten or eleven of the creatures safely, and the other ships would come to the rescue—but many times there were no free ships in the neighborhood, and all available power must be turned into the ray generators, the slashing beams cutting at the many opponents. Even the propulsion apparatus was robbed of energy that every last meg-erg might be fed into the ray generators. Thousands of the Atomic Giants were destroyed, their color turning that strange green, then they suddenly were snuffed out. But sixty-two ships were lost. Still many remained when at last the Atomic enemy fled suddenly into space. There was no way of following their motion, they merely disappeared, going off with the speed of light. Then the visitors explored all that world, and nowhere did they find any more creatures.

But now the reports from all the other planets were coming in, and in every case eventual victory was secured. On two planets the issue was for a time in doubt, for there seemed to be great centers of the creatures here. However, there was no difficulty in discovering where the remnant had fled to! The electronic activity readings of the outermost planet, the minor sun, had risen 12.5 per cent. Since a star does not depend on atomic energy, it was easy to see that the creatures had sought refuge here. The range of the present ray was too short to permit attack on that planet. The blazing furnace drove them back to a distance of a million miles as the least distance of safe approach. They could not attack the creatures here. What could they do? They must exterminate them before the people moved to their new planets, for the creatures could make a raid, destroy a city, and be gone before the battleships could leave their docks.

The control ship proceeded directly to the most pleasant of the planets, with its guard, and the other ships were sent to watch the planets lest the Atomic Creatures return. Then on the planet the men began to set up one of the great receiving stations. From the sides of the ships ran mighty power cables to the powerful station. Then across space there came expert engineers, workmen, instruments and tools, working machines, constructor robots, and then great pieces of machinery so huge they could send only one section at a time. With these a new station was built to replace the temporary one.

ALREADY a small city was developing it seemed. But back on the old planets, mighty works were being undertaken. They were building two thousand ships, the biggest ships that had ever been built. Millions of tons they weighed, and each ship was one vast power plant. Down through the heart of it ran a mighty cylinder of glistening metal. A tiny control room, invisible among the titanic machines, governed all its vast

energies. It was a gargantuan projector of the nullifying field, a mighty ship that could hurl its energies into space to form a field of the force that could reach out across a million and a half miles. Two thousand of these vast machines were being built. Gigantic power plants they were. But these peacefully minded men designed them so that, their work done, they could be easily converted into merchant cargo ships, and the mighty generators could be used to light and heat their cities.

In less than two weeks the great ships were ready, and were resting on the surface of the great world out there across space, ready for the attack. The last mighty form had but just floated, light as a feather, from the huge receiving station, and now they lay in a row. So vast they were that they seemed unreal, figments of some strange dream. Mighty cigar-shaped hulls of four-foot armor plate, half sunken in slight depressions they lay now, their terrific weight making the soil flow like some semi-liquid mass. Nestled between two of the gargantuan ships there rested the control ship. Now, one by one the fleet of the mighty bulks rose gently, gracefully into the air, formed in a perfect cone, with the control ship, scarcely visible in this congregation of giants, following behind the leading ship.

Out to that minor sun they flashed, and around it they formed a great sphere of ships. Then each of the mighty projectors, nose pointing to the blazing sun below, turned loose its powers. Through special filters they could watch the field forming. First it was a thin shell that surrounded the entire planet as the projectors threw it into position. Ten thousand small ships were occupied in maintaining the field of electrons in place with their projectors. Already the shell of force was thick and strong. Unless the Force Creatures made a concerted effort at some one point, they would soon be doomed.

They did this. There must have been many, many thousands of them. The field was almost broken, it was bulging out, scattering under the drive of their energies. Soon they would have broken through, but one of the great projector ships reached the spot before the field had quite yielded, and condensing his field projector till it was a ray, they could see the field suddenly fall in, driven in by the awful power of that titanic driving.

It took them sixty-three hours to completely establish that mighty energy field. Naturally the star, which made no use of Atomic energy, was quite unaffected. But when, at the end of three weeks, the energy field had slowly dissipated itself into space, there were no more of the Atomic Giants.

Now the four habitable planets were at once settled upon. Already they had been carefully mapped, and the Supreme Council had drawn up a plan for the use of the vast planets. More area there was than they needed now, by far, so the cities were scattered widely over the globes. Mere planetary distances meant nothing to them. And all the areas between were carefully preserved as vast, natural parks. Through them wound roads for the little ground cars, so that the people might better see the beauties of the place. And some of the harmless animals would be permitted to live that the future population might know them. It was to be the fulfilment of a millennium-old dream—a warm, sunlight world, a kindly, young world where nature supplied the air, and the water, and the warmth in great abundance.

It was a kindly nature they seemed to have met here. And the work began.

Dozens, hundreds of the great receiver stations were set up. And at each station there would grow a great city. Now there poured across the infinite void a mighty influx of machines and workers and tools. These were the first, for they must build the cities for the billions to come. Rapidly the work went on as the skilled artisans directed the mighty machines in their labors, and on the surface of this new globe there rose from the ground mighty walls of lustrous, gleaming metal, reflecting the sun in a million different colors, a wondrous city of flashing, changing light, for the metal walls were automatically ruled with thousands of lines to the inch, a titanic diffraction grating that sent up a rainbow of changing, flashing color. A mile and a half into the air towered the buildings of the cities, and already the commerce was building up as the great receiver stations discharged their steady stream of immigrants.

One and a half years it took them to move all their treasures and priceless records, all their goods, all their machines and themselves across the void into their new cities. One and a half years of swift, efficient labor that transformed these new worlds into civilized planets.

But now they had twenty billion years to live ere these planets, too, would be dark, cold and sunless. And then they could easily move to some other distant system. But why wait till the Sun grew cold? They were already making investigations. Out across space there still glowed countless millions of unexplored stars! Now there would be no population limit to their peoples; there would be expansion, and since each man lived from two to three thousand years, the expansion could be rapid.

Four of the planets were naturally habitable, but five there were which should be so in the future. There was one yet a glowing planet, still hot from its formation. Two were so far from the major sun that they were cold to absolute zero, save when they were in conjunction with the minor sun. These the engineers and astro-physicists had investigated. They would be drawn nearer the sun when the population warranted, and one more that turned on its axis but once a year could easily be started rotating. Air and water it lacked, but that would be easy to supply. And a last planet was so close to the mighty blazing Betelguese that it was kept dull red by the titanic furnace so near it, a scant thirty million miles away. That would be drawn to a more comfortable distance. There was indeed room for much expansion in this system.

But still there was the urge of exploration, of adventure. There might be other battles to fight, other worlds to conquer! Already mighty exploration ships were being prepared to dispatch to half a dozen systems. Perhaps they would bring commerce; perhaps it would be wider domain. But it was that same lure of adventure that had driven the first caveman from his rocky cliff to explore the wilder lands. It was the love of adventure, another name for ambition. It would take more than ten thousand thousand thousand years to kill that!

THE END

Paradise and Iron

(*Continued from page 363*)

"Oh, Mr. Cassidy," Mildred finally cried; "you ought to come along with us!"

"What would I do there, child?" Cassidy answered kindly, grateful that some sort of break in the embarrassed silence had been offered. "I've got a big job here."

"It almost seems that I also have," I said slowly. "I feel somewhat as though I were running away from a duty."

"You may forget that," Cassidy replied promptly. "Your job is *there*, in your Texas town, practicing among your own people. And Mildred's job is by your side. You've done your bit here, and we'll never forget you."

"But what are the poor people going to do?" Mildred asked, in considerable distress over the thought.

"They'll have to do some work," I said cynically. "That will be terrible."

"They will find that work gives them quite as much joy as painting pictures did," Cassidy said in kindly tones. "But there will be hardships."

"And they won't all survive it," I remarked. "This is going to mean a tremendous change in living conditions, which means privation and suffering. It means a high death-rate. When the Pilgrims came to Plymouth, half of them died during the first winter. What do you think—is all mechanical service wrecked for good?"

Cassidy shook his head.

"I rather think that there is not enough left to be of any immediate use. When the people learn to understand and repair and operate some of the machines, then there might be some service, of a sort. But they won't have time for that for a while. They'll have to hustle for a bare living first—plant grain, kill meat, keep the city clean. Only after they have learned this and become accustomed to it, will they have time to study machinery."

"I am sure," I said confidently, "that as a community, you will succeed. But there are bound to be hardships. It will be a long pull and a hard pull. But, your people, on the whole, have the right stuff in them. Though I can't help feeling that I ought to be staying and helping."

"No! Kaspar wished, and you promised, otherwise. And he was right. I would have spoken the same in his place. You were trained and prepared for service among your own people. Mildred, even, is better prepared for your world than for this one; she was not raised as her friends were.

"But most of all—I am sure that it was in Kaspar's mind as it is in mine—our people must work out their own salvation. They must furnish their own leaders, their own labor, their own suffering. Now that Kaspar is gone, he who has been not only their leader, but their father for three generations, another great leader must arise——"

"I think he is here!" I shouted, exultant as my discovery. "Mr. Cassidy, you are the man, and you know it!"

Mildred smiled through her tears and held out her hand.

"If you will take my grandfather's place on this island, I shall withdraw my invitation, and cease urging you to come with us," she said.

Cassidy did not speak. None of us spoke any more. Cassidy walked slowly down the gangplank, and then threw it back up on deck. Mildred went to the stern-house, and soon the motors began to hum. There was a churning in the water behind the boat, and the graceful, cream-colored craft moved slowly in the green water. As we gathered speed, Mildred stood there with one hand on the wheel, gazing backward. The trees slipped more and more swiftly past us; Cassidy's figure beside the concrete shop grew smaller and smaller in the distance.

As he disappeared in the dim perspective I caught myself wondering if he would ever come to Galveston for supplies as Kaspar used to come.

THE END

About Our Prize Editorial

THIS being your publication, you, the readers, have certain ideas, not only about this publication but about scientifiction as well. The editors believe that their mission is complete when they select and edit stories that go into the making of this magazine. On the other hand, they feel that you, the readers, have a more detached view of the magazine itself, and that very often your ideas as to the magazine, and as to scientifiction in general, are not only valuable, but are original and instructive as well. For that reason it has been decided to print the best letter—about 500 words—which can be used as an editorial, on the editorial page, and to award a prize of $50.00 for any letter so printed.

The letters which do not win the Quarterly prize, but which still have merit, may be printed in the "Editorials from Our Readers" Department. Laudatory letters containing flattering remarks about the stories themselves, or of the magazine, are not acceptable for the editorial page. We want inspiring or educational letters, embodying material which can be used as an editorial along scientifiction themes.

Remember, it is the idea that counts. A great literary effort is not necessary, as the editors reserve the right to edit all letters received, in order to make them more presentable for publication. Remember, too, that anyone can enter this contest, and everyone has an equal chance to get on the editorial page of AMAZING STORIES QUARTERLY hereafter.

This contest will continue until further notice. Contest for each issue closes the 15th of the second month preceding date of issue—viz., next contest closing date is the 15th of August.

Upton had no difficulty identifying it as the disk of the full Moon.

CERTAINLY the most amazing discovery that had been made for many decades with Terra's children on the discovering end was made first by an obscure American astronomer with a small telescope, at Arequipa, Peru, in the early spring of 1938. It put every astronomer at once on the very tips of his toes and created more discussion than there had been since the days of the immortal Galileo, Kepler, Newton, Laplace, and the Herschels about our fascinating satellite, variously known by various peoples as Luna, Selene, the Moon, and so forth, and by its own people as Arelli. Finally, it gave an almost frantic impetus to the struggle to bring to perfection the several already nearly or partly successful attempts at the navigation of space.

For centuries selenographers, eminent and otherwise, had scrutinized every visible square mile of Luna's

The Princess of Arelli

By Aladra Septama

Author of "The Cry from the Ether," "Dragons of Space," etc.

PERHAPS the Moon is not habitable now for want of an atmosphere. But it does not necessarily follow that it was always uninhabitable. It may even be possible that many hundreds of years hence the surface of our own planet may become so frigid as to be unendurable by mankind. Does that mean that all life will then cease? Hardly. Why, therefore, should we assume that because the surface of the Moon does not seem possible for any kind of life as we know it, there is no intelligent life anywhere on or deep down in the satellite? When space travel becomes a thing of the day, we will learn definitely what there is upon our other planets and satellites. In the meantime, this subject furnishes ample opportunity for imaginative writers of good scientific fiction. Those who have read Aladra Septama's previous stories, know that this author easily comes into this category. Those of our new readers who are making Mr. Septama's acquaintance through this story have a treat in store for them.

Illustrated by WESSO

surface—Kepler, Herschel, Pickering, and Naysmith; Schroeter, Klein, and Schmidt; Flammarion, Bailly, and de Ronville; Maggini and Riccioli. It had long been practically settled that Luna was a "dead" world, where nothing ever happened, though *some* things might happen there; that it was entirely devoid of atmosphere, but *might* have more or less air; that it owned no clouds, water, snow, ice, flora, or fauna, but might have some ice, snow, *and* water in certain places, to say nothing of lowly forms of vegetation *and* animal life. Almost the only things on which astronomers had agreed were that the Moon had about the fanciest lot of mountains they had ever seen, making our own greatest Mount Everest cloud his white old head for shame; that it possessed ten or a dozen things called "seas," because they looked like them, but if they had ever contained water they contained it now no more; that it had "over 200,000 but less than 1,000,000" things synonymously called by courtesy craters, ring mountains, bulwark plains, circuses, or amphitheaters, which they named Tycho, Copernicus, Stadius, Clavius, Menelaus, and so forth, the nature, cause, and condition of which were not known; and a very, very baffling set of "ray systems."

It is true that the distinguished German, Schroeter, declared the Moon inhabited by beings not unlike ourselves, and even thought he had discovered a city not far from the famous crater of Copernicus, just to the north of the lunar equator, close to the edge of the Mare Imbrium, or Sea of Showers. But he had had only a small telescope, and his city was later declared null and void.

But about this obscure American with a small glass at Arequipa: The two greatest differences between this American, who was Frederick X. Harding, and his lifelong friend and intimate, Billy Upton, were, that Harding was an astronomer with a penchant for selenography and had more money than he knew what to do with, while Upton was a chemist, who could usually pay his rent, but who was withal so amiable that nobody cared much whether he did or did not.

In this condition of things, Upton was routed out of his bed in San Francisco one night in the summer of 1938 by a telegraph messenger. After the regulation

number of grunts and groans, and three rings at his door bell, Upton got to the door and got it open.

"Hey! Listen here, Hermes, don't you know——"

"Telegram for yuh, Mister."

"Well, suppose there is, Hermes, couldn't——"

"M' name's Tony. Sign right here, Mister."

Upton sighed and signed. The boy left mumbling something about something, and Upton slammed the door and returned to his chamber, mumbling something else about something else. But that was nothing much compared with the many things he was too speechless to say when he had read the message, which contained the following ten words and no others:

"Important developments increasing lunar green spot come immediately answer collect."

Upton spluttered, choked, kicked a non-existent cat, and finally delivered himself of some remarks our readers would not want the editors to know about. Upton was not an astronomer.

After recapturing some coherence he went to the telephone, called Western Union, and said he wanted to send a collect message to Frederick X. Harding, at Harding Observatory, Arequipa, Peru. The transaction, after preliminaries, ran something as follows:

"Ain't that lovely? Can come but sha'nt. No, s-h-a-n-t, as in shanty. Got that? Can come but shan't. Better change hootch. I know 839—eight thr-r-ree ni-un, eight hundred thirty-nine, yes, that's it. I know eight three nine green spots in San Francisco alone. That's all."

"Do you wish the words 'That's all' to go in the message, sir?"

"Huh? No, no! I was just telling you that that's all of the telegram. Come to think of it, though, I don't care whether you put them in or not. Just use your own judgment about that. Did you say something? Oh! The name is William Upton—Billy. Yes. And the number is 2315 Sacramento Street."

"I will repeat your collect fast message to——"

"No, I refuse to listen! You repeat it to old Freddie Harding, and remember she goes collect, too! I've lost enough sleep over that uh-huh uh-huh for one night. Send her as she lies, and I hope you get it wrong. Gooooo-bye."

The second day after the first one, Upton received a letter by air mail signed with the combination of lines and angles he had come to know stood for "Fred." Fortunately the letter itself was typewritten. It was couched in the following affectionate terms, minus some of the worst ones:

"You infernal idiot, don't you know that an increasing lunar green spot is the most priceless treasure that could be imagined? But, of course, you don't. I should have known you wouldn't. I'm enclosing my check for $1,000.00, though heaven knows you're not worth it. Now *will* you shut up, and hurry?"

Upton chuckled. Good old Freddikins.

Followed directions as to the steamers making the port of Mollendo, on the southwestern coast of Peru, from which a small railroad coughs and wheezes its way, slowly and indifferently, to Arequipa, on to the shores of Lake Titicaca, 13,000 feet above the sea, and on north as far as Cuzco.

IF there existed any special reason why Upton should not go, he could not recall what it was, so he cashed the check, paid two months' rent in advance, causing his landlady to reach for her smelling salts, and took the next boat. Grand old chap, Freddie was, even if he did take life a bit seriously.

Upton had first considered flying down, but there had been an unfortunate crash only a few days before, and that made him decide for the slower travel. Which is only another instance how little things affect our lives and almost make us believe in Fate. For had he taken an airplane—had he taken an airplane he would not have taken the ship Umpalla; and had he not taken the ship Umpalla—Gosh! What a narrow escape! If he hadn't taken the Umpalla, the *señorita—what* a narrow escape!

Without in anywise suspecting why an increasing green spot on the Moon should possess any more validity than any other green spot—or so much, for that matter—he hoped for old Freddie's sake that it would live up to plans and specifications, since he seemed to like it. The old Moon needed something fresh, anyway. It was getting behind the times. If he remembered his *Elements of Astronomy*, the Moon was a small globular heavenly body a thousand or two miles in diameter, revolving around the Earth every so often, without air, water, gas, electricity, or dining rooms. Quite uninteresting, he'd say. If it had developed a green spot since his school days, it had probably got mouldy, or covered with slime, like the old swimming hole that used to be out Fulton Street by the park. Being dead so long, it wouldn't be to wonder at. He must try to remember to mention that theory to Freddie.

With which he dismissed the fair and fascinating Luna from his mind and proceeded to enjoy his trip, which was not made harder by the charming Señorita Mercedes Gonzales de Montiel y Santander, on the same boat for the same port. Since the young lady had just finished four years at school in the United States, where excellent English is spoken, she spoke it a shade better than Upton, and with an accent that he liked—well, that he liked.

Few things being better established than the fact that English is easier for charming young foreign females on the deck of an ocean-going vessel under a soft southern moon, Upton tactfully arranged matters that way.

"The moon must be an interesting place," lied Upton, the night before the day the boat was due at port. "I've always considered it so, at any rate—Mercedes."

Omitting the irresistible Spanish accent, with which the writer is unfamiliar, the lady said. "O, do you really think so, Mr. Upton—we-ell, then—Billy? I never thought so—except to look at from—from a distance. It is very pretty to look at—Billy—but——"

Since the sentence seemed finished, he explained his position, as was only fair, being a man, and the señorita a woman—and young.

"Why, yes, I do—Mercedes. I haven't a doubt there are nice green spots where one could sit in the shade of—of nice green trees and things—Mercedes—and——"

Because Mercedes was sitting on the side nearest the moon, Upton's hand, in a gesture intended to be reminiscent of shady lunar green spots beneath green lunar trees, accidentally came in contact with the señorita's. And because her mind was centered on her *Elements of Astronomy* (which was widely popular in the schools of 1938) she overlooked moving her small white hand away. At any rate, the particular passage near the top of page 86 (left hand side of the book) came to her at last.

"But there is no—no air on the moon, is there—Billy?"

"Air? O, well, as to that, I'll tell you, Mercedes——"

"And no water. So how could anything grow, Mr. Up—Billy?"

"Well, I'm not so sure about that—Mercedes. I imagine there are green spots in places, perhaps some rather large ones. In fact, I feel almost sure there are. Of course, the old schoolbook stuff is—well, rather out of date—didn't have so good telescopes in the old days—or—perhaps it—er—wasn't so green in those days.

But modern astronomers have—er—discovered that there is at least one large green spot on the moon."

Whereupon, the orb in question went blushingly out of sight below the horizon and, faithful to the old adage, out of mind. In the darkness ensuing, Upton took fuller and more masterly possession of the little soft Spanish hand. Perhaps it was because of the witchery of the darkness, that she did not any more protest than to give it an inefficient retractory pull.

It will not be thought more than chance, that it was Upton's left hand (which is important) that had touched her left, she being at his right, which was the side nearest the moon, and his observation of the latter having turned him toward her. At any rate, by chance, or whatever, his free right hand stole to her right side, by way of her waist, and he drew her to him tentatively.

"O, Billy—" she whispered softly, "you—you mustn't——"

The rest of the sentence will never be known. Spanish lips are sweet and vibrant, once possessed.

Harding was waiting at the dock in Mollendo, as was also a very fierce-looking Spanish gentleman, with a disturbing black mustache, an expensive limousine, and a chauffeur in livery. The fierce gentleman carried off the fascinating señorita, as if he had some vested right, title, interest, or estate in her, and Harding did the like by Upton. Which appeared to settle the matter, the only left-over being the fascinating smile with which she had favored him behind the fierce Spaniard's back—that and, of course, the selenographic discussion on the deck of the steamer the night before. But even so, Billy Upton could afford to smile at the retreating back of the fierce Spaniard. The fierce Spaniard had not kissed her. His blood raced at the feeling of those vibrant young Spanish lips pulsing against his own.

All of which seems far afield of green spots on Arelli, but may be not so far as it seems.

AFTER the usual greetings and inquiries about the good old U. S. A., and the folks at home, Harding ushered his friend into a cool, palm-studded place, where food and drink resided. After giving an order without consulting Upton, he remarked casually. "If you haven't already learned her address, there will be no trouble about getting it, since she's the President's daughter."

"The President's daughter! Wheee-yew! What's she doing so far away from Lima?"

"The President has a summer place on the shore of Titicaca—quite a bit of a show place. Probably she's on the way up there."

"Good Lord!" gasped Upton.

"Uh-huuuuh! I see," remarked Harding, his searching eyes on his friend's face. "Well, I believe the field is fairly clear, since she's been away so long, and all the others met with—fatal accidents. However, if you're not too keen on getting buried, I should like to use some of your remaining days on Earth. As I already informed you, I made, some time ago, one of the most important, most epochal discoveries of recent times. I discovered——"

"A green spot on the moon—yeah, I know, Freddie."

Harding shook his head sorrowfully. "Your memory has not improved, I see. I said nothing of the sort. I said an *increasing* green spot. I have here an exact copy of my telegram." He drew a packet of papers from an inside coat pocket and began to sort them over.

"Never mind, old fellow. I believe you did say an increasing spot, since you're so fussy about it."

"Of course you couldn't be expected to understand the vast difference, my dear boy. Do you know what 'increasing' means?"

"Getting bigger."

"Something like that. In other words, in this case, a dead thing coming to life. And when a dead thing comes to life—if these chops should suddenly come to life and begin to squeal, you would consider that remarkable."

"I would, indeed, old chap, being lamb-chops."*

Harding looked down at the chops reproachfully, but waved the point aside. "What I am trying to rub into your neutronium bulb is that when a dead thing shows signs of life, it is interesting, to say the least. That is what first got my attention. The moon had always been considered a dead world. Observers had, it is true, detected evidence of slight quantities of snow, frost, or moisture in places, but there was more or less dispute about even that. Also some slight grayish or greenish vegetation of a low order, supposedly, but in small areas, and of short duration, of course, on account of the intense heat of the 14-day daylight period and the great cold of the 14-day nights. I suppose you know that the days and nights on the moon are nearly fourteen earth days long?"

Upton nodded. "Yes, I know that." (Vide *Element of Astronomy*, 1933 edition, bottom of page 21 and top of page 22.)

"There being no atmosphere to equalize the temperature of those long days and nights, the season for vegetation would be very limited. It would develop in favorable spots soon after the lunar dawn, last a short time, and be scorched out. Then it would start again just before the lunar evening, soon be frozen out, and stay so until dawn again."

Upton nodded—this time silently.

"Now you begin to see, I trust, why I was insistent on an *increasing* green spot."

"Yes, I think so. If the green area is spreading——"

"Exactly. If the area of vegetation is spreading, then I saw at once that living conditions must be improving, and a dead world cannot improve of its own accord. Some intelligent agency must be doing it."

"O, I say, Freddie, isn't that rather——"

"No, it is *not!*" snapped Harding.

"But that would mean not only water—or moisture, at least—but air. An intelligent agency—I suppose you mean human beings—has to have air to breathe, and if there's none there, how——"

Harding waved the matter down with a frown. "And you a chemist! What *is* air but a simple mixture of gaseous elements—mostly oxygen and nitrogen? If conditions are improving, there *must* be an intelligent agency, and if that agency needs air, the air must be there. But come. We'll talk on the way. It's some distance up to the observatory, and the roads are steep and not too good, so we'd better get there before dark. But another feature is that the green outlasted the 14-day night season, and at the next sunrise was larger than ever!"

"The devil it did, Freddie!" exclaimed Upton, simulating an astonishment he was far from feeling.

"*It did*, my boy! Now what would you deduce from that?"

Upton dropped his napkin, retrieved it slowly, and flicked at a monatomic speck on his vest. "What would I deduce? Why I'd deduce—why what would—er—anybody deduce? My word, Freddie, old bean, you ask a question like that? Why, I'm—I'm——"

"Precisely, my boy. Even you can understand that."

Harding tipped the waiter, paid the bill, and after making a few purchases about town, they started for the mountain on which perched Harding's astronomical observatory.

---

*We presume the point to be taken is that lambs do not squeal. EDITOR.

"I suppose you are about to tell me," chuckled Billy, when they were in the automobile and on the way, "you've discovered that a mysterious and sinister alien race has taken possession of the moon, and is preparing to launch an attack against the earth and destroy all life with a disintegrating ray of inconceivable power."

"Nothing of the sort, you ass! And just for that smart crack I'm not going to tell you another word till we get home—any more than to say that the large green spot itself is not one per cent of my discoveries. It's only what led me to the rest."

THEY arrived with enough light to show Upton the "plant," as he called it, and it impressed him much more than he had expected, having always poked fun at Harding's star-gazing propensities.

At the left of the road as they neared the summit of Altara Mountain, as the astronomer had named it, were dense forest and rugged crags and gorges. On the right, as the way came out upon the summit, a flat-topped promontory rose above the road, which ran between it and the back part of the mountain. This peak, on its valley side, gave down a sharp declivity toward the town of Arequipa. On it was the observatory proper, connecting with a square one-story building extending in the direction of the road. In the latter, in addition to the various necessities connected with his work, Harding had his living quarters, so as to keep near his precious telescope.

As the road curved up over the summit of Altara Mountain, it swung to the left, toward the large one-story stone building Harding pointed out as the Community House. On the right was a garage capable of housing several cars. Further back and seen dimly in the descending dusk against the blackness of the range that towered back of Altara Mountain were a number of small brightly painted cottages, and a large building which might have been a hangar, a barn, or almost anything.

The grounds were tastefully laid out with lawns and flower beds. Upton had always thought of his astronomer friend as occupying the mountain alone, and was therefore surprised to see a number of people, each apparently going about his duties, whatever they might be.

They turned in at the garage, and Harding relinquished the automobile to a swarthy attendant who came forward. He told him in Spanish to transfer Upton's baggage to the observatory living quarters. Upton made a mental note to learn some Spanish phrases. They entered the Community Building, and after laying aside their hats and coats and washing up in a modern tiled bathroom, went into the dining room, where dinner was already being served.

"This is the center of our little colony of twenty-one," Harding explained. "We have a very fair library, plenty of music, a small dancing floor, a community dining room and kitchen, and find ourselves very well served."

"Very snug, Freddie, old cheese; very snug indeed," admitted Upton, taking in the various features of the place. "This little joint must have set you back a lot of trading stamps."

Harding made a gesture of deprecation. "Like it?"

"I do, Freddie, my boy. Never dreamed you were so well set up here. I always pictured you crouching on a rocky pinnacle with a cold wind blowing your hair in a general easterly direction and a heavy overcoat pulled tight up about your asthma, with one eye screwed to the mouthpiece of a telescope, like you see in the streets at home. But—this is a knockout, Freddie, I regret to admit. It's a knockout—no less."

"Glad you think so, Billy boy, since it's to be your home."

Upton let that pass. "All you lack is a wife, Freddie, and you'd be very nicely situated. If you weren't such a hopelessly hard-boiled old cootie, I'd suggest——"

"I'm expecting to remedy that deficiency." He lowered his voice cautiously. "Fact is, I am to be married tonight."

Upton looked up in astonishment. "Why, you old fox! I suppose the name of the sacrifice is a secret for the present?"

Harding looked around apprehensively, and replied in an undertone. "Not to you. Her name is Altara."

"Altara. Ha, I see. Named the place after her. Freddie, old bowwow, you're softening as your arteries harden. And her last name?"

Harding shook his head. "No first or last name as far as I know—just Altara. She has no other name."

There was a moment of silence while Upton disposed of a generous mouthful. "Sounds Spanishy," he hazarded at length.

Harding shook his head again. "No," he replied briefly.

Another silence, during which they occupied themselves with their food.

"Tell me about her, won't you, Freddie?" asked Upton at last. "I'd like to meet the girl who could crack you."

Harding did not look up from his plate. "Later, Bill. I'll introduce you to her—tonight if—if I can. Wait till we go over to the observatory."

Upton looked up in mild surprise at his friend's tone and manner, sensing a mystery, and was about to make some further remark, but the Chinese cook and the dusky serving girl were out and in, and he held back.

At this point a little weazened old man came in. He was not much more than five feet in height, almost completely bald, very simple looking, and clad in an ambiguous looking smock, faded and far from clean. Upton put him down for the janitor, or dishwasher, and was accordingly surprised when he approached the table at which they were seated.

Harding arose hastily. "Professor Merriam, shake hands with my very old and demented friend, Mr. William Upton. Billy, this is Professor Merriam, A.S., B.S., C.S., D.S., and all the rest of the alphabet."

The two shook hands, Upton looking down at the Professor, and the Professor looking up at him, sizing each other up.

"Professor Merriam is one of the best selenographers since the advent of the *pithecanthropus erectus*, Billy, in addition to being on intimate terms with every sun in the galaxy, and all of their children. He can tell you offhand the height, location, name, and pedigree of every mountain, and the size and depth of every valley and crater on the moon, as well as the length, breadth, and meander of every crack, and he can tell you the size, color, and first name of——"

The little Professor smiled winningly up at Upton. "Mr. Harding will have his little pleasantries, Mr. Upton, as you doubtless know, being an old friend. Just pay no attention to him."

As Upton gazed into the steadfast blue eyes of Professor Merriam, what he saw made him think of anything but janitoring and dishwashing. He seated himself beside Harding and across the table from Upton.

"Where's Larry?" he asked, looking about the room.

"Larry's too busy to eat," laughed Harding.

"You are an astronomer yourself, Mr. Upton?" Merriam asked.

Harding answered. "Heavens, no, Professor! He doesn't know the difference between a parsec and a foot rule. But he knows chemistry backward and forward and sidewise, and——"

"Freddie will have his little jokes, Professor," grinned Upton. "Let's both pay no attention to him."

Dinner over, they climbed Altara Mountain.

After some general conversation, Professor Merriam excused himself on the plea of some calculations to make, and went into a room adjoining the observatory proper.

Upton asked about the mysterious wedding, but Harding still only shook his head, proceeded to adjust the telescope to bear on the precise spot on the eastern horizon where the moon would appear, and set the time mechanism which would keep it bearing on the Moon as it swung across the sky. He consulted a chart, looked at his watch, and shook his head impatiently.

"What's wrong, old cheese?" asked Upton anxiously.

"Half an hour yet," Harding intoned solemnly, somewhat as if announcing that earth was about to fall asunder.

Finally, after striding up and down a few times, he looked at his watch again, oblivious to the fact that the back was toward him. "Twenty minutes yet, and even then we won't get the best results till it gets away from the horizon."

"How high above sea level are we?" asked Upton, feeling the need of saying something.

Harding answered abstractly after a moment or two. "Huh? I don't know. O, sea level?"—as if sea level were a new and strange phenomenon—"Sea level? Oh! Why, about 12,000. Fifteen minutes—then an hour, an hour and fifteen minutes." He relapsed into a condition of half awareness. Upton wanted to ask a dozen questions. He tried one, finally, at a venture. "When will Altara be here, old chap? Y'know you said you'd introduce her."

HARDING did not answer. Doubtless he had not heard, for his next remark was: "Ten minutes yet. Well——" he climbed the platform to the eyepiece of the telescope, gave it a slight movement this way, that way, and settled himself with his eye to the aperture. After a while, as if becoming just then aware of the presence of another, "Come up here, Billy. She's about to rise. Oh! You asked about Altara. Well, it may be that—Ah!" He pointed his finger excitedly, forgetful that Upton was not at the eyepiece. "See? There she comes!" He tensed himself, pressing closer, one hand on the eyepiece, the other adjusting some mechanism, talking to himself. "Where she lives—where she lives—may be tonight—may be." Upton became really concerned about his friend. "Nearly full tonight. We shall see." His voice cleared up. "Oh, pardon me, old chap. I forgot. Excuse me. Here, take my place. I have some things to do before Arelli gets higher. Take a look and see what you can find."

Upton took his place, and with a nervous laugh Harding instructed him how to get the best results, then turned and almost ran down the steps to the floor of the observatory and disappeared into a room on the north side of the building, closing the door.

Left to himself, and knowing nothing at all about celestial observation, Upton got little out of looking at the moon. It seemed a nice big orange, with alternating spots of light and dark color. He did note a great many craterlike circles and wondered what they might be. He noted, also, light streaks radiating from some of these circular spaces, and at the south polar a notched effect, which he correctly surmised might be mountains at the edge of the disk, his *Elements of Astronomy* having stated that the mountains were very much higher than on earth, and could be seen notching the edge of the lunar disk at times and in places. He was about to turn away, having seen about all there was to see, when his attention was caught and held.

"Well, I'll be darned! The old sun-of-a-gun was right. It does look green. Some spot. Must be——"

Harding's voice was calling him from the doorway of the adjoining room. "Come in here, Billy. We'll be ready soon, now."

But Upton was becoming interested in the green spot. "Wait a minute, Freddie, I'm not through here yet. Come here. I want to ask you some things."

Harding ascended the platform. "I forgot you didn't know the geography of the moon, old chap. Look at the bottom of the moon's disk. Just at the lowest point. The notches you see on the edge of the disk are the Leibnitz Mountains. Those to the left, or east of the south pole are the Doerfel Mountains. Just to the right, or west, of the Doerfel Mountains and a little north, is the crater of Tycho, with the rays extending in every direction. See them?"

"Yes, I noticed them, Freddie. What——"

"Now can you see a long straight line extending toward the north and a little west of the central meridian, and running almost entirely across the disk?" Upton succeeded in locating the line. "Now follow that line up until you come to where it crosses a large dark area about half way between the equator and the north pole. See the dark area? That is what is called the Mare Serenitatis, or Sea of Serenity. Now go back to Tycho and follow up what you would take to be almost exactly north of it, until you have passed the equator. Can you make out another rayed crater, like Tycho? That is the crater of Copernicus. Remember that particularly—Copernicus! All of the darkened area to the left from the meridian connecting the north and south poles—or almost the whole dark area—is taken up by what have been called the Sea of Showers and the Ocean of Storms. You want to remember that east on the moon is at your left and west at your right, and the equator tilts several degrees upward at the left side of the disk. But you started to ask something."

"Why, right inside the—ahem—crater of Copernicus, Freddie, I have discovered a large green spot. Am I permitted to inquire if that is the precise green spot?"

"Ah!" Harding ignored the lightness of Upton's tone. "So you have found it! *Now* do you still say I'm a liar?"

"I never said you were a liar, Freddie, old thing. I don't know that I even thought so. I believe my impression was that you might be a little——"

"A little batty, I suppose. Well, what do you think now?"

"I think, my dear fellow, that there's a green spot on the moon—quite a big green spot—but as to the rest, since it's yours, suppose you take charge of it. I don't feel quite——"

"All right. Now come into the other room. But I wanted you to carry away with you, from the glass, that the dark area on the east, or left hand, hemisphere, is the Sea of Showers, right north of Copernicus, and the long dark area on the left, extending almost to the edge of the disk and south away below the equator, is the Oceanus Procellarum, or Ocean of Storms. The dark areas in the west, or righthand, hemisphere, are the Sea of Serenity north of the equator, and the Sea of Tranquillity, running down across the equator. Now do you think you could go outside and look at the moon and point things out to a wondering and admiring group of friends?"

"I think so, old onion."

"As a matter of fact most people—it's appalling the ignorance of people generally about the commonest things right before their eyes."

There was a slight twitching of the corners of Upton's mouth. "Yes, isn't it, Freddie? Terrible!"

"If you ran across a man, otherwise intelligent, who couldn't name the President of the United States, or the Governor of California, or the——"

"President of Peru," supplemented Upton.

"——or the location of Paris, London, or Berlin, you'd think he was an idiot, but how many people could name a single feature on the moon? Why, it's—and yet people look at it all their lives, and it's our only satellite, and by far the most important and recognizable body in the heavens. It's appalling, Billy, I tell you!"

"It is, indeed, Freddie," agreed Upton. "Why, I'll bet there's any number of folks that couldn't tell whether Copernicus and—and Tycho—were on the moon, or were the names of some old Greek philosophers."

They had descended the platform and crossed the observatory to the room on the north side, which Upton entered as Harding held the door open, wondering quite a little why Harding was taking him away from the telescope just when the seeing was getting good.

Harding closed and locked the door carefully after him. Upton's first glance round the room was confusing. There were no windows. In the middle of the wall opposite the entrance was a screen fully ten feet high, and as wide. It was blank. At each side of the screen were complicated mechanical assemblies that meant little or nothing to him, except to accentuate the mystery of the whole proceeding. On the inner side of the room, toward the telescope, was a long tubelike affair extending through the wall into the observatory and directed toward the screen. This gave him a vague idea as to the purpose of the screen.

ON entering, Harding seemed to forget his existence again in an excitement he seemed unable to conceal. He hastened to another assembly at the end of the room, and began to adjust switches and manipulate a row of dials set in the instrument board. A low humming announced the starting of a motor, then another. Apparently satisfied, at last, Harding returned to the mechanism attached to the long tube, and in a moment a bright round image appeared on the screen. This Upton had no difficulty identifying as the disk of the full moon.

Harding looked a question at him and Upton nodded. "Yes, I see, old bean. It seems to be all in order. Sea of Tranquillity, Sea of Serenity, at the right, and down on the southern edge the Leibnitz Mountains, and the Doerfels, and—yes, just above and between them, the Crater of——"

"Tycho," prompted Harding. "And the whitish rays extending in all directions from Tycho. Flammarion calls the Doerfel Mountains the Mountains of Eternal Light, because, from their unique position at the extreme southern edge of the moon's disk, their summits are always in the sunlight. One of the Doerfel peaks is 36,000 feet high. Do you know what our highest peaks are, Billy?"

"Mount—Mount Wilson, in California, Freddie, and ——"

Harding made a wry face. "Mount Wilson! Don't be an ass! The highest peak in North America is Mount McKinley, in Alaska, 20,400 feet, I believe; the highest peak in Europe is Mont Blanc, 15,781. There are more than forty peaks on the moon that are as high as McKinley, or nearly 5,000 feet higher than Mont Blanc. The highest peak on Earth is Mt. Everest, in the Himalayas, in India, and it is only 29,000 and some feet, and yet the Leibnitz Mountains have at least one peak that tops Everest by 7,000 feet. If the mountains of Earth were as high in proportion to the relative size of the two spheres, they would be fifteen miles high, or nearly 80,000 feet—that is, the highest one would be.

Upton nodded. "Mmmm-hmmm. Interesting, isn't it?"

"Well, go ahead, my boy, and enlighten your gaping audience."

Upton indicated the extensive dark area on the left side of the globe. "Sea of Showers, Ocean of—er—Storms, and—yes, just above the equator and a little to the left of the middle, the Crater of Copernicus, with its buggy spokes. All O. K., Freddie. Everything as it should be. What's next? Hello! What's the—ow! What's the shiny spot over at the northwest there? Something's on fire, isn't it, Freddie?"

"North*east*, Billy. Remember the west is at your right, and the east at your left. That's Aristarchus—another rayed crater. As you see, it is easily the most brilliant spot on the moon—or at least on the side visible to us. In fact, Sir William Herschel, with his smaller glass, thought it was a glowing volcano. It is 25 miles in diameter—rather large, but—as things go on the moon, not much. Why, the Crater of Clavius, just to the south of Tycho, is 143 miles long, 17,000 feet deep from its rim to its floor, and its floor covers 16,000 square miles. You could put the whole state of Rhode Island into it. Bailly is 180 miles long. Tycho itself is 54 miles in diameter, and 17,000 miles—er—feet deep. Blancanus, right south of Tycho and Clavius, is 50 miles in diameter, and 24,000 feet deep. Why, Billy, do you know what is the diameter of the largest crater on Earth?"

Upton considered. "About forty miles, if I remember right."

"Yes—*if* you remember right, it is. And what one, pray, is 40 miles in diameter?"

"Why, Kilauea, I guess, Freddie."

"O, Billy, you—you—O, well, you *do* know chemistry!"

"Why, what's the matter, mother dear? What have I done?"

"Why, Billy, there are only three craters on Earth that are as much as fifteen miles in diameter—Aso San, in Japan, Lake Bourbon, on the Island of Luzon, in the Philippines, and a crater in northern Kamchatka, the name of which I don't know. Our Haleakala is but seven miles and a half across the longest way, and covers about 16 square miles. Lake Bolsena, a crater lake in Italy, is a trifle over seven miles. The floors of Kilauea and Mauna Loa, in Hawaii, measure two or three miles, I think, in diameter. There isn't a crater in continental United States seven miles in diameter The Moon has a great many from 25 to 70 miles across, and, as we've already seen, Bailly is 180 miles in greatest diameter. Kilauea and Mauna Loa are from 500 to 1,000 feet in depth; the Moon has many craters from 10,000 to 24,000 feet deep. And mind you, that is only on the half—or a little more than half—of the Moon which we ever see. Heaven only knows what there may be on the other side if we could see it. Why, the whole surface of the Moon has less than 15,000,000 square miles, or about as big as North and South America together. Well, let's get along. I wanted you to have a working knowledge first, so you can understand better when we get down to the real thing."

Harding's voice again became that of a lecturer on his favorite topic. "Both Tycho and Menelaus—Menelaus is up here"—he put the pointer on it—"just in the southern edge of the Sea of Serenity, and is a very bright crater, as you see. Both Tycho and Menelaus can be clearly seen at full moon with good binoculars. Get them located and try it some time. You see here at the extreme right edge of the disk, that sm ll dark area just about in the middle? That is the Mare Crisium, or Sea of Crises. Just at the left edge of it is the crater Proclus, 60 miles in diameter. It is easily visible to the naked eye. Pickering, of Harvard, claimed it to be still active. He was right. It is. Not active in the sense of spouting lava, but in the sense

that new craters are even now being formed inside its rim. They are not so violent and outbreaking as our own, but rather quiet and unassuming, the interior heat of the Moon not being so great as ours. Over here at the left edge of the Sea of Serenity is the crater Linné, only six miles in diameter, but interesting. Linné has a bright halo, which increases to five miles in extent during the lunar night, and decreases during the lunar day—undoubted evidence of moisture. There are several other craters that exhibit the same phenomenon—Pallas, Plinius, Theophilus." Harding pointed out each as he named it.

"So you see, Billy, my boy, old Arelli, even to ordinary observation, is not the dead world that some of its enemies would have you believe. Many of the craters show snow or ice."

"Ah!" exclaimed Upton triumphantly, "I told her so! She said there wasn't any—O, excuse me, Freddie. I was—excuse me. Go ahead, do."

Harding regarded his friend shrewdly a moment. "So it's that bad, is it, you seeker after death?" He shook his head despairingly. "You and she and the Moon, eh? O, well."

HE turned back to the screen with a shrug. "Now keep your eyes on Aristarchus and watch." He swung the projector so that the crater of Aristarchus was in the middle of the screen, most of the lunar disk passing off it at the right side. It seemed as if Harding were teasing himself, whetting the edge of his desire, before getting down to the point that lay next his heart. As he manipulated a wheel-like focussing mechanism, the brilliant crater widened and grew until it covered the whole screen. It seemed enormous, and so brilliant as to dazzle the eyes. Gradually it took form and clarity. "The brilliance is due to the highly reflecting surface of ice or snow," Harding explained.

"You see, Billy, from the inside of the crater rise several mountain cones. See that dazzlingly bright central one? That's what Herschel mistook for an active volcano, observing it against the dark background of the night-time disk, and faintly illuminated by the light of the sun reflected from the earth."

"Now, Billy—now, we'll get down to business." Harding suddenly became nervously animated, and his hand trembled eagerly as he reached for the projector tube, and swung it to another crater. "Now, we'll go back to Copernicus. Visibility ought to be at the best now."

He brought the projector to a stop with Copernicus in the center of the screen, and painstakingly adjusted the focus of the apparatus that brought the image in from the big telescope and shot it upon the screen.

"Ah!" exclaimed Upton, as the image cleared. "Your green spot!"

"Yes, Billy"— his voice was now a hoarse whisper—"my green spot—in the Crater Copernicus. I'm going to bring Copernicus so close you can reach out and touch it. I am going to show you things that will make your eyes stick out an inch."

"But see here, Freddie," broke in Upton, "I don't get this business at all. I've been living on earth for thirty years, and if I remember right the moon has been right in the same old orbit all that time—probably longer. But this is the first time I ever heard of such a thing as seeing it so clearly as to make out any details. I don't get it. Is this a trick? Your telescope is twenty inches, isn't it? I thought so. Well, Mount Wilson is 100 inches, and the one recently completed is 200 inches. Why haven't we heard anything about all these details that are so clearly visible?"

"That's the boy, Billy!" Harding applauded. "Getting curious, eh? Merriam and I will make an astronomer out of you yet. Well, you see, this telescope is a new kind. It has things the big ones haven't. I'll try to give you an idea when we have more time, if you'll remind me; but it is a long story, and we can't take the time right now. The rays of light are brought through our atmosphere on a non-dispersing radio beam, and passed on through a special lens into the telescope. I have several revolutionary improvements that we have invented right here. You haven't heard about them because we are not ready to disclose them yet. It is not quite correct to say we invented them here, either, Billy, but we are the only ones who know about them. We didn't invent them exactly. We were told about them." He waved down Upton's inquiries about that. "You will get all that later. Let us not wait now. The time is passing. Now watch!"

The astronomer turned the wheel control on the projector, and Copernicus came closer and closer. First, the mysterious yellowish "rays" extending in all directions from the crater, shortened as their outer ends passed off the screen; then the Carpathian and Apennine Mountains, at the north of Copernicus, the crater of Stadius on the west, and Kepler on the east, in the middle of the Ocean of Storms, receded to the edges of the screen. Then the Carpathians passed off the screen at the top and the "rays" kept growing shorter. Still Copernicus kept coming nearer. The western edge of the Ocean of Storms passed off the screen at the left side; the crater of Stadius at the right side; the rays disappeared entirely as the crater filled the screen, and the yawning abyss of Copernicus alone showed on the screen. Far down on its floor several mountain cones could be seen arising, and as it came nearer and nearer, they seemed about to alight on the top of the tallest one, which Harding explained arose 11,300 feet above the crater's floor. Then Harding took his hand off the focus wheel of the projector, and let the picture stand a moment.

The effect was as if they were hovering in an airplane directly over the center of the immense crater. The entire floor was covered with green of varying hues, in places almost black.

"Now, Billy, you not being a very good astronomer yet, I want to draw your attention to one particular feature of Copernicus. Do you notice any fundamental difference between Copernicus and the parts of the surface we have looked at?"

"I certainly do, Freddie, a very noticeable one. I noticed at once, and was going to ask you if you'd noticed it, but you acted so mad I was afraid you'd bite me. On the surface, the portions that are in the shadow are dead black. In Copernicus the dead black shadows are missing. There are shadows, but things can be seen in them, or through them."

"And do you know why?"

"Why, ye-e-es, I do—or I think I do. I've always heard that where there is no atmosphere, and hence no refraction of the light rays, the shadows are dense black—so much so that if you stepped into a shadow, you'd be wiped off the map."

"Not bad, old chap," applauded the astronomer. "Not bad. Then, since the shadows are not so black in Copernicus, you would infer——"

Upton shook his head in a puzzled way. "Why, I'd naturally infer that the inside of Copernicus had an atmosphere, but of course it—must be something wrong somewhere."

"You've hit it, Billy. There *is* an atmosphere in Copernicus. The astronomers all over the Earth are finding, as I did, first the permanent increasing green spot, which as you see now covers the entire floor of the crater; and from that they would naturally infer an atmosphere, if they'd let themselves. But they won't

—most of them, so they compromise by saying the green is not vegetation, but some peculiar chemical change, because they cannot understand how it could be permanent vegetation. They know that the green appearances have heretofore developed only during the lunar days, and always disappeared when the long nights came on, because of the terrible cold. They are not willing to admit an atmosphere, because they can't understand it, and they know permanent vegetation to be impossible without it. Having better facilities for observation, we know the green spot is vegetation."

"But *still* I don't see how Copernicus can have an atmosphere, and not the rest of the surface."

"That, my dear fellow, we will get to later on. For the present, let's go on down into the crater a little farther."

Upton stayed his hand excitedly. "Look, Fred! Right in the middle between that tall mountain cone and the south there! If I was a little crazier, I'd swear that was a lake!"

"You are, Billy; it is. A little crazier and you'll be getting real intelligent."

He put his hand upon the focussing wheel again. "Now, forget the green for a while, and the lake, and things, and pay attention to the eastern or left side of the crater, just to the south of the mountain cones, and between Lake Altara and the cliffs."

"Ah ha! Altara again. By which I see that one Frederick X. Harding, astronomer, named it!"

Harding shook his head and smiled mysteriously. "No, I didn't. That was its name when I found it."

AGAIN he put down threatened questions, shifted the projector slightly, to bear on the spot indicated, and turned the wheel. Most of Lake Altara and the green floor of the crater passed off the screen except at the edge of the eastern wall, and they seemed to descend in their hovering flight until about to alight near the foot of the cliffs. On the rising ground, at the cliffs' edge, were buildings.

"Wait, Freddie! Look!" Upton exclaimed sharply. "There's something moving! My God, Fred, there's"—he strained nearer the screen—"there are living things moving about! Heavens, can it be possible, or is it an optical illusion?"

"That's it, kid. That's it—living things," cooed Harding, something as if he had made the living things himself and were watching their first steps. Another turn of the wheel and the moving specks became human beings. They were passing to and fro, going toward the green area, coming from it, engaged in various pursuits.

The astronomer took his hand off the wheel and the vision stood still.

"Now, Billy, just hold hard a moment, and——"

"What a pity we can't get their attention, Fred! We—why, we might learn to talk with them."

Harding smiled pityingly from the summit of superior wisdom, went across the room to a complicated assembly at the left, and began to turn various dials. There were scratching sounds, as he manipulated first one dial, then another. Then from the ultra-radio came a light whirring sound, as of machinery, deepening and steadying. There was the ringing of a gong or bell.

"The gong is rung automatically when the instruments get into rapport," explained Harding. "When they hear it they know we are on the line."

Upton was too excited to exclaim at all this startling information. It flashed through his mind that he owed Freddie an apology. Freddie had mumbled something earlier in the evening about "where she lives," and he had thought him crazy. But there was no time for any apologies now. At the sound of the gong, one of the human dots flung up his arms, almost into their faces, it seemed, and they heard him shout something. Followed the sound of other voices, clarifying to easy audibility as Harding perfected the adjustments.

"You understand, Billy, that if there were no atmosphere, or if it were extremely tenuous, sound would not carry like that."

They lowered themselves a little closer to the foot of the Copernican cliffs. They were only a hundred feet away, now, and the figures could be plainly seen as human beings, to all appearances like themselves.

"Now, Billy! Billy! Watch the top of that towerlike building! See? There they come! See the two figures just coming up on the roof?" Harding's voice was a low, tense whisper, as he took a quick step nearer the screen and his hands went out eagerly toward it, "Ah!" he quavered, as another figure came up into sight. "It is you, Altara, my dear!"

Upton saw that instead of looking up toward Earth, as he had rather expected them to do, the figures on the roof stood before certain appliances. Seeing that the Arellians were at the instruments, Harding drew the focus nearer, until only the roof top on which they stood was visible. The figures became life-sized, and their features clear.

"Can they see us, Freddie?" whispered Upton.

"Of course—and hear, too."

A light sparkle of laughter came, then, like the glint of sunlight on joyful waters, or a sweet-toned mountain bell.

The person who had first appeared was a man, evidently above middle age. His face was smoothly shaved, and his plentiful dark hair untinged with gray. He was a little taller than the Americans, both of whom were just under six feet. Whatever clothing he wore was hidden by a long robe or coat, hanging below his knees. Except for his garb he might have passed for a man of Earth. Although the second person was garbed like the first, there was no difficulty at all in saying she was a girl—would have been none, even without the worship in Harding's eyes.

Like her father—for the man was such—the girl was tall. Unlike him, she was light, with plentiful yellowish hair that made a glorious golden halo about her head, above the snowy white of her shoulders and bosom where the robe did not conceal them. Upton decided her eyes would be golden, too, though he could not quite make out. She carried herself regally, but there was a mischievous sparkle of gayety and laughter about her that went well with the golden frame of her face and her snowy skin.

"Good evening, Your Majesty, and Princess Altara," saluted Harding.

"Good evening, Mr. Freddie Harding, and Mr——" It was the man speaking, and his voice came as clear as if he had been ten feet away instead of 240,000 miles.

"My old friend, Billy Upton," introduced the astronomer.

"Good evening, Mr. Billy Upton," the ruler of the Arellian kingdom smiled pleasantly. "Your friend has spoken of you, so we already know you."

"Your Majesty, and Princess Altara," acknowledged Upton. "I never thought I should be so famous as to be known beyond my own planet."

"Hello, Freddie, and Mr. Billy Upton." The girl smiled with a saucy vivacity that was fascinating in the extreme. In fact there was something about her manner that reverted Upton's mind to the daughter of another ruler nearer at hand.

"And how are the rocket ships doing, Freddie? You see I have remembered the name this time." The Princess smiled archly, and it was clear that Altara of Arelli was as deeply in love as Harding of Terra.

"You're doing mighty well with our language, Altara, my dear—much better than I am with yours, I'm afraid. Why, things are doing splendidly, I believe. I hope—but I will tell you more about it a little later. I am certainly looking forward with enough impatience. How are your operations doing, Your Majesty?"

"Quite well, thank you, Freddie. We came near having a-a accident today—just before you——"

The princess spoke to her father in their own tongue.

"Altara says I—it is wrong to say, a accident, and I must say an accident. It may be true. Our power—the power that operates the—that keeps our air in the crater—went wrong, but it was fixed before any harm was done. We have to learn many new things, Mr. Upton, you know, living so long underground as we have. The surface is new to us. It is not long that we have had the air on the—surface, you know. And we have to keep it from—going away into space. We have to learn. But Mr. Harding will tell you. I do not speak well yet, but Altara better—much better." A man came and spoke to the King. "I must go now, but I will come back again soon."

The King nodded to Altara to take up the conversation, smiled, and with a backward wave of the hand followed the other Arellian down into the building by the way he had come. Taking the hint, Upton excused himself to the girl of Arelli, and went out to look through the telescope, leaving the lovers to themselves. As he went out the door, he glanced back at the screen just in time to see Altara throw a kiss to Harding. He wondered if the girls of Arelli would have known about kissing, or if Freddie had told the Princess how nice it was. Well, he was glad Mercedes Gonzalez was on the same world with him. What a strange love-making—with the man on one planet and the girl on another!

UPTON found Professor Merriam at the telescope. The little man seemed glad to have somebody come. He stepped down at once and drew him away to his own quarters in a wing of the building, apparently eager to talk. This suited Upton, who was bursting with questions—on the only subjects, it turned out, on which Merriam was ever known to wax voluble. He was said to have no interest in life but science, and his science ran in large part to selenography. They settled down with their pipes. Merriam showed a lively sense of humor, which a stranger would never have suspected he possessed. His shrewd penetration and his dry humor, the young man found at once surprising and delightful. Upton found he liked the little man.

"Fine country down here, Upton. I like it, and I think you're going to. Yes, yes. Peru has an enlightened and up-to-date government. Yes. President Gonzalez is not only a thoroughly modern man, but educated and intelligent. He loses no opportunity to encourage science. Incidentally, he is something of an amateur astronomer, and keenly interested in selenography. I have had many enjoyable talks with him. Yes."

"Oh! You know him?"

Merriam nodded. "Yes, yes, very well. He comes up here as often as he can get away from affairs of state, and we've struck up quite a friendship. Yes. His wife, by the way, Upton, is a native of the United States, and a graduate of Vassar. He has a son of 25 years or so, who is in the government—also a college graduate, and a fine boy. I like him. He also has a grown daughter who is away at school."

Upton was unable to determine whether the little man's eyes twinkled or not, but if so he decided he liked him well enough to let him have his fun.

"Yes," he said, as casually as he could manage, "I have the pleasure of knowing the señorita. We sailed down together on the boat from San Francisco."

"O, indeed! The señorita is rated rather highly in Peru, I believe. Yes. But—pardon me for speaking of personalities. It was about the moon you wished to talk, was it not?"

"O, that's right, Professor," Upton hastened to say. "Does—er—does the President's family usually come up with him—his wife and son?"

"No. I have not met his wife. The son has been up a few times, though. I think you will like the—men folks."

Upton wanted to kick the Professor, but decided to let it stand for the moment. "I'm burning up with curiosity about a lot of things. These new discoveries and inventions——"

"The señorita, also, comes up occasionally."

Upton pointedly ignored the remark. "Freddie gave me a look at the moon on the screen, and I had the pleasure of meeting His Majesty and the Princess Altara; but the means of accomplishing the miracle are complete mysteries to me."

"Yes, yes. Interesting, eh? Yes. We feel that we have accomplished some real wonders up here all by ourselves. We are in a fair way to know as much about our charming satellite as about ourselves, I believe."

"If only"—Upton broke in eagerly—"if only the rocket-flight people were abreast of you!"

"Well, I don't know, Upton, that they are so far in the rear as you might think. They don't advertise much. Are you familiar with their recent progress?"

Upton shook his head slowly. "N-no, I can't say I am, Professor. I know they succeeded along in 1931 in getting small rockets well above the atmospheric limit, and of course rocket flying has progressed to some practicability, but——"

"Yes, yes. Well, yes. You know that several rockets carrying a human being have reached heights ranging between 200 and 800 miles? Most of the men were killed in returning to Earth; but the one before the last got back safely, and——"

"Yes, I saw that in the papers only a few months ago. He reached over 800 miles, did he not? Wonder what's keeping Freddie?"

Merriam smiled. "Oh, he's busy. You won't see him again tonight." He said this parenthetically, and went on with the subject. "Yes, yes. That is several hundred miles above the extreme atmospheric limit. He found no terrifying conditions, and but for a couple of minor defects in the rocket, might have reached the moon—quite likely would. Yes. So that means they have solved the problem. The most difficult part has always been leaving Earth safely and that is definitely done. The problems are all definitely solved, Upton—definitely solved. Yes."

He looked at his watch, as he had been doing unconsciously every few moments. "I'm going to sleep a while. It's nearly morning. Take a nap on the couch here, I think. How about you?"

Billy Upton decided to go to bed and get some real sleep. He was not used, like Merriam, to snatching an hour or two at a time, and said so.

Next morning when he got up late, he found Merriam engaged, as he seemed to be much of the time, in some of his interminable calculations. He glanced at a page or two of them, but although he was a fair mathematician, they were far over his head. At noon, after a late breakfast, the two were again talking in Merriam's quarters. Harding had failed to appear, and Merriam said, vaguely, that he was away for the day.

There had been a long silence, during which each was engaged in his own reflections. After a while Merriam made some more figures on a sheet of paper,

looked at his watch, made some more figures, and finally looked up at Upton keenly from under his eyebrows. His glance was a trifle uncertain at first, as if hesitating about something; but it did not take any long scrutiny of Upton's clean, honest face to reassure him, if he had had any misgivings, and he evidently saw that.

"Did you know, Upton, that while you were looking at the moon last night, a two-passenger rocket ship of an entirely new type was being prepared for launching; that it has since been launched, and is well on its way to the moon at this moment?"

Upton sat up very straight. *"On its way to the moon?* I did not, no. Where?"

"Yes, it was." He looked at his watch, and Billy wondered what he would do if he were to lose it. "Yes, it is now noon. The start was made successfully at 2 o'clock this morning by our local time. That is ten hours ago. My radio is now tuned in on its wave length, and we might have news at any moment. A report came in two hours after it started, and it was 2,500 miles on its way. Two hours later it was 7,500 miles, which meant that the Earth's gravity was only about one-ninth that of the surface. So you see there is a very fair probability that they may succeed. I am expecting a report now. Yes."

IN a few minutes the radio spoke.

"Rocket ship *Terraluna* reporting from space. Do you hear?" Merriam pressed a button twice and repeated the signal, and the message went on. "All is well on board the *Terraluna.* As nearly as can be determined without taking time for computations, we are about 43,000 or 44,000 miles from Earth. The ship is functioning perfectly. We are increasing our speed slowly and steadily. Barring unexpected misfortunes or complications, we are practically assured of reaching our destination. The last half of our flight will be slower than the first, as we shall turn the ship's stern toward the moon at 200,000 miles from Earth, and begin slowing down. We are making no effort for speed. What we want is to get there. The temperature inside the ship has remained constant and doubtless will continue so. We expect to take forty-five hours for the journey, so as to arrive when the moon is in line with our course. We could easily have made it in twenty-four hours or less, had we started on that schedule. As it is, forty-five hours is more than we require, but our course was set so as to arrive when the moon is in view of certain points on the earth. These points are known to a limited number of those who may hear this report, to whom we send greetings. We shall soon be at the half-way point. The *Terraluna* is signing off until six o'clock."

Merriam again pressed the button twice—"O. K."

As the instrument became silent, Merriam sprang up, seized both Upton's hands, and danced around the room like a small boy. "It's as good as done, Upton! Yes, yes. It's as good as done! There's not a thing to stop them now." He stopped as impulsively as he had begun. "Pshaw! Too bad, too bad!"

"What's too bad? I should think it was too good—to be true. Where's Freddie? We must tell him about this."

Merriam shook his head. "The fool said nothing about how their gravity was working."

"I shouldn't think they'd have much gravity at that distance."

"That's just it; they wouldn't have—natural gravity, but they are equipped with an invention, which scientists have been working on since 1927, for giving them artificial gravity. The ship has a man-made gravity to hold them in place and prevent them floating in the ship, which wouldn't be convenient, besides other considerations. You understand, don't you, Upton, that as the Earth gravity decreases—you understand, I suppose, that the Earth gravity decreases in proportion to the square of the distance from the center of the Earth? That is, the distance from the center of the Earth being about 4,000 miles at starting, why, at 4,000 miles away from the surface, or twice the distance at starting, the gravity would have decreased as many times as the square of two, which would make it one-fourth. And so on. At 120,000 from the surface, or 31 times the 4,000 miles from the center of Earth to its surface, it would be the square of 31, or 961—one nine-hundred-and-sixty-first of the gravity at starting. That means that a man of 180 pounds on the surface of the Earth would weigh about 3 ounces."

"Oh, yes, I know the formula, but it's rather startling to hear the result at that distance. But, Professor, this artificial gravity you speak of—you mean a sort of magnetic shoes, which hold them down by contact with charged metallic flooring, I suppose."

"No, no, I mean exactly the same thing that holds you down to this floor—gravity, but artificially produced. It acts on every cell of their bodies alike. They need no metallic shoes. It is my own invention, Upton. Yes, yes. I began working at it as soon as Einstein put out his calculations showing that gravity and magnetism were only different aspects or manifestations of the same force—electricity. Not that the idea was anything new, but it called my attention to the matter. I saw that if the Earth could exert an electrical pull on all matter, the fact could be duplicated artificially, and the artificial gravity could be regulated as desired. That is now accomplished. But as yet no scientist has been able to turn gravity around and make it work backward as a repulsive force. That will come, it will come, Upton, no doubt about it at all."

The little astronomer was so superlatively happy that he fairly beamed, as he looked at his watch with tedious regularity.

"Yes, Professor, but this new ship——"

"Yes, yes. Upton. I was coming to that. Yes. Well, you see, Upton, the original ideas about rocket ships were all wrong. They were trying to make a heavy shell of steel—or metal, at least—weighing a great many tons—and it was so heavy that getting it off the ground was practically prohibitive. Any charge that would 'shoot' it off had to be so terrific, and the acceleration so abrupt that anybody in the rocket would be killed by the shock. You see, they could not get away from the old idea that a rocket ship had to be 'shot' into the air and out of our gravity with a terrible bang. But a certain party got the big idea, at last. He figured that the shooting idea was wrong; that a modification of the Zeppelin dirigible airship could be built to stand the pressure, and once well in the air, the rocket engines would be put to work, and it would just keep going right on up—out, rather. Yes, yes. Simple, when they overcame a few of the troublesome details. Yes. The old experimental type of rocket ships wouldn't do. When they reached the height of their initial curve their speed could not be kept up. They would come down fast enough, but they would not go on up—or at least not far enough—on account, as I say, of their tremendous weight. Then came the big idea. They discarded the cumbersome shells and made a very light ship of a tough new metal about a fifth as heavy, but plenty strong enough to resist the pressure. You understand, Upton, that when a ship is in space, the outside pressure of the air is removed, and that pressure on board ship is outward, instead of inward."

Upton nodded. "Yes, I know, Professor."

"The entire ship, which is small, weighs but little. Then they discovered the new gas, which is many times lighter than hydrogen and absolutely non-inflammable. You know, as a matter of course, that some years ago the supposedly lightest gas, hydrogen, was divided into two gases. Well, that showed us many new things. One result is a gas that has a very much greater lifting force."

"Just a moment right there, Professor. I am a chemist, it is true, though my work has not led me in that direction. I can't understand how that can be true about splitting the hydrogen atom, when it is composed of just one electron and one proton. To tell the truth, I've always been skeptical about that, and have meant to investigate it, but——"

"Yes, yes, Upton. You're quite right, too. The hydrogen atom has not been split. It couldn't be, as far as I know. All that was done was to make the discovery that hydrogen really consists of a mixture of two distinct substances, and they separated them. Yes. The hydrogen atom was not split in the sense of separating the electron from its proton. No, no. I should say not. No."

"Thanks, Professor. That's a great relief to my mind. I'd worried a lot over that. But go ahead. I just wanted to get that off my chest."

"Well, this particular ship—the *Terraluna*—is inflated with one of these new gases. The upward pull is very powerful, but the necessity of overcoming the inertia of the ship prevents it from starting with a speed that is fatal to its passengers. Of course, it would soon reach a point where, through the thinning of the atmosphere, the lifting power of even the new gas would be *nil*, and that would mean that the ship would come to a standstill; but when the maximum speed furnished by the gas is reached, they put the rocket engines to work, as I said, in such a calculated manner that this speed is kept accelerating to the limit of endurance. That is the sort of ship that is now on the way to the moon. When outside the atmosphere, the lifting gas is of no further use. So they draw it off, or as much as they need, which is not a great deal, and feed it into the engines for fuel. Hence very little initial fuel need be carried.

"Fuel? I thought you said this new gas was non-inflammable."

"Yes, yes. Well, so I did, I believe; but I meant in the ordinary sense of exploding or burning from fire. It is exploded by a chemical process inside the engines. It is unaffected by fire. Thus, instead of having to lift their fuel off the earth, the fuel lifts them off, and gives them their initial impetus for the rocket engines to pick up from, without injury to the occupants of the ship. Very pretty, eh? Yes."

UPTON thought a while. "Yes," he finally objected, "that's all very well; but when they're ready to come back—assuming they get there and land safely—when they want to come back, their gas is gone and how will they get off the moon? For that matter, how will they land on the moon with their gas gone?"

"That's a fair question, Upton. No trouble at all. In the first place, the gravity of the moon being only about a sixth that of earth, the weight of the ship will be reduced to one-sixth of its original weight. So landing on the moon won't be difficult, nor, for the same reason will the getting off be difficult. Mind you, the lifting gas is not *all* used—only that between the outer and inner shells, and probably only a small part of even that. You see, power is needed only a small part of the time—only for getting away from our gravity and accelerating to the desired speed. Then the ship will 'coast' with engines idle until it is necessary to decelerate for landing at destination." Merriam checked himself apologetically. "Of course, that is not strictly accurate, Upton. You understand that. Until the neutral point between the Earth's and the Moon's gravity is reached, gravity would retard the ship to some extent. But after the first few thousand miles, this would not be serious.

"For example, even at 20,000 miles, the gravity would be only one twenty-fifth that at starting, so, assuming the ship to weigh 20,000 pounds at starting, it would then weigh only 800 pounds, and the smallest imaginable impulse, considering the momentum it would have attained, would suffice to offset the slight backward pull. Oh, yes, they will have a safe margin several ways for getting off the moon on the return trip. First, they would have plenty of gas left; second, they could increase the lifting power of it somewhat, if necessary, by increasing its temperature and expansion. The gas is used in the first place at a fairly low temperature—say 60° Fahrenheit. This could be heated to a sufficiently higher temperature so that the consequent expansion would give it some added lifting power—probably plenty, not only to lift the ship off the moon, if the other two margins failed, but to land on Earth without danger upon the return. Being a chemist, you are familiar with the rule applying to the expansion and contraction of gases under pressure. They increase 1/273d of their volume at zero centigrade for every degree of heat added to them, and decrease the same for every degree of cold."

Upton thought a moment. "But look here, Professor: suppose the gas were brought to 273° centigrade below zero. Then if a gas under pressure decreases in volume for every degree below zero, at 273° below it would have no volume at all. Isn't there something wrong about that?"

"Yes, yes, of course, Upton. Of course there is. There is something wrong with nearly every rule. *Theoretically* it would have no volume at all, but *practically* it would have become a solid before it reached 273° below, and the rule does not apply to solids."

"Oh, yes, that's right, of course. I remember now."

"But, we got off the subject, didn't we? What was I saying?"

"About the *Terraluna* getting back."

"Yes, yes, of course. Well, in the case of the *Terraluna*, they have what you might call an unfair advantage; they know that the moon is inhabited, and they can make as much more gas as they want there. The chemicals are there, and the appliances, and all. No, no. Getting off the moon offers no difficulties. No. They can easily start with their engines."

"The Lunarians, or Arellians, as they call themselves, know of this trip, Professor?"

"Oh, indeed, Upton. Why of course they do. Yes, yes, indeed. They will be watching tomorrow night, and it is a ten-to-one bet they will be treated to the sight of the *Terraluna* landing right on the greensward in Copernicus, near the observation tower on which you saw Altara and the King."

Upton was thoughtful for a while. "It seems nothing less than a miracle! Just to think of seeing and talking with the people on the moon, to say nothing of going there! How many thousands of times I've looked up at the moon, and studied its face, and tried to imagine what might be going on there—if there were people there, and what they might be like, and what they might be doing, and all. And now just to imagine—it's hard to believe we've actually seen them and talked with them! There will be some excitement when the news comes out that the ship has arrived!"

"Oh, yes, I suppose they will pester us to death when our part in the matter becomes known. That's

always the trouble with such things. Yes, I suppose we'll have swarms of reporters, just when I shall have so many new computations to work out."

Upton suddenly slapped his knee a terrific whack, shot to his feet and strode a half turn about the room, a strange grin taking form. "Well, I'll be—I'll be—do let me say I'll be damned, Professor, won't you? So *that's* it! The old scoundrel! Well, I'm good! It took me all this time to begin to wonder why *you* should be giving the O. K. signal to the *Terraluna's* message! Freddie's on the way to the moon! Well, I'll—mmmmm—honeymoon, eh? Well, I'll——"

Merriam grinned, and looked at his watch for the fortieth time.

"He told me he was going to be married last night, but in the excitement I forgot all about it—besides figuring he was kidding me. Well, he didn't quite make it last night, but he may tomorrow night, at that."

Merriam shook his head. "He was married last night, Upton. Oh, yes. I suppose it was the strangest wedding that has ever taken place. The marriage was according to the Arellian forms. Ordinarily the only parties at the ceremony are the bride and groom, and the parent or guardian of the bride, and the marriage is supposed to be kept secret for a certain time. Oh, yes. The King of Arelli formally gave his daughter, Princess Altara, to Harding in marriage, and that was all there was to it. Oh, they're married, all right, and they're wild about each other."

"How about the Queen? Isn't there a Queen?"

"No, I believe Freddie said not, but that's all I know about it. Possibly she's dead or something. I really don't know about that."

As Merriam ceased speaking, he held up one hand, his watch in the other. "Sh! It's 6 p. m. Time for Freddie's report, the reprobate."

Almost at once the radio spoke.

"The *Terraluna* broadcasting from outer space. Do you hear?"

MERRIAM gave the O. K. signal, and the message went on at once.

"All is well on board the *Terraluna*. Cannot take time to report all details, as we have too much to attend to on board. Calculations just made show us almost an even 100,000 miles from Terra. If our time is correct we have been on the way exactly sixteen hours, and are a little ahead of our projected schedule. The temperature has gone down about one degree inside the ship, the thermometer showing 64° Fahrenheit. Gravity is functioning perfectly, seeming normal at all times."

Merriam made an ecstatic gurgle, not unlike that of a mother, whose new baby has just uttered the first word.

"The ship is using much less fuel than we calculated. For three hours our engines have been idle, 'coasting' at around 10,000 miles an hour. We shall continue so as long as possible to save using gas. The *Terraluna* answers more obediently than an airship, in fact so delicately that we have to apply power with caution, as the slightest impulse has an almost disconcerting effect. When we sign off it will be for four hours, at the end of which time we should be well on the second half of our outward voyage. We have received the O. K. signals. Have also been in communication with Arelli. Their messages come with astonishing clearness. The *Terraluna* will now sign off for four hours, or, until ten p. m., New York time."

"Why New York time?" asked Upton.

"About the same as here."

They went to dinner, and while eating, Merriam suddenly remembered for the first time that Harding had charged him with a note for Upton. He produced it after some fumbling. It read:

"Excuse me for running away without you, my boy, but I want you with Merriam at the mountain. Also, the *Terraluna's* capacity is only two, and I have to take my expert aviator. Anyway, I think you may prefer Mercedes to Arelli, and besides, in all earnestness, old chap, I do not wish to subject you to the risk, which will, naturally, be considerable. Merriam will tell you about my marriage to Her Royal Highness, the Princess Altara, of Arelli. Congratulate me, old idiot, on getting the finest girl in the wor—solar system. Sorry you couldn't be at the wedding, but under the laws of Arelli a wedding is supposed to be kept secret for a certain time, though it will probably be impossible to keep ours so. In case anything happens, dear old friend, my affairs are all fixed up, as Merriam knows. Good-bye, or *au revoir*, whichever it may turn out."

They had just settled down comfortably after returning to the observatory building from the dining hall when a magnificent limousine drove up, and a fierce-looking Spaniard with a disturbing mustache alighted and proceeded to hand out a distinguished gentleman of middle age and a beautiful young señorita. Upton was the first to see them.

"My God, Professor, it's Mercedes!" he gasped, starting up. "And I suppose the old geezer is papa. Good night! Call out the artillery or something, quick! I demand protection. I'm too young to die yet."

Merriam's lips twitched. "The artillery would only hang you, my boy—being under the control of the president, as a matter of course—or garrote you, rather, which is said to be an unpleasant transaction. However, if your offense is not too heinous, I think I have enough influence with the president to get you shot. So don't fret about it."

With which comforting assurance the little man hurried out to the presidential carriage, leaving Billy Upton to speculate hopefully if the fair Mercedes had or had not—had or had not—perhaps not—told her folks about those warm, vibrant kisses he had stolen from Spanish lips. He hastily felt his hair and tie, gave his shoes a glance, and stiffened for the shock as Merriam ushered them in. The light was not good in the room and they did not notice him until Merriam drew their attention.

"Mr. President, and Señorita Gonzalez, may I have your permission to present a childhood friend of Harding's, Mr. Billy Upton?"

President Gonzalez was slower than his daughter, which may have been natural, considering that he was older. He turned with presidential slowness toward Upton. But Mercedes Gonzalez, who, let the reader be reminded, had just returned from a considerable residence in the United States of America, gave one flashing glance, two flashing steps, and an impulsive outthrusting of two little white hands.

"Well, my stars alive! If it isn't me old friend and classmate, Billy Upton, and no other. Papa, shake hands with the boy friend."

The President turned to his daughter with some show of stern disapproval. "My dear, my dear! Are you insane? Do you want our good American friends to think we have no—no manners in Peru? I am astounded at you, Mercedes—astounded. Do you——"

Mercedes patted the President's arm affectionately. "There, there, darling. Don't excite yourself. Remember what the good Doctor Sanchez said about your heart. Poor dear, you should live a while in the good U. S. A., and get some pep in you."

"That will do, Mercedes!" He turned to Upton and offered his hand. Being married to a native of the U. S. A., his English was as ready and idiomatic

as one could wish. "Please forgive her, Mr. Upton, and do not think her a representative citizen of Peru. She is not well." He tapped his head. "I am planning to have her locked up, just as soon as I can get a little time to spare. Meantime, you have the government's permission to carry weapons."

The vivacious Mercedes made a face at her father.

"Let me assure you we are honored to have you in Peru," the President went on a little heavily, "and hope you will—will——"

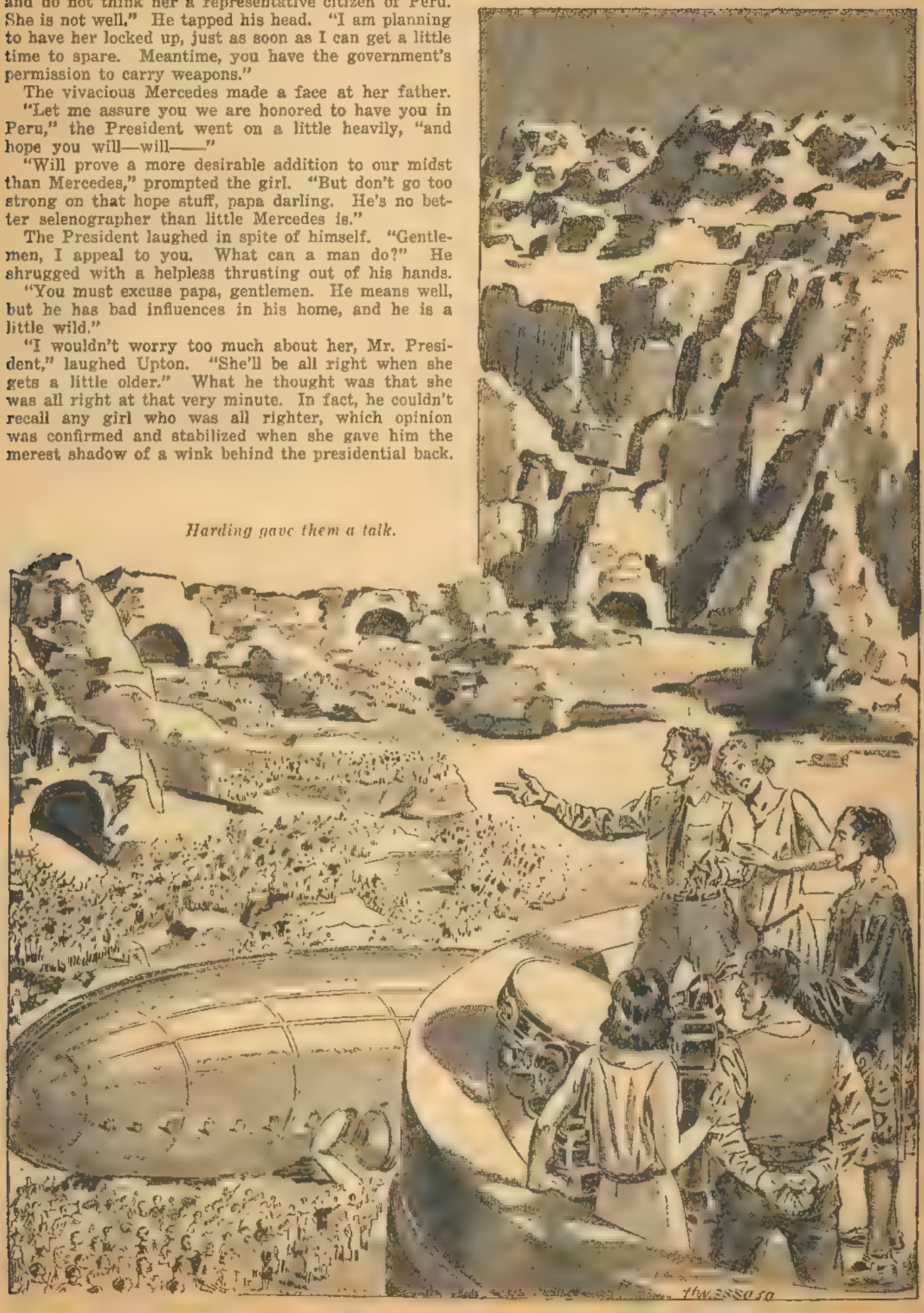
"Will prove a more desirable addition to our midst than Mercedes," prompted the girl. "But don't go too strong on that hope stuff, papa darling. He's no better selenographer than little Mercedes is."

The President laughed in spite of himself. "Gentlemen, I appeal to you. What can a man do?" He shrugged with a helpless thrusting out of his hands.

"You must excuse papa, gentlemen. He means well, but he has bad influences in his home, and he is a little wild."

"I wouldn't worry too much about her, Mr. President," laughed Upton. "She'll be all right when she gets a little older." What he thought was that she was all right at that very minute. In fact, he couldn't recall any girl who was all righter, which opinion was confirmed and stabilized when she gave him the merest shadow of a wink behind the presidential back.

Harding gave them a talk.



IT was President Gonzalez who first mentioned the subject which was no doubt the major cause of the visit.

"What is new on Arelli, Merriam? I've been so busy the last two or three months I could do nothing I wanted to do."

Mercedes' eyes snapped roguishly at Upton, but she held her tongue, which it would seem was unlike her.

Merriam was silent a while, as if making up his mind. "Mr. President, I am going to tell you some interesting things; but for a few days I must ask you to maintain absolute secrecy about our part of it up here. The fact is, we have made some startling advances here on Altara Mountain, of which no person in the whole world knows, outside of Harding, Upton and myself. You are the President of the Republic of Peru, and, in return for your silence for a time, we will promise that Peru shall have as much credit as possible from the discoveries."

"Thanks, Merriam, you are kind. For myself I have no difficulty in giving assurance. And as for this Spanish-American here"—he indicated his daughter—"bad as she is in other respects, she is so notable for keeping her own counsel that I have never yet got anything out of her she did not want me to know. I dislike to think of her escapades that I am ignorant of."

"Now, papa darling," pouted the fair and fascinating Mercedes, "that is very unkind. What would you have Papa Merriam and Billy Upton believe? I think I have been very prudent. Have you forgotten the time I almost got Peru into war by slapping the face of the Brazilian Ambassador for trying to kiss me? And don't you remember the time——"

Gonzalez put up his hand defensively. "Stop! Stop! I am not likely to forget the troubles you have had me in, you little vixen! But for heaven's sake do not reveal to these good gentlemen your past! There is slight likelihood of any attempt on their part to kiss you. We have not much time, so do keep still and let Merriam tell about his discoveries. Do go ahead, Merriam. Where is Harding?"

Merriam shook his head. "He is away just now. Meantime—you have kept account of the rocket ship *Terraluna* that is even now on its way from Terra to Arelli?"

"44,000 miles on the way at noon today, daddy," exclaimed Mercedes. "I picked them up myself."

"And 100,000 miles at 6 p. m. They're to report again at ten," supplemented Upton.

The President's eyes opened wide as he wheeled upon his daughter. "Why didn't you tell me all this, young lady?"

"Well, I tried to twenty times, daddy; but you were closeted with half a dozen comic strips, and——"

Gonzalez was all eagerness. "Please, Merriam, tell me."

Merriam told them the story of the ship and the flight. "So, you see," he concluded, "Harding became a benedict last night. He was married with his bride on one planet and himself on another."

Mercedes clapped her hands and threatened to speak, but the president forestalled her hastily. "Go on, go on, Merriam. You are keeping something back. Your face would convict a regiment. Out with it, or to the garrote you go!"

Merriam smiled. "Guilty, Mr. President, and I place myself on your mercy. But—we shall have to go into the other room. I might add that the bride is the daughter of the president—or the——"

"Heavens, Papa Merriam!" broke in Mercedes. "This is fast work, I'll say. Why didn't you tell me, so I could make a little preparation? And perhaps you should have mentioned it to papa, although——"

The president was a little confused, and Upton laughed.

"I don't mean—that is, I—I was speaking," stammered the little scientist, "of the ruler of the Arellian republic—er—his daughter, Altara. I—do hush, Upton!"

"Yes, do hush, Billy," commanded Mercedes severely. "I am eager to hear about this—er—Altara person. I'm surprised at you, Billy, to laugh at poor Mr. Harding's love affairs. Go on, Papa Merriam. I'm sure she must be sweet. A real princess, too! Tell us all about her, do. If the men of Arelli are as nice, too, I'm going to see if I can't get me one."

Merriam told with enthusiasm. It seemed as if he, too, approved the Princess Altara. He took them, then, into the sacred room and revealed the rest of the secrets; and when the full moon had arisen, eventually introduced the two rulers and their two daughters. Altara and Mercedes each decided unmistakably that the other was charming—which indeed was the case—with the upshot that Mercedes, in total disregard of any possible engagements of State, invited herself and her father for the following night to watch the arrival of the *Terraluna* at her destination. They disconnected in time to hear the report of the *Terraluna* at ten. She was 134,000 miles from Terra and already slowing down with the intention of dropping to 3,000 and "coasting" until near the moon, then maneuvering for a landing at the Crater Copernicus.

Merriam wanted a confidential chat with the president, and Mercedes begged Upton to let her look through the telescope, which she averred she adored. They went out together.

"Spanish lips," reflected Upton, when the visitors were gone, "Spanish lips——"

True to schedule, the *Terraluna* was ready to land some time in advance of Arelli's arrival at the intersection of her orbit with the ship's course. Upon settling down into the crater, her gauges showed the pressure of the atmosphere of Copernicus great enough to sustain life in them, although rarer than they were accustomed to. This they had expected, and accustomed themselves to it, by thinning the atmosphere of the ship somewhat. The force of the lunar gravity being, of course, known to a decimal, had been likewise prepared for by individual gravitors, working on the same principle as the artificial ship gravity.

Eventually, with much less difficulty than the landing of the old type of dirigible, the *Terraluna*, with only a slight jar, alighted near the foot of the observation tower where the Arellian King and the Princess had been seen.

Every man, woman and child inhabitant of the subterranean region about the Crater Copernicus, save those whose duties absolutely held them below, was on hand to welcome the *Terraluna* and her passengers; and there were thousands from the Craters (to use the Earth names) Kepler, Aristarchus, Grimaldi, Linné and others, even including far-away Tycho, Blancanus, and Clavius in the South Polar regions. Many there were, too, from craters on the side never revealed to Earth (which are given their Arellian names)—from the greatest of them all, the old capital Ylisae, 243 miles in diameter, and 28,000 feet deep, with its 289,000 inhabitants; from Remrof, as large as Grimaldi; from Sunigy and Temor, from Sallap and Rotem and Acerima. There were even some of the strange, wild barbarian people who dwelt in craters hidden deep among the monster Doerfel and Leibnitz Mountains, and rarely had any intercourse with the civilized inhabitants who acknowledged the beneficent rule of the Arellian King, Altona. Even they had learned of the expected visit from another world.

The floor of Copernicus was full, and thousands maintained precarious footholds on the surrounding cliff sides.

THE King and Princess Altara, accompanied only by the beautiful Sanna, Altara's lady in waiting, who was at the same time her closest confidante and friend, met the visitors in person at their exit from the ship. In the presence of the great throng, the Princess flew into the arms of her husband, and their strangest of all weddings was cemented in the first kiss of Arelli and Terra.

Woman of Arelli.

Man of Terra.

After the first greetings and embraces, the visitors were led into the observatory building from which they would ascend later by elevator to the platform on top, to show themselves and speak to the people.

And how, asked Harding in surprise, while they were resting a while below, had all these people come here, seeing the surface of Arelli was airless?

Why, by the subterranean ways that honeycombed the entire planet. These ways had always existed, so far as history knew—for thousands upon thousands of years, at least. (The Arellian year being the same as the Earth year, since Arelli accompanies Terra around the Sun.)

And were the subterranean ways air-charged, or was the air carried in the vehicle in which they traveled?

Oh, they were all air-charged and hermetically sealed. Nobody knew when the Arellians had been driven from the surface by the failure of the atmosphere and water supply with the consequent advent of the withering cold and heat of the Arellian nights and days. The process had probably been gradual. Far beneath the surface the water was still plentiful, and where springs became exhausted, was pumped up from wells of vast depth. But this was not ordinarily necessary, except for use nearer the surface. Many of the subterranean dwellings had, in the course of the thousands and thousands of years, been extended downward hundreds of miles. The air of these subterranean abodes was easily kept pure and replenished as necessary, as they would see later.

But what a vast amount of work this must have entailed!

Yes, but doubtless it had all been very gradual. Their forefathers had learned their lessons a little at a time in the remote ages, as the ancients had been gradually forced to abandon the surface and go below.

The Arellians were past masters of all the arts of electricity, and appliances had been installed at intervals about the crater, in preparation for the great event, which enabled every one of the assembled thousands to hear and see clearly the persons assembled on the platform.

A brief, simple, dignified talk was given by the King to his subjects, congratulating them on the establishment of complete contact with great Marelli, welcoming the voyagers to Copernicus, the capital, in particular, and to the realm in general, and announcing and confirming (since it was a matter of public concern) the intimate linking of the two planets by the union of their beloved Princess with the man from Marelli. Harding then gave a talk, which was translated to her people by the Princess, as being better versed than her father in the tongue of the Americans. She stood at her husband's side, her arm through his, and as she appeared thus, tall and slender, with golden hair and royal bearing, she presented a sight that might well have caused pride in any nation or sphere, and the demonstration left no doubt at all of the affection of her people for her.

Harding's companion on the voyage was one Larry Donegal, the expert airship builder who had superintended the making and equipment of the *Terraluna*. Harding had encountered him by chance in the City of Arequipa, become acquainted, and been overjoyed to find in him the very man he had urgently needed. He had proven more valuable than Harding had dared hope, having shown himself not only an exceedingly skilled workman, but a faithful and intelligent friend. At times his English still had a slight Emerald coloring.

The King, who had taken an instant liking to the jovial, light-hearted Irishman, asked him if he would like to speak. Surprisingly, he assented readily, and standing beside the fascinating little Sanna, in whom he had taken immediate interest, his native wit and happy spirit prompted a talk that produced hearty understanding and appreciation, as evidenced by the laughter and applause of the Arellians and there was much comment on the fine appearance of Larry and Sanna, as well as that of Harding and Altara.

The delicacy and good taste of the people were at once made manifest to the visitors in the fact that, although the strange ship had been left without guard, not a single person approached it. Seeing this, Harding spoke to the Princess, and receiving her assurance, asked her to announce that they might go near if they wished, providing only that no one touched the ship. Even then, the Arellians approached the ship only in small companies, and remained at a respectful distance, without any of the pell-mell, hurly-burly and souvenir-snatching that would have been expected in like circumstances upon the earth.

While the Arellians had shown, in their varied responses, full capacity for appreciation of the various emotions, they yet appeared in the main grave, dignified, and sensitive to a degree. Even the children, while quite inclined to romp and play as children ought, exhibited an undercurrent of seriousness.

Harding then suggested that they establish connection with Altara Mountain, where he knew their friends were watching for the arrival and would be eager for a message. The connections were made, and the instruments at which they placed themselves showed the inside of the observatory clearly. The Arellians did not use a telescope, the perfection of their instruments dispensing with the necessity. The sights and sounds which came to them from Terra were also broadcast throughout Copernicus, so that all might see and hear.

In the Altara Mountain observatory were Merriam, Upton, President Gonzalez and Mercedes. At first Merriam had considerable difficulty in securing the precise adjustment and focus of the complicated appliances but he accomplished it at last, and the two parties on Terra and Arelli became clear to each other.

The messages flew thick and fast.

"Hello, Mercedes, darling," called Princess Altara. "Why didn't you come with Freddie? And you, too, Mr. Billy Upton?"

"I would, Princess, dear, but the rascal ran away without even telling us. Billy and I are furious about it, aren't we, Billy?"

At that same time Upton was shaking his fist at his old friend. "Freddie, old cheese, you ought to be ashamed of yourself, going off on your honeymoon without me—us! I've a notion to——"

The Princess wanted to know what a honeymoon was, and when it was explained she asked innocently, "Why Mercedes, dear, why didn't you and your—you and Billy—come here for your honeymoon, too? Or have you already been given to him?"

Upton blushed, but Mercedes was not at all taken aback. "No, dear," she responded sweetly, "Billy is not sure he wants me yet, and we girls here are only

supposed to tease the men. We can't ask them outright, though I may have to, yet."

PRESIDENT GONZALEZ was trying at the same time to present to the Arellian King a rather dignified and formal greeting on which he had bestowed consideration, and Larry Donegal burst in with something which made everybody laugh.

The greetings over and a brief report of the landing made, the instruments were disconnected. President Gonzalez and Merriam thereupon retired to the latter's quarters to smoke and talk over the marvel. Mercedes begged Upton to tell her all about the various instruments in the projection room, and the Arellian party proceeded to place themselves at the table which was being spread on the observatory platform in view of the multitudes, while the latter feasted below, each group upon the things they had brought for the occasion.

That done, the royal party was taken through the ship and shown its various features. The ship was 200 feet long and shaped like an ordinary dirigible. The outer envelope, Harding explained, was succeeded first by a vacuum, and this in turn, as an additional precaution to avert the effect of the cold of space upon the gas, by an air stratum maintained at a uniform temperature. Then followed the gas of the outer shell of the ship, which was stored in separate compartments. The gas used for fuel was drawn from alternate compartments, to avoid deflation and strain. Then came the inner shell, also filled with gas, and in the lower part of the ship the space for the engines, instruments, stores, and passengers. The ship's middle diameter was 47 feet over all, this being little more than an experimental model. Later ones would be on a larger scale.

Having finished the inspection of the *Terraluna*, the King suggested that, as the period for rest had arrived, they retire to the royal quarters, where they might rest and converse more at leisure and in private.

It had been in comparatively recent times that the capital of Arelli had been removed from the old Ylisae to Copernicus, the change being coincident with the renewed hope of communication with Terra, which necessitated locating the capital where Terra could be seen.

Harding and Larry had been having difficulty adjusting their gravitors to conditions, and noticing this, the King ordered others brought. These adjusted so perfectly that they had no more trouble. These gravitors were used by the people of Arelli to balance the effect of variations in weight in descending into the deeps of their subterranean caverns, and were adjustable instantly by merely turning a small knob. Their weight, considering the light gravity of Arelli, was not noticeable.

Thus equipped, they crossed the southeasterly edge of the green area of vegetation, that now covered almost the entire floor of the crater 50 miles in diameter, and circled around the four mountain cones to the north of the center, excepting only the craggy portion between the cones and the northern side of the crater. It was the cone nearest the center which towered to a height of 11,300 feet. This was called by the Arellians Atti Rettor, or Sovereign Mountain. The rim of the crater towered far above Atti Rettor. Lake Altara occupied the middle of the crescent-shaped cultivated area.

Everywhere they went the multitudes greeted them cordially, displaying toward their King and Princess a respect and affection that was yet quite devoid of servility. "Attina Altara" (Princess Altara), and "Atti Altona" (King Altona), were heard on every side; frequently with "Anna Marellis," friends of Earth, Marelli being the Arellian name for Terra.

The attire of men, women and children alike consisted of a loose silky robe without sleeves, falling to the knees, and a heavier outer one, slightly longer. The latter was worn only when needed for protection, corresponding to a coat or wrap, and being discarded in the warmer subterranean quarters that constituted their homes. The temperature in the crater being comfortable, some wore their outer garments and others did not.

The vegetation was varied and laid out after the manner of a park, having areas of green grass, not unlike the grass of Terra, with food plants and small fruit trees interspersed. None of the latter had come to fruition as yet, although some of the trees were already large enough to forecast the green shady spots which Upton had promised on the deck of the ship Umpalla beneath the reflected rays of the very same moon on which the feet of Earth's children were set now for the first time within anybody's knowledge.

The present surface works were only a beginning. It was explained that everything necessary was grown in abundance under the ground, where congenial growing conditions were duplicated in all respects, so that there was no urgency in the matter of surface products. Fruit and vegetables constituted the chief Arellian diet. No meat was eaten.

Harding and Larry had both been feeling the absence of something which they had not at first identified. They finally realized that it was the complete absence of those domestic animals to which Earth people are so generally habituated, and which have taken so helpful and friendly a part in their lives. When asked if there were no animals on Arelli, the faces of the girls instantly assumed a look of dread, amounting almost to terror, and the visitors saw at once that they had trespassed on some forbidden ground. The King became grave. "Yes," he answered slowly after a moment, "there are animals on Arelli—very unpleasant ones, I am sorry to say. They live in the great natural caverns below the lowest inhabited levels."

Between the observatory tower, at the southeastern side of the crater, and the entrance to the royal residence, were the waterworks which brought up water from below for the irrigation of the new surface projects. These the King explained as they passed along. This pumping of water would be necessary only at the beginning. Eventually they would draw from the ether abundance of materials for both air and water, and manufacture them as needed, with the object of eventually replanting and repopulating the entire surface of the planet. The full realization of these ambitious plans, set afoot by King Altona, would require many hundreds of years.

AS they neared the entrance to the royal residence, they came to a spot where three men, in clearing a place, were struggling to move a large stone which, however, had not been deemed large enough to have machinery brought for the purpose. They could move it a little but were quite unable to convey it where they wanted it. The stone did not seem to the visitors a large one, but they reflected that the muscles of the Arellians possessed only a fraction of the power of their own, being attuned to their local conditions, where on account of the slight gravity, little strength was necessary. The workers shook their heads apologetically and wiped their brows, and one of them started to go for assistance. But Harding called him back, picked up one end of the slab, with Larry on the other, and swung it up and toward the pile where it was wanted. But they had miscalculated, so that instead of landing upon the pile, the stone struck the top of it, swung onward, and landed fifteen feet beyond

it, so that it was necessary to go around and toss it back more gently. The Arellians regarded the feat with astonishment, and the looks the two girls gave their men from Marelli were good to see.

They passed through an outer airlock, along a brief rock-hewn hallway, through an inner airlock, and came into a small circular cavern which gave entrance on all sides to the various apartments of the suite which had been provided for the household of the King and his retinue and guests.

Inasmuch as the surface surrounding the outer rim of the crater was nearly as high as the crater rim, upon entering horizontally from the crater floor they were already some miles underground. They turned to the right and were ushered abruptly into a sort of private living-room of the royal suite. It was furnished, as would be expected of a royal "palace," in quite an effective manner, but was peculiarly lacking in any of the garish atmosphere of affectation and arrogance which the Americans had been accustomed to associate with royal residences. Certainly, the home of President Gonzalez on the shores of Lake Titicaca, in Peru, far outshone the present one in magnificence. The stone floor was covered with some sort of yielding rubber-like composition, on which rugs were scattered here and there. The walls had been either polished or plastered and decorated in a multitude of charming designs. Evidently the Arellian decorators were artists. Skilfully hidden among the scrolls of the decorations were the ventilators which permitted the forced draft of air to circulate. Sitting was upon upholstered divans, the only single seats being one reserved for the King, and another beside it which it was not difficult to guess was the official seat of the Royal Princess of the realm. Evidently the present apartment was at times used for minor receptions, when, in spite of the evident democracy of King Altona and Princess Altara, they sat a little royally apart. There were a number of ornamental pieces of furniture, the uses of which were not clear to the visitors at a glance. Sanna soon carried Larry off to show him something in another room, and the three settled down for a visit *inter familiam* before retiring to rest. The Princess eschewed her royal place for a nearby place on a divan with her Man from Marelli.

After a little hesitation, Harding asked if he might smoke. Altara glanced at her father in a puzzled way. "Why, of course you may do anything you wish, my dear one," she said. "This is your home. Please do—smoke."

Seeing that smoking was an entirely novel thing to the Arellians, Harding offered to forego it, much as he felt the need. But Altara insisted. She took a cigarette between her fingers with much curiosity, smelling it, and even trying to take a little bite of it, which caused her to make a wry face. When Harding put the cigarette between his lips, set a match to it, and began to exhale clouds of smoke, the girl drew back involuntarily in something like alarm. But when she saw that no harm came, they became reconciled to the strange transaction, although continuing to regard Harding curiously.

When asked the purpose of smoking, there was some difficulty. He had never been asked the question before, and had never thought much about that feature of it. In fact, he had to admit that it ministered to neither hunger nor thirst, and had his audience been less friendly, his halting and uncertain explanations might have convinced them it was some ill-favored practice he was attempting to gloss over by equivocation.

"You understand, Freddie," the King was saying, after a while, "that it has been many thousands of years since the people of Arelli lived on the surface—before the beginning of our known history—although there are many evidences that they once lived there. Our recorded history extends back several hundred thousand years, but even then the people lived as now. So we know little or nothing about the surface civilization—nothing at all except what we have learned from remains that are left to us, and that is not much, since for centuries we have hardly gone upon the surface at all."

"Your historical records—did I understand you to say they run back for *hundreds of thousands* of years?" Harding asked this in sheer amazement. "How are you able to preserve them over such vast periods? On Earth we have no actual records at all beyond four or five thousand years and most of them are less than a thousand."

"That is surprising, Freddie, with your advancement in the arts and sciences." It was the Princess.

"Yes, I suppose it is, sweetheart, but as a matter of fact we of Earth have in comparative recency emerged from absolute barbarism. We have attained the greater part of our advancement within a few thousand years. Indeed, only a few hundred years back we would have seemed almost savages to you. Nearly all of our modern things have come within a hundred years. The telephone, telegraph, radio, aviation, and a hundred other things—all within a hundred years or so."

The King nodded. "Yes, we know a little about that. We have been watching you for a long, long time, for we have always had observatories, you will know, although we have lived underground. You shall see all these things, Freddie, my son. But of course our observation could not extend to reading your books and records. But to answer your question, our records are magnetically impressed, through the medium of the voice, in metal tapes which last and can be reproduced at will practically eternally. In case they should begin to fail, new ones could easily be made from the old ones, so that they are good for a million years, or ten million if necessary. Have you no such process?"

Harding smiled deprecatingly. "Why, ye-es, we have—dad. I am going to call you by a sort of pet name we have on Earth which means 'father.' Do you mind?"

His Majesty did not. Quite the contrary, after the explanation Harding made, he was pleased, and Altara said she loved the word.

"Well, then, dad, we have had the knowledge of such a method of recording sound for only a few years past, and it has not yet been adopted for any useful purpose at all—practically speaking. We have just learned about it."

At this point the happy laughter of Larry and Sanna came to them from an adjoining room. They looked at each other smilingly, and Altara leaned over to her husband to be kissed, an act that was as novel to her, as she appeared to find it acceptable. Arellian lovers knew nothing about kissing.

"I think," she said, "that there will be another mating between Terra and Arelli before long. Well, little Sanna is a fine sweet girl. We love her very much. I hardly know how I shall do without her."

"You won't have to, sweetheart," assured her husband. "I'd be just as loath to let Larry go as you would Sanna. We are going to keep them both with us."

"I will show you through our records, Freddie," the King promised. "But, as I was saying, we have always lived under the ground. It was only when I came to the throne that we began to wish for the surface again. I thought it could be done, but the people of Ylisae, which had always been the capital of Arelli, ridiculed the idea, and there was much opposition. They said we should be exposed on the surface to the intense cold

Larry, ever on the alert to observe machinery, went close and stared down into the empty hole where the elevator had been.

and heat, and the lack of air and water, and falling bodies, and a multitude of other dangers, which we were spared under the ground. In fact some of our outstanding scientists declared positively that for many reasons we would find it quite impossible to exist at all on the surface. You see, Ylisae is on the side where they never see Marelli, and they were indifferent about it, and hence lacked one of my reasons for getting back to the surface. Most of them had never seen Marelli—that is, Earth; but my plans concerned Marelli. I had found out that at last you were flying, and I wanted to be where I could see you. I wanted to fly, too, as the people had done before they were driven below. So—well, we moved the capital here, where the people were more favorable, and began the work on a small scale. You see, the craters being very deep, and closed in by a regular rim like the edge of a dish, I decided to try filling them with air first. This would give us a safe and convenient access to the surface. It was not difficult. We laid a power ceiling—a ceiling of force lines—across the top of the rim and filled

the crater with chemically prepared air. This power ceiling also helps to equalize our heat, and acts as a protection from any flying meteors, by deflecting them so they can not fall into the craters. Then we pumped up water and started vegetation, as you see. It did not take long, since the growth of vegetation can be hastened to any degree we desire. No doubt you have the same processes, Freddie?"

HARDING was embarrassed again. "Oh, yes, we have, in a way. That is, we have some idea that it can be done, and possibly may have done it experimentally to some extent, but not as a practical thing. You see we have so much space and so much water and everything, that it has not been necessary to do more than let things grow in the natural way."

The King nodded, and continued: "Other craters are now following our example, and I think we shall all be living above the ground in time, though it will take a long time. And then, when that is done, I have plans for aerating the surface, or a good part of it, and refilling the beds of some of the old seas with water to some extent. Lake Altara is our first body of water. We can easily produce water chemically in any quantities as soon as sufficient machinery is produced, and we expect to make the surface of Arelli the paradise which it must have been hundreds of thousands of years ago. It has become with me not only a matter of ambition, but of pride—pride on account of the opposition I have encountered. So much was said about the impossibility of human beings existing under this and that circumstance, that I want to show them there is practically no place where man cannot make himself a place to live."

"It is a noble, courageous scheme, dad," said Harding admiringly. "I surely admire your enterprise."

"It will be easier now," smiled the King, "since we shall have you and your people to help us."

Larry and Sanna came in looking superlatively happy and not a little guilty, and all being weary, they retired for rest and sleep.

It should be understood that the Arellian day of about fourteen earth days, and the Arellian night of the same length, is divided into fourteen erros, or active periods, of about fourteen earth hours each, and fourteen ennas, or resting and sleeping times, of ten hours each.

The King and Larry Donelan were the first ones about in the "morning," and sat down to talk while awaiting the appearance of Sanna and the newlyweds. The King put his hand on Larry's shoulder, and pushed him down into Altara's seat beside him. "Altara won't mind, my boy," he smiled whimsically. "I think she is more interested in her husband now than in all of the thrones of princesses that have ever been made."

Discriminatingly, the King saw at once that Larry was bursting with questions, and he nodded to him to go ahead with them. The first one was, "How do you get from one crater to another, since the surface is not livable? You must travel underground."

"Yes, we do," the King replied. "All of the craters are connected by underground tunnels or passages. You will see the vehicles we use in getting about. They are electrically propelled, though they do not run on rails, as Freddie says many of your conveyances do. Most of these tunnels, as well as the underground dwellings, are very old—some of them many thousands of years. We have charts of most of them, but do not know their real age. The walls are covered with pictures and writings which are supposed to be historical. You will see these, though you will not understand them, as we ourselves have difficulty making out many of them. You see, my dear boy, the civilization of Arelli is very ancient, so ancient that the more recently populated Earth is a child in comparison—though I will say a very intelligent and lovable one." The king smiled paternally at Larry. There was no mistaking the fact that the jovial young Irishman had taken the royal fancy. "We have known for thousands of years that Marelli was inhabited by people like ourselves, and have always supposed that at some remote age there had been physical communication between the two planets. Can you tell me if this is so, Larry?"

Larry smiled a lovable sort of twisted smile. "I'm sorry, sir, but I can't. Our people would laugh at the suggestion. They laugh at anything they can't understand. They haven't done anything but laugh since scientists began to talk about navigating space—that is, until just lately, when we succeeded in getting our rocket ships up above the atmosphere a few hundred miles. And even then, all but a few kept on laughing. said we'd never get anywhere, and if we did we'd never get back, and gave scientific reasons why the navigation of space always would be impossible. I guess they'll have to find something else to laugh about now. While we consider ourselves exceedingly well advanced along scientific lines, I'm sorry to have to say, sir, we know very little about anything, or so it seems to me when I realize the number of things we know nothing about. And yet I've frequently heard it said that we were not only the most intelligent beings in the solar system, but the only ones. In fact it's quite a common assumption that the sun was put there just to give us light and heat in the daytime, and the moon to sort of keep us from getting lonesome at night."

The King laughed understandingly. "Well, at any rate, Larry, don't feel discouraged. The wisest man has to admit he's foolish if he stops to think of the things he would like to know and does not. At least you and I know to a practical certainty that there has been communication at some time, and we have been trying for many generations to re-establish that communication, but without success until your invention of the radio in recent times, and particularly Freddie's latest improvements. We have for many centuries been able to make the radio beams carry sight and sound at pleasure, and were able to be of some help to Freddie in perfecting his radio visualization for his telescope, which brought intimate personal contact between us. I need not say what pleasure it has given us."

"Make it all five of us, sir, not to mention good old Professor Merriam."

"Yes," assented the King. "I like Merriam. He must come along next time—and your other friends, also."

Larry asked what means they had used in their attempted communication with Earth. The King thought a while and smiled. "Well, for one—perhaps it was a rather crude one, but we had tried everything else—we have fired messages enclosed in metal containers. Some of these we saw land on Marelli, but probably they were never found. They were so constructed that they would break open and reveal their contents after a certain length of time, and——"

Larry could not restrain himself. "Would it be possible to show us where these messages landed, sir?" he asked eagerly.

"Oh, yes, I suppose so, but it is of no use now; as our purpose in sending them is accomplished by other means."

"Yes, that's quite true; but I *would* like to dig up some of them and convince some of those dumb doubters who laughed so loud when that very thing was suggested."

"Very well, Larry. We'll see about that. We were handicapped in firing these missiles because we did not

want to have them come down where they would do damage. In general we tried the high places, like mountains and plateaus, in order to dispense with passing through the lowest strata of atmosphere, and thereby reducing the friction to which they would be subjected. Unfortunately those places were in general uninhabited. I will show you the records of these attempts later, my boy. But I remember quite well the last attempt of that kind. That was back in—let me see? This is your year 1938, is it not? Then it would be back in your year 1928—no, 1929. On three successive nights (I mean your nights, of course) we sent one of these messages—we sent them at night so their light would be seen more readily—on three nights we sent one of these each night and they all landed in what you call—the King thought a moment—"in what you call France, I think. We saw them all land, but have no means of knowing whether they were ever found—probably not, or you would have heard about the messages they contained, my boy."

LARRY started to his feet in excitement. "Good night!" he exclaimed.

The King was puzzled. "Good night? I don't——"

Larry saw his dilemma. "That doesn't mean anything, sir. It's just an—an expression we have—a sort of—we say a great many things that don't mean anything. Just don't pay any attention. But those messages of yours *were* seen. I remember quite well. It was along in the early part of 1929—February or March, I think. They came down, as you say in France—in the Rodez Mountains in France. I remember reading some articles about them by an astronomer named Davis. And he had it figured out to a hickey, too—I mean he had it figured out that they came from here. I remember laughing myself about his article when I read it, and he was laughed off the earth—that is, I mean, he was ridiculed. Nobody believed him—they thought he was luny—pardon me, sir—they thought he was off his—was——"

The King smiled. "Yes, I understand, my boy. They thought he was—was—how do you say that? His mind was wrong."

"Yes, that's what I mean, sir. His mind was wrong. So those *did* come from here! Of course you understand sir, some of us have thought for a long time that somebody outside was trying to communicate with Earth. Since the radio was invented—or at least some years after it was invented, we began to get impulses that we could not understand. It puzzled us for a long time, but finally it was settled by our brightest men that they were the result of echoes of our own radio messages rebounding from the surfaces of other planets, though they never quite decided just what planets. They figured out the length of time it would take radio waves to reach the various other planets they suspected and return to Earth, but the distance did not agree, and they could not make out anything, and so they decided it did not matter much, anyway, as long as they were nothing but echoes."

"But, Larry, my boy," asked the King in surprise, "did you not set them down and translate them? That could have been done, and you would have——"

Larry shook his head. "Not to any extent, though there were a few who got as far as setting them down, but they did not tally with anything they knew about, and they just let it go that they were probably echoes. They settled it that the other planets were not inhabited by intelligent beings, because if they had been they would have replied to those supposed echoes—what I mean is that the echoes proved to them that our radio impulses had reached these other planets, whatever ones they were, and would have been received by the people there if there had been people and they were intelligent. So they just decided the earth was the only planet inhabited, that being what they had always been taught anyway."

The King looked at Larry thoughtfully a moment. "You mean, Larry, that the earth people thought the earth was the only planet *anywhere* that had intelligent beings—anywhere in the universe?"

"That's it, sir—most of them. It is true there were quite a number of our scientists that thought otherwise—Professor T. J. J. See, and Schroeter, and Pickering, and a few others—but most of them thought we were the whole smear—er—thought we were"—Larry finished by an eloquent wave of the hand. "In fact, it has been proven conclusively time and time again by our best scientists that it would be quite impossible for life to exist on—on the moon here, for example. That is, life in any way resembling ourselves."

At this point in their discussions, Sanna came in, looking radiantly beautiful after her "night's" rest. Unabashed and unashamed, she went straight to Larry, who took her into his arms and kissed her. Harding and Altara came in just in time to see him doing it.

After some more or less casual conversation during the "morning" meal, it was proposed and decided to take a little trip through some of the underground regions, in order that the visitors might see the manner of living beneath the ground.

They first went out into the crater, then entered through airlocks a spacious and well-lighted tunnel, from which they soon emerged into a circular amphitheater so immense and well-lighted that their first impression was of coming out into the open again. Larry and Harding estimated the diameter of the place as not less than 2,000 feet, and the top of the vaulted ceiling at least 200 feet above their heads. There was no stinting of space here under the ground. Everything was on as grand a scale as if there had been no more resistant boundaries than the air. It was only by reflecting that untold thousands of years had gone into the enterprise—that when Terra was yet in the grip of the glacial periods, the place was already well hewn—that the visitors were able to convince themselves of the evidence of their eyes. In a place so young—a civilization so recent—as their own, such vast works would have been unthinkable. Here were the fruits of the toil of hundreds of thousands of workers for centuries.

The great amphitheater was lighted in such a way as to give the impression of sunlight. The source of light was not apparent. The walls were covered with beautifully executed frescoings and paintings, representing different scenes, interspersed with characters, which they were informed told about the scenes. All were as fresh and clear as if they had been recently made, although in fact many were untold thousands of years old, being executed in such a manner as to endure practically forever.

They exclaimed at the immensity of the place.

"Why, Freddie," said the Princess, leaning close to Harding and looking adoringly into his eyes, "this is only the—the—what is the word you used once, my beloved one? The ane——"

"Antechamber?"

"Yes. I think that may be it. That is only the antechamber"—she stumbled a bit on the word—"hardly that much. It is only one of many places from which the ways go in various directions to different parts of our underground country, both here and in other places on Arelli."

THEY saw that this was true. On every side of the great amphitheater were entrances to tunnels. Small cars stood at convenient places near the tunnel mouths, ready for the use of anyone who desired them.

These did not run on tracks but the wheels were of some material which ran on the composition floors without noise. They were owned by the public and constituted their system of travel. Some of these lines were main trunk lines running to other craters, and these used heavier cars and were under the charge of drivers or conductors, though there was no charge for riding in them.

At the eastern side one went under the Ocean of Storms to Kepler, Grimaldi, Riccioli, and others on the visible side of the planet, and around to Sallap, Esoh, Evas, Restno, and others, on the other side; another went northward under the Sea of Showers to Aristarchus, Plato, Sunigy, Temor, and Edis. There was a southern line to Tadius, Ptolemy, Herschel, and on to Tycho, near the south pole, where a branch led to the great crater Bailly, at the foot of the precipitous Doerfel Moutains, and around to Ylisae, Remrof, and Rotem. On the other sides of the crater were similar systems of communication, reaching out in other directions.

It was explained that the local lines running from the entrance amphitheater served, in general, only the population of the first five-mile stratum. Those wishing to descend further usually took elevators which halted at every five-mile level, conveyance between levels being similarly by cars.

Extending along the middle of the cavern were many banks of these elevators. There was no support for them above the floor level. All that could be seen was lines of circular shafts about twenty feet in diameter, surrounded by wire fences having gates through which one might pass to the elevators. Some of these shafts were merely yawning and rather terrifying pits of blackness. In some, cars stood at the top awaiting passengers. The cars were provided with seats. As the party passed along the rows of pits, several Arellians came in and let themselves through the gate upon the platforms of waiting elevators. The operator twirled a control wheel, and they flashed downward out of sight.

Larry, ever on the alert to observe any sort of machinery, went close and stared down into the empty hole where the elevators had been. At last he shook his head in a puzzled way and turned to Sanna, who kept at his side.

"How do they run?" he asked. "I don't see any cables, or any kind of supports, or anything at all to——"

"Just by—what do you call the force that makes us heavy?"

"Gravity."

She smiled. "Yes, Larry, that is it—just gravity, dear."

She was turning away, evidently considering the explanation sufficient; but Larry detained her, and she saw he still did not comprehend.

"You saw the—the thing the operator used to start the car? Well, that is the—the control. When he turns the control wheel the gravity of the car is increased or —or made less, which way he turns it. See? The faster he wants the car to go, the greater weight he gives to it. When he wants to stop, it is the same—he makes the car so light it cannot go down, and of course it has to stop. When he wants to come up, it is the other way. He turns the control wheel the other way, and a current is set up against—against something in the side of the shaft, that pushes it up, or pulls it up, I don't know which it should be. I don't know your words for many of those things, Larry, dear, so I cannot tell you very well. Maybe the Princess"—she turned toward the Princess, but Larry pulled her back. "Never mind, now—kid." Sanna squeezed his arm tenderly. "How do they keep from running into each other in the shafts, colleen? 'Colleen' is just a word that means a real nice little girl." A little tug at his arm, and Larry kissed her full on the lips, without so much as looking to see who was about. "How do the cars going down keep from smashing into those coming up, Sanna, or into other cars going down ahead of them that may have stopped, or that may not be going so fast?"

She hesitated a moment, thoughtful. "Oh! I see what you mean, my dear. There is a thing on each car that tells just how far away any other car is, so if one is getting too close to another, he goes—goes slow. And, you see, the cars never go down and up the same shafts. Some shafts are for going down and some for coming up, and when a car gets to the bottom there is a way to put it from the down shaft to an up one. At each five-mile level the cars stop and let off anybody wishing to get off. Sabe?"

Larry's head jerked around quickly to the girl, grinning. "Yeah, I sabe, kid, but where did *you* get that word?"

"Why, I heard you say it several times, Larry, and I thought it meant to understand. Is it not a—a nice word?"

"O yeah, sure—sure it's a nice word. I just——"

"What does the word 'kid' mean, Larry?"

"Kid?" Larry hesitated, which was unusual for his quick wits. "Why," he finally replied gravely enough, "'kid' is just another word like 'colleen,' that means a sweet little girl."

She looked up trustingly into his honest blue eyes. Just what the humorous glint she saw there might portend she could not say, but she knew that she instinctively trusted the young Irishman. "I like you, Larry, dear," she confided. "You say always such nice things. I like to hear you say nice things." She turned, then, to the Princess. "Are we to take a car or an elevator, colleen?"

Harding looked at her with a surprised grin, shifting his gaze suspiciously at Larry. The Princess looked a question.

"A colleen is a real nice girl," she enlightened the Princess.

THEY passed along the lines of elevator shafts to the middle of the great cavern. Here a heroic group of statuary rose to a height of fully fifty feet. They stopped to examine it. The group consisted of seven men, splendid nude figures, holding strange implements in their hands. All were looking towards the same spot—tensely, it was apparent—and there was an unmistakable expression of despair on their faces.

"Excellent work, Altara, darling," Harding commented admiringly. "What does it symbolize—or mean?"

The faces of the two girls had become suddenly grave, and they made odd little movements of their hands to their faces. The two men thought from their attitude they had stumbled upon something of a religious nature.

"It is a sad story, Freddie, my dear one," the Princess replied soberly. "These men were working running new tunnels for dwellings below the lowest levels, when they suddenly broke through into great natural open spaces, which they found were inhabited by swarms of terrible unknown beasts. That was all a very great many years ago. All but one of them had gone into the place and away from the mouth of their tunnel before they knew there were beasts there, and the beasts cut them off so that they could not get back. They knew at once that if the beasts were to get out, they might kill the people. So they called to the man who had stayed in the mouth of the tunnel to blow up the tunnel quickly, and told him the reason. This man could not see the beasts from where he was. So he sent out by his pocket radio instrument a message of

explanation and farewell, warning them to send other men down quickly to block up the outlet securely. Then, refusing to save himself, while he knew that his comrades must be killed by the beasts, he blew up the mouth of the tunnel, himself remaining inside. So that is why their statue is here, because we know they gave their lives for their people. Sometimes the people in the lower levels can hear the voices of the beasts, even now." She shuddered deeply. "Once I heard them myself, and I cannot tell you what fearful— May I wait till some other time to tell you more, Freddie, my dear one?"

Just as the party was about to take a car for their trip through the first level, messengers arrived, and the King was called away, leaving the two men of Terra and the two girls of Arelli to take the trip alone. The King said he would go down on an elevator and join them at the first level as soon as he was at liberty.

After the King had left them, a score of the barbarians of the Doerfel Mountains came in, laughing and joking noisily among themselves. With them was the Ylisaean, Ullo. The barbarians gave no attention to the smaller party, but Ullo, while saluting the Princess respectfully enough, gave her a look on turning away that Harding did not like.

"Who is that fellow, Altara?" he asked his princess-wife.

She hesitated a moment before replying, looking with distaste after the receding forms. "I do not know, Freddie, what are the customs of Terra about love and marriage. I do not want to displease you, but Ullo I have known from my childhood, and I have never liked him. You know the capital was formerly in Ylisae, and of course we lived there. In fact I was born there. Ullo has always wanted me, and has demanded many times of my father and the council that they give me to him, in spite of my refusal. He is the son of Uffuldo, a man of Ylisae, who is very great and powerful, and very evil, too. Uffuldo was angry because my father moved the capital from Ylisae, where it had been for hundreds of years—in fact for many thousands of years. My father said the capital ought to be on the side of Arelli where Marelli could be seen, which you know it never can be from Ylisae. Also he has long planned to bring the people back to the surface to live again—some of them now, and in time all of them—and he felt that this place you call Copernicus was the best place to begin. He liked the people better here. They are more loyal to him and his plans. And then, too, of course, he wanted to be here because he would never give up his hope of communicating with the people of Marelli and for that reason, too, he wanted to be in sight of them. I am glad he did not give up, my loved one. Uffuldo and his followers said if we got in touch with your people, they would do us harm, which is not true, I think." She gave Harding a shy, sweet smile, with a touch of mischief in it. "They said you might come here with armies and perhaps terrible beasts of some kind, such as those far beneath the surface of our planet, and set the beasts on us to destroy us. He even claimed to have evidence that my father was already in league with your people, and persuaded many that it was true. He also said that even if you did not destroy us, you would carry our women away for slaves." There was again the sly sweet mischief, as she concluded, "I think it may be that Uffuldo was right about your carrying our women away.

"Well, on account of all those things, Uffuldo tried to put my father off the throne. The last time he nearly succeeded. Perhaps he would have, had not Ullo, in trying to persuade me, betrayed important secrets, just to show, I think, how important he was, which enabled us to be ready for them and prepared to defeat them. In fact, he told me he would betray his father's forces to us if I would go with him. When I refused he was very angry, and swore that he and his father would put my father off the throne first, and then he would have me, but not—not—as he should."

Harding nodded grimly. "I understand, sweetheart. Well, he won't, so don't worry about Ullo or his dad."

"Ullo is a friend of the barbarians," the Princess went on, "and is said to spend much of his time among them—and to have taken several of their girls in—in—against their will, which is contrary to our laws. You know, Freddie, that our girls can not be given against their own will." Again there was a sly smile.

"Oh, then the people are not monogamists?" There was disappointment in his voice. He had to explain the word first.

"Oh, yes, Freddie. That is what I am telling you. They have been as far back as we know. That is our law. The way the barbarians do is against our law, but the barbarians are—well, they are barbarians, and do not acknowledge the rule of my father, and he has too much to think about to care to bother with them. They have no real marriage at all, we are told, but carry off any woman they can by force or tricks, and when they want to, they sell or trade their women to other men. Sometimes parents even sell their daughters at auction, and there are many other very terrible things they do. I like not the presence of Ullo here with the barbarians at this time, Freddie. He—he told me that he would have me and when my beauty was gone, or he was tired of me, he would give me to the barbarians for their—for them to play with. I hope you will forgive me if I do wrong to speak of such things, my dear."

Harding put an arm about the troubled girl and kissed her.

"Let us wait here a bit until they are gone," suggested Larry. "No use taking unnecessary chances."

FITTING word and action, he began asking questions about the things of interest, slowing their pace. The tunnel which Ullo and his barbarians would take for their home left the amphitheatre just to the south of the center opposite the entrance from the center. They had passed the lovers along the north side of the banks of elevators, and turned a little to the left. The lovers, therefore, turned northward and while talking had approached the northerly side of the great cavern. When Larry began to interest himself in the features of the place, they found themselves in front of a line of pictures running in a wide band from a few feet above the floor, unbrokenly up the curving walls to the roof far above. Larry's chief object had been to make delay until the barbarians had gone, and yet without the appearance of doing so; as a consequence his questions had been at first aimless.

"Do you know what land this is?" he asked, pointing out the outlines of an island or continent just above their heads.

Neither of the girls knew. "You see," explained Altara Harding, "the pictures in the places nearest the surface are usually the ones first made—at the time the people first began to hew out places to live beneath the surface. They decorated the walls with the scenes and things which interested them at the time. As the time passed and they dug deeper and deeper down, each new generation did the same. So the oldest ones are at the top, and the newer ones further down. As they never fade, not even, I think, in a million years, these should be very old. I do not know how old; perhaps hundreds of thousands of years; perhaps there are others that may have been added later, that are only a few thousand years old—but they are all very old. I have never tried to translate these. We have not been at this crater

long. I could tell you more about those in the crater of Ylisae, where I was born. But all the oldest ones are hard to read, as the language has changed much since the inscriptions with these old pictures were made."

She went nearer and scrutinized the characters about the land Larry had pointed out. "I cannot read these characters very well. This says something about—that—well, that this land was lost. That is funny, isn't it? How could a land get lost?"

"Well, there is water all around it," suggested Harding. "It could have sunk beneath the ocean."

"Yes, that is true," replied Altara indifferently. "I guess that must be it, dear one."

"Look, look!" cried little Sanna, who had been looking at the picture above the one in question. "Do you see way up there? That says 'Marelli,' does it not, Altara?"

"It certainly does, Sanna dear."

Harding and Larry pressed closer. Though they could not read a word of the Arellian writing, they remembered quite well that "Marelli" was the Arellian name for Earth.

"Why, Larry!" exclaimed Harding excitedly. "If that one above doesn't represent the northwest coast of Africa I'm a Chinaman. It certainly does. Africa! And then below it a land that was lost. What do you make of that?"

"Why, I make it," said Larry slowly and thoughtfully, "that the continent shown below is no other than the lost continent of Atlantis. It couldn't mean anything else. Why, there *is* a real find. We—we—why, that must be a picture of Atlantis, made before it sank! Do you realize that? We must get these inscriptions translated. We might learn a lot about ourselves that our own people don't know!"

"We certainly must, Larry, and we will. This is indeed interesting. But—we'll do that some other time. I see the enemy has departed, so I suggest we run along now, and we'll look into this later. There may be other pictures here dealing with Earth, and they would all be prehistorical, too—as far as our history goes."

"Yes, I've been watching those fellows out of my left eye," said Larry. "They ran their car out and left by the tunnel the Princess says leads to their home. They didn't wait for a regular car. So I guess they've gone home all right, and we have nothing further to fear from them."

The two pair of lovers got into one of the small cars, then, and Larry, a born mechanic, watched the Princess as she took her place at the controls and started it in motion. After a short distance he insisted on relieving her. As the way ran downward, there was little to do for the time being but regulate the brake pressure.

They went from the amphitheatre into a spacious tunnel, which widened after a while to give space for extensive gardens on each side. In these many were working at irrigation and cultivation. There was a great variety of food plants, some resembling in a magnified way the lichens and mushroom growths of Terra; in fact a modified sort of mushroom was one of the staple articles of food, Altara said. Other vegetables were not unlike the potato, carrot, and similar roots. The Arellians had a special process by which the sunlight was converted into a current, brought in on wires, and reconverted into sunlight. Neither of the girls was able to explain the details of the process. It included some means of storing, which permitted its use during the long Arellian nights as well as the days, and was employed both in gardening and lighting, as well as in heating when necessary.

The homes of the laborers were cut into the cliff-like sides of the cavern at this place, and elevated somewhat above the roadway. These were surrounded with flowers, and looked light, airy, and pleasant. In these larger areas the consciousness of being underground was entirely lost. It was only in the comparatively limited size of the tunnels between that they were reminded at all that they were not on the surface.

Larry slowed the car as they passed, so that they might examine their surroundings. The laborers, recognizing their Princess, ceased their work to salute her with a respect strongly marked with cordiality and fondness, and to stare with friendly curiosity at the strangers from Terra.

For a mile they passed among the gardens, then through another tunnel to a more extensive garden and orchard area. After leaving the latter, the roadway entered a long curve, and came to the village of Tronos, where Altara suggested they stop a little while. The air was warm and the girls left their coats in the car. Altara said such a thing as stealing was almost unknown, and the dwellings were never locked. One might have all the coats or other clothing one liked for the asking, and without any cost, and there was nothing to prevent them from getting coats, precisely like that worn by the Princess, if they so desired. And it was the same with almost everything. The people did not have to pay. They did the work that was assigned to them, and received everything they needed.

At Tronos, an immense space had been hewn out of the solid rock—so great that it was hard to realize that they were not on the surface. Here the dwellings, while built of stone, were not cut into the sides of the cavern, but rose by easy grassed and flowered terraces from the roadway far back to the walls of the chamber. On the third terrace they came to a place where refreshments might be had. This they entered and seated themselves at a small table. A girl waiter approached, saluted the Princess and her companions, and awaited their desires, which Altara presently indicated. Soon they were served with a refreshing drink of fruit juices, and what may for want of a better name be called an ice cream or iced pudding. When Harding asked how he should pay, having no Arellian money, Altara explained that there was no charge for these things, their upkeep being provided for in the same manner as other public institutions. Indeed she was ignorant of the very nature and purpose of money, which was not used anywhere on Arelli.

THE girl Sanna, who chanced to be looking toward the entrance, suddenly started, and her eyes became fixed in something like terror. Larry turned quickly, but could see nothing that might have alarmed her.

"What is it, Sanna dear?" he asked softly, touching her arm.

The others had not seen, and putting her finger on her lips Sanna leaned close to Larry's ear— so close that her sweet scented hair brushed his face. "I am afraid, Larry," she whispered. "I do not want to alarm the Princess, but I am sure I saw that terrible Ullo just outside there. He dodged away so quickly I could not be sure, but I *am* sure it was he, Larry. His presence here can not——"

But impulsive Larry was not built for inaction or caution. Instantly he was on his feet and dashing to the entrance. But no Ullo was in sight, or anything that looked alarming, although he ran round the building, and he began to think that Sanna had imagined seeing Ullo.

"What's all the excitement, Larry?" Harding wanted to know. "Is the place afire?"

Larry told them. "I'd be sorry to worry you, Princess," he apologized, "but from what you have told us about this Ullo bird, it is no time for picayunishness.

If he and his crowd of barbarians took the through line for home, what is he doing here now?"

The Princess did not seem much impressed, and was inclined to laugh off the whole incident. "I am the Princess of Arelli, Larry," she declared, inconsistently with her former fears. "He would not dare harm me here," she declared, with a little upward tilt of her chin. "There is not a person in Tronos, or hardly in all the region here, who would not lay down his life for me. All the barbarians who were here would not be enough to cause fear. I did not see fifty of them in all. They could do nothing. Even if they captured us they could not get us away from here."

"Nevertheless," Larry insisted anxiously, "I think we should turn back at once, or at least take a guard with us. I haven't even a gat. Have you, Mr. Harding?"

Harding had not, as a matter of course, and the Princess said the people of Tronos would have no weapons, since they were not allowed to carry them, and would have no occasion in any case. Accordingly, it was at last decided to go on to the next village a few miles down, where there was an elevator station, and there they would be guided by events. The Princess said it would only spoil their party to have a guard along.

About half way to the next village was a place where, because of the steep fall in altitude in a short space, where there was not room for a turn, they were compelled to run the car upon a long "Y" or switchback. The approach to this switchback was on a "blind" turn, which hid it from observation until they were nearly upon it. The place was usually well lighted, as was all of the underground region, and there was a little catch of anxiety in Altara's voice as she spoke of the fact that the lights about the switchback were much dimmer than usual, leaving the switchback itself in the shadows. But it was too late to turn back then, as the roadway was so steep and the car was already almost at the switchback. Altara, who was driving, slowed the car as it ran upon the switchback, and brought it to a standstill. It was then necessary, of course, for them to drive from the other end of the car, which became the forward end—since there was no room to turn the car around.

No sooner had the car reached a halt than a score of barbarians, headed by Ullo, sprang from behind a projecting rock and rushed the car, which was a light and entirely open affair. The great burly fellows leaped upon Harding and Larry, and in spite of the superior muscular strength of the latter and their savage resistance, their enemies outnumbered them so greatly that they were dragged from the car and clubbed into unconsciousness. The tunnel way at the switchback was evidently passing through some great natural cavern, for the roadway was built on a grade, and there was a chasm below it. The barbarians were for throwing the men over the cliff, but Ullo, who seemed in haste and some trepidation, gruffly ordered them securely bound and left where they were. The two girls they seized and carried away.

Larry was the first to recover consciousness. He sat up on the ground, looked up dazedly at the roof of the tunnel, at the rock walls on every side, and a puzzled look flashed an instant in his eyes. He shook his throbbing head to clear his wits, tried to rub his eyes, and found that his hands were bound. He sat a moment, looking down at his hands, swaying dizzily and trying to remember what had happened. Then he saw Harding lying nearby, still unconscious, and the whole adventure quickly came back to him. He called to Harding, but the only answer he got was the hollow echo of his own voice from the walls of the cavern. Finding that Harding failed to respond to his calls, he managed laboriously to roll over and over to him. He lay his head to his heart and found that he was alive, for which he thanked God with Irish devoutness. He then began working feverishly at his own bonds, and was just getting them loosened when Harding groaned, rolled half way over, and opened his eyes. Larry soon had them both free.

They got unsteadily to their feet, half way supporting each other, Harding still dazed and groggy.

"What happened, Larry? Did the ship"—Then he caught sight of the cavern walls and rubbed his eyes. "How did we—where are"—he saw the car standing nearby, where the Princess had stopped it to make the turn.

"We were attacked and knocked out by the barbarians, Mr. Harding." He shook Harding's arm. "Try to pull yourself together and remember. We must do something. The girls are—they have carried them off. We must do something quickly if we are ever to see them alive again. That damned Ullo——"

That brought Harding out of his daze. "They've—carried off—*the Princess*, you say?"

"Yes, Mr. Harding, and Sanna, too. We must hurry and get word to the King. He'll know better how to go at it. Good God, what a situation! Here we are, miles and miles under the ground and we don't know a thing about these cursed tunnels here, and——"

Harding's head was clearing rapidly. He held up a hand. "Wait, Larry, boy! Let us do a little thinking first. Do you know which way they went? How much did you see?"

"The barbarians and that Ullo animal, and then—stars."

IT was indeed a situation. Here they were, two strangers from another world a quarter of a million miles away across the void; dropped suddenly the day before upon a foreign body and sunk miles beneath its surface in a narrow tunnel, knocked out and discarded, hurt and bleeding beside a strange highway; unfamiliar with the people, the language, the local conditions, the ways of going about things; and their dearest treasures torn from them by a band of ruthless savages, to whom these young girls would be but playthings to ravish amongst them and cast away spent and broken. Far better had they fallen the prey of a pack of ravenous wolves. They must rescue them, yes, but by what way and means? They must rescue them quickly, or it would be too late; but how rescue them quickly when they did not know the first thing about how to proceed? The delay of an hour might spell their undoing.

It was thoughts such as these that aroused them to action. They decided that they would be about half way between Tronos and Eppah—Tronos above and Eppah below, and that they would make better time going downhill. The car they had discovered at once had been disabled so it could not be run. There would be a telephone or some way of communication. Yes, they would have to go on down to Eppah, and see what they could find there. They lightened the adjustment of their gravitors and started on in great ten-foot leaps. But by the time they had fallen a few times, once or twice nearly going off into the chasm, they saw this would not do, so they turned the knobs and increased their weight to a more stable point. Between one thing and another they were nearly an hour getting to Eppah.

But here luck was at once with them, for they found this was the very station at which the King was to have joined them. He was waiting, and they told him their story quickly. Though stunned by the news, he showed his fitness as a ruler by his swift and efficient action. He leaped to a telephone and first made sure the abductors had not passed through Tronos upward

nor Eppah downward. Then he got the Captain of Guards, and gave orders to have every tunnel out of the Copernicus region closed at a sufficient distance away to make sure of heading off the fleeing culprits. He next ordered a heavily armed guard of fifty men, with extra weapons for himself, Harding, Larry, and fifty of the men of Eppah whom he would gather, to rush to him by elevator at once. This done, he set about gathering the fifty men of Eppah whom he was to employ in the matter, and cars to carry all. While these orders were being executed, he consulted a map or plan of the tunnel highways, at the same time questioning Larry and Harding further.

In less than fifteen minutes the guard had arrived, the citizens gathered and were armed, and they were setting out for the place where the attack had been made. This seemed the most natural place to start their pursuit. The King wasted not an instant at the switchback, but with a glance at a map silently pointed out to the Captain of the Guards the closed gateway leading to an abandoned tunnel. The Captain took from his car a small apparatus, which he set up and trained on the gate, waving the others back a short distance. Then he closed a switch; there was a spitting, hissing sound, gradually increasing to shattering intensity. In a few seconds he turned off the current and there was silence again in the tunnel. The Captain then went up to the gate, tapped it gently, and it crumbled into powder which showered down upon the floor of the tunnel. Inside the gate, he kept the others back still, until he had examined the ground carefully.

It required only a moment for his keen eyes. "This is the way they went," he announced triumphantly. "Their tracks are here. Come."

In several places obstructions had been placed in their way; but they quickly cleared them away, got their cars past, and hurried along the old tunnel. At last they saw a faint glow ahead. The cars were stopped, and the men stole cautiously and silently forward, arms ready, and came to the entrance of a large cavern. Evidently not counting on so swift, if any, detection and pursuit, the barbarians had stopped to eat. A fire had been made, and they were sitting about it eating and drinking noisily. It was the light of the fire which the pursuers had seen ahead. Before they were aware of the presence of their pursuers, the barbarians found their escape cut off and themselves surrounded and called upon to surrender or be destroyed where they sat. Seeing how greatly they were outnumbered, both in men and weapons, they chose the former course.

But a thorough search of the cavern showed no sign of either Ullo or the abducted girls.

The King interrogated the barbarians and all denied any knowledge of Ullo or of any abduction. They had been on their way home, they said, but being strangers to the region had taken the wrong tunnel and had only then been discussing how to set themselves right again. The King wasted not a second with them. He did not even bother to point out to them the plain falsity of their story. By his orders the guardsmen threw them to the floor of the cavern and held them while others carried up rocks and began to pile them around and upon the bodies of the barbarians.

"Since you prefer not to tell the truth, you are of no use to us," said the King sternly.

The horror of the King's evident intent was too great for even their savage spirits. The thought of being buried alive in the cavern and left to rot alive loosened their tongues. They said they would tell all they knew, if their lives would be spared.

The King assured them that, while their offense was a capital one, and merited being thrown to the beasts, yet he believed Ullo to be the real culprit, and if they spoke the truth he would spare their lives, and if they gave any information which led to the recovery of the girls unharmed, he would be inclined to deal lightly with them.

Thus reassured, they said that Ullo had promised them that in return for delivering the Princess into his hands he would assist them in stealing other girls of Copernicus for themselves, and give them a large amount of goods. Later, he would also turn Sanna over to them, if she were included in the capture.

At this mention of Sanna, Larry's face went white with fury, but the King restrained him by a firm hand on his shoulder.

The barbarians said Ullo had learned about the old abandoned tunnel, and secretly caused another one to be excavated from it to the main tunnel leading between Copernicus and Tycho—the way that led to their own homes in the Doerfel Mountains, and also to the home of Ullo in the Crater Ylisae, beyond the south pole. They had supposed they were to travel together until they reached the Tycho tunnel, where another band of their countrymen would be waiting for them; but at the last moment Ullo had changed his plans and ordered them to go on ahead to the cavern, wait for an enna and an erro, then go back to the surface the way they had come and show themselves there as if they had merely been making a trip below. They were then to proceed home in the usual manner.

They said that Ullo did not mean to take the captives to his own home at Ylisae, but to their own home in the Doerfels. They knew nothing else of his plans. Asked where Ullo's secret road joined the main tunnel to Tycho, they said they did not know, as they had never been over it, but they thought it was not far ahead.

FEELING that the barbarians had told all they knew, the King prepared to take further steps, delivering them fettered into the hands of the Eppah men for imprisonment, and warning them again at the same time that if their story proved untrue they would be "sent down to the beasts." Even their fierce, hard faces blanched at the threat.

Having disposed of the prisoners for the time being, the King used a pocket radiophone to send out further orders. He received the information that nothing had yet been seen of Ullo on the main tunnel to Tycho, where a heavy guard was stationed not far from the point where he judged Ullo would emerge from the secret road. They then took the abandoned road, with the idea of following Ullo out to the main highway, where it was hoped that by the time of their arrival he would have been captured and the girls rescued.

They traveled slowly and cautiously, in view of possible ambush. Not far from the cavern where the barbarians had been found they came without incident into the new tunnel made by Ullo, and continued along it to its junction with the main highway. As they approached the latter, they redoubled their caution, in view of what the barbarians had said about their countrymen intending to wait there for Ullo. But they found no trace either of the barbarians or the fleeing Ullo. Neither had the guards, to whom they radioed on both sides of the junction.

This meant either that the prisoners had deceived them, or, what seemed more likely, that Ullo had deceived the prisoners as to his real plans—unless, indeed, they had passed some concealed entrance to another secret tunnel, which they felt was not probable.

The problem of rescue had become a difficult one.

"I do not believe Ullo can escape, Freddie," said the King. "The tunnel to Tycho is guarded all the way. Every other tunnel leading from the province is also guarded. They cannot, therefore, have left the prov-

ince. Every local road about the province is also watched and patrolled constantly in many places. I have scattered thousands of men everywhere. If they are still in the province, they will be found sooner or later, but—Freddie—the question is——"

"—will they be found in time to prevent violence to the Princess?" finished Harding.

"And Sanna," supplemented Larry, anxiously.

The King nodded grimly to each.

A patrol came up the tunnel from the south, reported, and turned back. Shortly after another from the north did likewise. Harding looked back at the entrance to the secret road from which they had just emerged into the main highway.

The King's eyes followed Harding's. "Yes, Freddie, that is what I was thinking."

"Then let us go back and have another look," suggested Harding, starting toward the cars. The King thought a moment, then nodded and followed him, and the guardsmen prepared to do the same. Larry Donelan hesitated, considering. He started to speak, then reconsidered and slowly followed them into the car.

"Look here, gentlemen," he said, "let us think this over a bit before we go too far. It's almost a cinch—almost sure—that this Ullo bird started out with the girls along that abandoned road; but it isn't *quite* certain. We thought he had because he held us up at the entrance to it, at the switchback, and because we saw when we got into the place that somebody had gone that way, and we found those heathen in the cavern, and of course a bit because things so far tallied with what the heathen told us, and we found Ullo's new tunnel. Also because they didn't pass through Eppah or Tronos, and we could think of no other way they could have gone but by the abandoned tunnel. Now, if they did leave the way we think, they are either somewhere along the course of this new tunnel which Ullo is supposed to have made, or else in the abandoned tunnel, or they have left it at some place we missed. But if Ullo never took Sanna and the Princess through that entrance into the abandoned tunnel, but sent the heathen that way to delay pursuit—to mislead us in case we found the abandoned tunnel and them, then they may have had another way out besides going through Eppah or Tronos. So there are the two things we have to remember."

"That's quite true, Larry," agreed Harding, "but in either case they would be cornered—either in the province or as they leave it."

"May be so, and may be no," doubted Larry. "Ullo may have prepared some place where he can stay right here under our noses till the pursuit is over and he thinks it's safe, expecting then to sneak out and get away—maybe with the help of some one he has planted right amongst us. Anyway, it's worth figuring. So I suggest we check up thoroughly as we go along."

And so they did. But though they scrutinized every foot of the tunnel between the junction and the cavern where they had found the barbarians, and though another band to whom the King had radioed likewise scrutinized every foot of the tunnel from the switchback inward toward the tunnel of the barbarians, when the two parties met at that tunnel, they had neither found any trace of Ullo and his prisoners nor any sign of a place where they could have gone out of the tunnel by another way. They arrived at the cavern puzzled and more than ever alarmed over the fate of their loved ones. Time was passing, and time was the one fatal factor in their hard problem. Evidently Ullo was more clever than they had given him credit for.

They retraced their way to the point of attack at the switchback, and stopped there to consult further.

Again it was Larry's fertile, quick thinking that came forward with another suggestion. "I have been thinking of something else," he said, turning to the King. "How about the surface, Your Majesty?"

"The surface? I don't understand, Larry."

"I mean the surface of the planet. Couldn't that be done? Don't you ever travel on the surface at any time? Haven't you any way of traveling on the surface?"

THE King looked startled, then thoughtful. "Why, I suppose—it might be done, yes. I hadn't thought of that, because the surface is practically an unknown country to us. There are surface roads, very good ones, but they haven't been used for hundreds or even thousands of years—never at all by the present generations. Possibly they could be. The roads are there, certainly. History tells us that when the people first began to withdraw from the surface and go below to live, they continued to get their food from the surface for a long time. The surface became unfit for the people before it did for vegetation. At first they grew but little food down below. They had to learn how to do it. That was before they had learned the secret of artificial sunlight. At first the people went down into the craters to live. The air was good there longer, it seemed, than it was on the surface. There were no airlocks at first. From the craters they began running tunnels into the sides downward where the air was still better, and gradually they went deeper and deeper as it became necessary to make room for more and more of the people. That is how it came about that surface roads were built out in all directions from the craters, so as to cultivate and bring in the crops. Later, as our food-growing was transferred below, the roads became disused, and now they do not connect with anything. The tunnels that ran from the surface to the bottoms of the craters were all sealed to keep the air from escaping from the craters through them, and—because there was no longer any use for them."

"But," interrupted Harding, "one of these tunnels might have been opened again, and access provided to the surface, and—I suppose when the people were obtaining food from the nearly airless surface they had to have air-tight cars and air-charged suits of some kind to wear."

The King nodded. "Of course, Freddie."

"And it wouldn't be very hard for Ullo to do the same, would it? He could easily have provided the equipment. It seems to me Larry's suggestion is our best chance now."

"Yes, Freddie," assented the King, "that may be true, but how are we to find out what one of the many tunnels was used to get to the surface? And even if we——"

Larry spoke up quickly, giving his thigh a disgusted slap. "Why, what a bunch of fools we are! I beg your pardon, Your Majesty—I mean——"

"That is all right, Larry. Do not apologize. Kings can be as foolish as anyone. Go ahead, go ahead."

"Why, if they left by one of the old tunnels to the surface, they left from this very tunnel right here between Eppah and Tronos, of course. We know we were here when they attacked us. We know Ullo himself was here, because Freddie and I saw him before they knocked us out. This is the starting point for everything. We've tried the abandoned tunnel and it has failed. Now let us get busy and find some place between Eppah and Tronos where an old tunnel has been opened to the surface."

No records were in existence of the old abandoned tunnels that had gone to the surface, but it was decided more likely that Ullo would have chosen the exit to the surface as near the floor of the crater as pos-

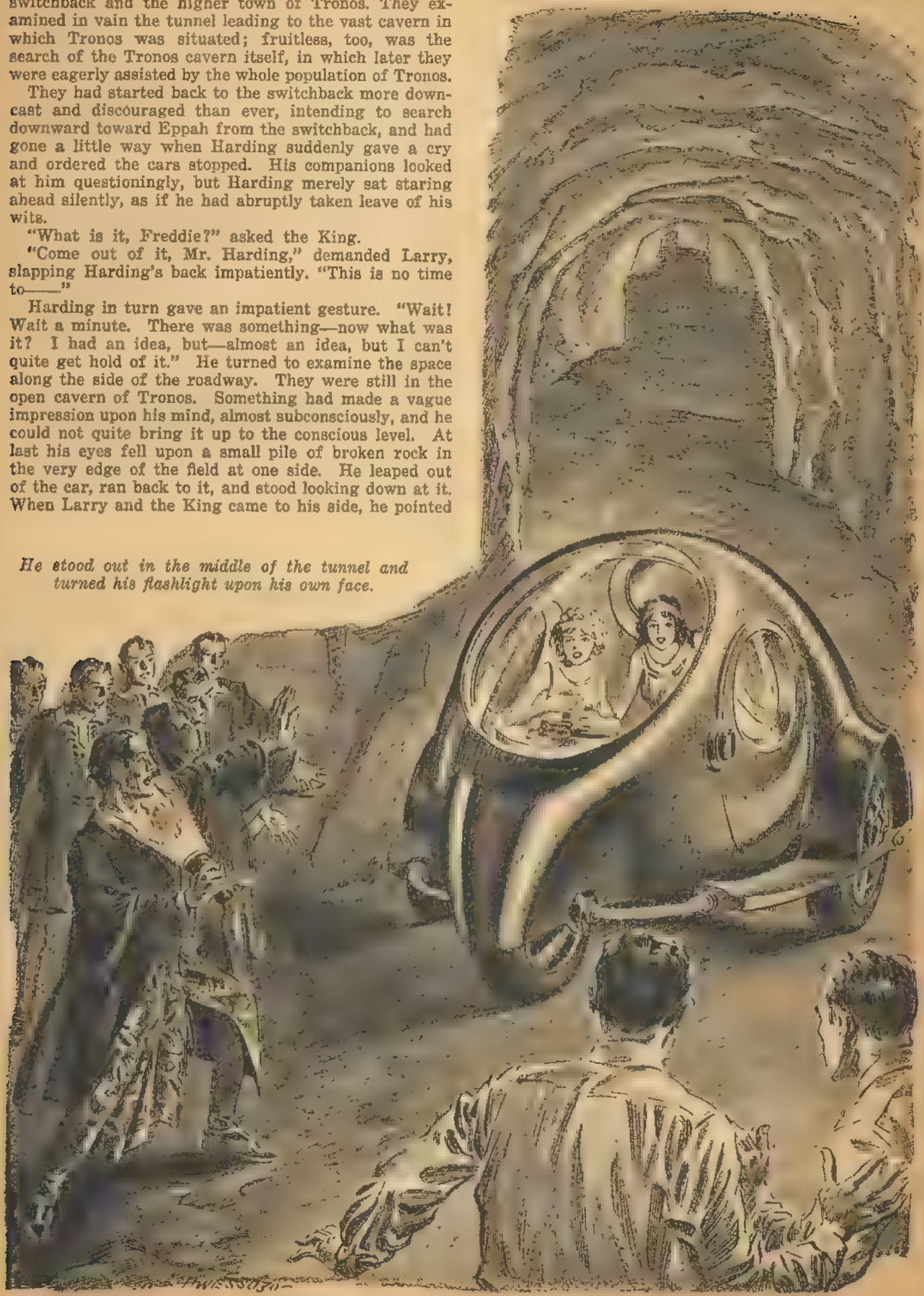
sible. They decided to search first the road between the switchback and the higher town of Tronos. They examined in vain the tunnel leading to the vast cavern in which Tronos was situated; fruitless, too, was the search of the Tronos cavern itself, in which later they were eagerly assisted by the whole population of Tronos.

They had started back to the switchback more downcast and discouraged than ever, intending to search downward toward Eppah from the switchback, and had gone a little way when Harding suddenly gave a cry and ordered the cars stopped. His companions looked at him questioningly, but Harding merely sat staring ahead silently, as if he had abruptly taken leave of his wits.

"What is it, Freddie?" asked the King.

"Come out of it, Mr. Harding," demanded Larry, slapping Harding's back impatiently. "This is no time to——"

Harding in turn gave an impatient gesture. "Wait! Wait a minute. There was something—now what was it? I had an idea, but—almost an idea, but I can't quite get hold of it." He turned to examine the space along the side of the roadway. They were still in the open cavern of Tronos. Something had made a vague impression upon his mind, almost subconsciously, and he could not quite bring it up to the conscious level. At last his eyes fell upon a small pile of broken rock in the very edge of the field at one side. He leaped out of the car, ran back to it, and stood looking down at it. When Larry and the King came to his side, he pointed



He stood out in the middle of the tunnel and turned his flashlight upon his own face.

down at it. "What's that?" he asked, seeming still as if in a daze.

Larry's mind leaped to the desired connection first, while Harding was striving in his more deliberate and orderly reasoning for the elusive point. The young Irishman slapped Harding's back. "That's it, Mr. Harding! That's it! You've hit it!" His eyes went up from the pile of rock in a vertical line to the ceiling of the cavern, far above.

The King was puzzled, and Harding himself even was still groping.

"That pile of rock doesn't belong there, does it?" Harding asked the King. The King shook his head. "No, it does not, of course. But it is not important right now, is it? Why should we bother about such a little irregularity at such a time? It may have fallen from the ceiling. That happens at times."

"You're damn right it fell from the ceiling!" cried Larry. "But what made it fall?" He pointed down. "Don't you see the fresh marks of some tool? That's the answer to our problem. It didn't just fall of its own accord. It's been cut loose, and allowed to drop by accident. Come!"

Larry was swiftly turning the lever on his gravitors, and was soon floating up toward the ceiling of the Tronos cavern. The idea came to the King and Harding at the same time, and they followed him upward.

In the roof of the cavern, precisely in a vertical line from the pile of tool-marked rock which Harding had noticed below, they immediately found a cleverly concealed opening into an old and forgotten tunnel that sloped sharply upward. The air in this tunnel was not very good, but sufficient had made its way in from below so they could breathe. In a little while they came into what was quite evidently one of the old main tunnels to the surface, and it did not take them long to find evidence of its recent use. They made their way along it a distance toward the surface; but the air soon became too thin to breathe, and they were about to return for the necessary air-tight protective suits, when Harding suddenly held up his hand.

"Listen!" They all listened but could hear nothing. "I thought sure I heard a sound up ahead in the tunnel," said Harding, "but—I guess I must have been mistaken."

THEY turned around and started back. This time it was the King who stopped them. "Listen!" he commanded, stopping dead in his tracks. "I, too, thought I heard something. I think we had better wait a moment and make sure, since we can't go any further up the tunnel."

In another minute they all heard a slight rattling or rumbling sound up the tunnel ahead of them, and soon a peculiar-looking car came into sight around a curve in the tunnel, making rapidly toward where they stood. They stepped back quickly and flattened themselves against the wall of the tunnel in the shadow cast by the lights of the car. As the car was abreast of them the King quickly flashed his light through the heavy glass window of the car, and leaped forward to cry out something in the Arellian tongue. He then stood out in the middle of the tunnel and turned his flashlight upon his own face, so that the occupants of the car would know with whom they had to deal, for the King had recognized the occupants of the car. And what he had seen was the Princess of Arelli at the controls with little Sanna sitting beside her.

The car came to a skidding halt, and they rushed forward just in time to catch the air-door as it swung back and the Princess leaped out, followed by Sanna.

The Princess kissed her father and resigned herself, sobbing happily, to Harding's arms. Larry and Sanna flew together like steel to a magnet, and clung as if they would never let go again. It was some moments before they got to explanations; then——

"Ullo is dead," said Altara simply. "Something went wrong with the gear of the car—which as you can see is an old surface car—and Ullo got out through the air-door to fix it, but his suit leaked air, and he just dropped down dead. And so"—she wrinkled her adorable nose roguishly up at Harding— "so having nowhere else to go, we came back."

It was a classic for brevity, but it told the story. They abandoned the surface car where it stood, and soon had rejoined the guard in the Tronos cavern down below, the King having radioed the joyous news ahead.

"What about the barbarians?" her father asked his daughter, as they came out into the Tronos cavern. But the girls knew nothing more than the others. After the capture, the barbarians and Ullo had talked together out of the hearing of the girls. Ullo had appeared to be giving them instructions. Then the barbarians had all left them but one, who had accompanied them and helped Ullo place them in the surface car and secure them. Then Ullo had shot him down heartlessly and left him lying where he fell. Ullo had then taken them up to the surface, where he started south. He seemed to know the way. Then the car had gone wrong. That was all. They had seen nothing more of any of the barbarians.

Larry was whispering something into Sanna's ear, and the girl was blushing very prettily; but she laughed and nodded her head vigorously.

"Your Majesty," spoke up Larry, "I'm not going to take any more chances. I don't know how folks get married here on Arelli, but——"

Without a word the King took a small book from his pocket, made a note of names, place, and time, and Larry and Sanna signed.

"And when can we get married?" demanded Larry, as the King turned to go on, "and where do we go to have the ceremony performed?"

The King smiled down at Larry humorously a moment. "You're already married my boy," he said, patting the Irish lad's shoulder paternally. He held out the little book containing the entry in the Arellian script. "Read it to your husband, Sanna, my dear."

The new wife read the one word "Ansatta," followed by the time, place, and signatures. "'Ansatta' is our word for 'married'" she told him. "His Majesty has honored us, Larry. He usually marries only the royalty, but——"

"Ansatta!" repeated Larry rapturously. "Sure an' 'tis a bee-oo-tiful worrrd!" and he embraced his bride again.

"I will record you among our royal marriages," said the sovereign of all Arelli—"right under Freddie's and Altara's."

As the car slowed to stop at Tronos, the Princess leaned over to whisper at length into her father's ear. He smiled and hesitated. "*Will* you, daddy?" she insisted, shaking his arm teasingly, "I'm sure she'd just love it."

"Yes, yes, your royal highness," the King capitulated, "I suppose I will if you wish it. What can a mere King do when——"

Altara clapped her hands delightedly, as the car gathered speed again and shot toward the floor of the crater above.

It was midnight on Terra when the connection was established, and Billy Upton, Mercedes, Merriam, and President Gonzalez had long been waiting impatiently.

"O, Mercedes, darling," exclaimed the Princess of Arelli, when greetings and tidings had been exchanged, "what *do* you think? Larry was just married to Sanna, one of our Arellian girls. Daddy just married them, as

he did Freddie and me, you know, only Freddie was on Marelli at the time and I was here, but it doesn't make any difference under our laws, and—O, Mercedes, daddy's promised to marry you and Billy Upton—right now! And after you're married I've such a lot to tell you about a terrible adventure Sanna and I just had. We were captured and carried off by some perfectly frightful barbarians, and Freddie and Larry nearly lost us completely. But first you must be married before I'll tell you another word. You'll be recorded in the royal marriages of Arelli." She seized her father's arm and dragged him forward. "Gone on, daddy, hurry!"

THE princess stopped, out of breath. Billy Upton was thought by some to have blushed, but it may have been only the glare of Arelli on the screen. But whatever the truth of the matter, it is certain Mercedes Gonzalez de Montiel y Santander was looking daringly at the man she had decided on beneath the moon's rays on the good ship Umpalla. "I have to get Billy's consent first, Altara, darling," she laughed. "He hasn't asked me yet, so I guess I'll have to ask him, though I don't think it's quite regular here."

Billy Upton's answer was to seize the Spanish-American girl in his arms in no uncertain grasp and give her their first kiss—or, at least, the first that President Gonzalez had known anything about.

"But where do *I* come in?" asked the President.

The little Mercedes threw her arms about his neck. "Why darling, you are to help His Majesty marry us. You're President of Peru, and you know quite well you can get away with anything you want to. You're both going to do it. I want Billy nailed down tight. You will, won't you, daddy?" She shook her father's arm teasingly.

The President of Peru threw up his hands and surrendered. "Yes, yes, your royal highness, I suppose I will if you wish it. What can a mere President do when——"

So it was done.

"I suppose," said the President of Peru, winking at the King of Arelli, "I should be thankful to be rid of such a little vixen. I must say I'm sorry for you, Billy."

"I will record it among our royal marriages, Mr. President," said Arelli's King.

"And I," said Peru's President, "will cause the proper record to be made here, Your Majesty, since Mercedes is afraid her—her husband will escape."

"Good night, Mercedes, darling," beamed the Princess. "Congratulations, Mr. Billy Upton. We're coming to see you as soon as ever we can, and you must come across and visit us here, too."

"We surely will, Princess," promised Billy and Mercedes, in chorus.

"Well, good night."

"Good night. Good night."

THE END

Monsters of the Ray

By A. Hyatt Verrill

(*Continued from page* 389)

it stretched the glistening, varnish-like pathway made by one of the monsters of the ray. Harris had realized he could not escape, he knew—he must have known—that if I destroyed the thing with the ray the explosion would follow. Death was certain in either case, and rather than be devoured, absorbed by that loathsome, awful thing, or be blown to atoms—perhaps mangled and not killed outright by the explosion—he had taken the quicker, more merciful way.

I was still bending over him, tears streaming down my cheeks, when a sound caused me to turn, and I saw two Indians standing beside me.

Of all their people they alone survived. Their presence was like a gift, a blessing from heaven to me. Their companionship saved me from insanity I am sure, and never, without them, could I have escaped from Huara-Yana.

There is little more to be told. With the Indians' help I gave Harris proper and—so I trust—Christian burial. Then, having eaten and rested and in a measure recovered the use of my muscles, we started on that long and terrible journey across the mountains from Huara-Yana to Tucin.

Days were occupied in that trip, but eventually we arrived at the little village and there, bidding farewell to the two men who had stood by me so faithfully, I secured mules and guides and in due time reached the railway and civilization.

Far back in the heart of Andes, amid the massive ruins of a long-past civilization, Frank Ogden Harris sleeps the eternal sleep. As far as the world knows he came to his death through an accident, the explosion of chemicals in his laboratory in Peru. Only two non-committal Indians and myself know the true story of his death and the astounding events that led up to it. If the Indians ever tell of it, their stories will be put down as fables, legends, myths. So, to all intents and purposes, only I, who was a witness of and a participant in those amazing occurrences, can reveal the facts as I have herein related them.

No doubt my story, too, will be scoffed at, ridiculed, declared fiction or the ravings of an overwrought or injured brain, as hallucinations brought on by the explosion of Harris' laboratory.

But if those who scoff and doubt wish proofs, let them go to Tucin. Let them hunt up Chupi-Sara and Lucamo-Tcsi, then let them journey over the Andean summits to Huara-Yana where they will find the ruins of the pre-Incan city, the shattered black arch of Huara-Yana, the débris of the great dyke, the splintered remnants of the platform and the broken instruments and perchance—for I know not if they remain—the great paths of sun-dried slime left by those unspeakable, horrible monsters of the ray.

THE END

HOW TO OBTAIN
A Better Looking Nose!
Improve your personal appearance

My new Model 25 Nose Shaper is designed to improve the shape of the nose by remoulding the cartilage and fleshy parts, safely, and painlessly. This is accomplished thru the very fine and precise adjustments which only my patented Model 25 possesses. Results are lasting. Can be worn at night, or during the day. Money refunded if not satisfied after thirty days' trial. Write for free booklet to

M. TRILETY
Pioneer Nose Shaping Specialist
Dept. 151 Binghamton, N. Y.

Be Financially Independent

WOULDN'T you like to have your own spare-time business? To have an extra independent income in addition to your salary or allowance? To have money to buy the 101 things you've always wanted, but felt you couldn't afford?

Then our easy money-making plan is just what you want. This type of business needs no experience. It has enabled one young man in Ohio to earn $300 in a single month's spare-time. A young Canadian found it paid better than his regular full-time job. Hundreds of high school students and men and women in all walks of life are earning substantial sums this way.

Immediate Profits

What they have done and are doing, YOU CAN DO, TOO! Here is how:

Everyone reads magazines nowadays. Thousands of subscription orders come to us unsolicited. Many are from your own vicinity and might just as well have given you a handsome profit. All around you are people who want to renew subscriptions and order others. As our official representative you could take care of all this business in your neighborhood in spare time and enjoy the handsome profits.

Let us show you how to earn as high as $3.00 an hour. Your profits start as soon as you do. Mail coupon for free outfit now!

Mail TODAY

Mackinnon-Fly Publications, Inc.
Dept. 2208-W, 381 4th Ave.
New York, N. Y.

Without obligation to me, please send me full details of your easy money-making plan.

Name .....

Address .....

City & State .....

Your Viewpoint

The Distinction Between the Ecliptic and the Orbits of Planets—A Very Interesting Communication from Harl Vincent

Editor, AMAZING STORIES QUARTERLY:

In the fall edition of the QUARTERLY there is a letter from James Suiter of Jersey City regarding the inclination of the planet Venus as referred to in my story "Venus Liberated," this letter being followed by editorial comment on this point.

It appears that both Mr. Suiter and the editor are speaking of an entirely different relationship from that spoken of in the story. The figure of 3 degrees 23½ minutes is that generally accepted for the inclination of the plane of Venus' orbit to that of the ecliptic, whereas the figure of 53 degrees as mentioned in the story is an old one for the inclination of the plane of its equator to the plane of the orbit, there being no reference to the ecliptic whatever in this connection. These are quite different matters, the ecliptic being the great circle on the celestial sphere as traced by the sun in its apparent annual motion around the sky and being used as a reference plane in designating the relative motions and positions of the several planets.

The inclination of the plane of the equator to the plane of the orbit is the relationship which affects the climate and seasons of a planet and it was in this connection that Schroter's old figure of 53 degrees was used in the story—this making logical the climate as described. The inclination of the plane of Mars' orbit to the ecliptic is one degree 51 minutes while that of its equator to the orbit is 23 degrees 59 minutes. Similarly, Earth's orbital inclination to the ecliptic is zero while the inclination of its equator to the orbit is 23 degrees 27 minutes. The latter relationship is very uncertain in the case of Venus, due to its unfavorable position for observation and to the difficulty in obtaining a view of the surface through its cloud-filled atmosphere. Schroter's figure has been refuted by many astronomers, but I can not find that it has ever been definitely disproved, so it is probably as good a guess as any. It was therefore very convenient to use in the story.

I must say that this issue of the QUARTERLY is excellent and that the illustrations show a marked improvement over *anything* that has gone before. Wesso's illustrations for "Euthanasia Limited" and "The Other Side of the Moon" were great.

Harl Vincent,
New York City.

(We take great pleasure in giving our readers this letter from Harl Vincent, the author of "Venus Liberated," and other stories published in AMAZING STORIES. We have no comment to make upon it, as the writer makes the cause of the climates very clear, so that it is hard to say anything in addition to his statements. We appreciate his observations on our illustrations.—EDITOR.)

The Much Feared Draft, a "Cri" From the Well Informed

Editor, AMAZING STORIES QUARTERLY:

I have read your July issue with a great deal of pleasure and interest. Especially did the story, "Venus Liberated," appeal to me as unusually full of a well-balanced imaginative power and striking dramatic ability.

I am sorry, however, that Harl Vincent, who is so keen-visioned with reference to the science of the future, should give aid and comfort to one of the most preposterous of the superstitions of the present. The ignorant fear of a so-called "draft" dies hard. As a matter of fact, there is no such thing as a "cold" to the progressive hygienist. There are various common respiratory diseases, none of them caused by "draft," exposure, cold weather, wet feet or any of the other bugbears of the uninformed. They are determined by modern medical science to be infections, the germs being carried on the mouth spray of one infected person to any unfortunate within a radius of a few feet (or a little further in case of a cough or a sneeze). This is the *only* way in which the miscalled colds are carried. Hikers, mountain-climbers, Arctic and Antarctic explorers undergo every sort of extreme exposure without any trace of "colds." This is not because they have any more immunity than others, since these very persons, when moving about in the crowded conditions of city life, catch as many and as severe "colds" as anybody else. There is no more stupid fear than that of an open window. As a matter of fact, those who live in stuffy and overheated rooms in the winter are the ones who suffer worst, as they cling to the kind of atmosphere in which these infections are most easily carried and hardest to escape. Nor does so-called lowered resistance play any part. Those who expose themselves most to cold air and "drafts" are, to say the least, no more subject to infection than others. The name "cold" is unfortunate, as it suggests a false idea to the mind. Many of us are abandoning it altogether, and adopting the suggestion of Dr. William A. Brady, one of the foremost educators in common sense and sanity on this subject, and now refer to these ailments by the general name of the "cri," a word formed of the initial letters of the expression "common respiratory infections."

James F. Morton,
Paterson Museum, Paterson, N. J.

(This letter is very interesting. There will be great difficulty in ridding people of their dread of a draft. On a windy day we never walk a block or go out of the house without encountering a draft. Why it should be evil-working if it comes through a window or door is a mystery. The objection to free circulation of air is perhaps more pronounced in some European countries than here. Muir, in one of his writings, tells of some distinguished visitors to California woods objecting to sleeping out in the open, and tells how he told them virtually that the "night air," as it is curiously termed, was identical with the air in the daytime. Muir lived in the open, feared nothing, not even the silver tips and grizzlies of the west, and has by his writings left a rich legacy to the Pacific Coast. The writer will never forget landing at the foot of the great Muir glacier in Alaska, and looking up at the great river of ice which was flowing so slowly but inevitably down to the sea. It was named from John Muir, the great disciple of "the open."—EDITOR.)

STATEMENT OF THE OWNERSHIP, MANAGEMENT, CIRCULATION, ETC., REQUIRED BY THE ACT OF CONGRESS OF AUG. 24, 1912.

Of AMAZING STORIES QUARTERLY, published quarterly at Jamaica, Long Island, New York, for April 1, 1930.

State of New York, } ss.
County of New York. }

Before me, a Notary Public, in and for the State and county aforesaid, personally appeared T. O'Conor Sloane who, having been duly sworn according to law, deposes and says that he is the Editor of the AMAZING STORIES QUARTERLY and that the following is, to the best of his knowledge and belief, a true statement of the ownership, management, etc., of the aforesaid publication for the date shown in the above caption, required by the Act of August 24, 1912, embodied in section 411, Postal Laws and Regulations, printed on the reverse of this form, to wit:

1. That the names and addresses of the publisher, editor, managing editor, and business managers are: Publisher, EXPERIMENTER PUBLICATIONS, INC., 381 Fourth Avenue, N. Y.; Editor, T. O'Conor Sloane, Ph.D., 381 Fourth Avenue, N. Y.; Managing Editor, Miriam Bourne, 381 Fourth Avenue, N. Y.; Business Managers, none.

2. That the owner is: (If owned by a corporation, its name and address must be stated and also immediately thereunder the names and addresses of stockholders owning or holding one per cent or more of total amount of stock.) EXPERIMENTER PUBLICATIONS, INC., 381 Fourth Avenue, New York City, B. A. Mackinnon and H. K. Fly, both of 381 Fourth Avenue, N. Y.

3. That the known bondholders, mortgagees, and other security holders owning or holding 1 per cent or more of total amount of bonds, mortgages, or other securities are: None.

4. That the two paragraphs next above, giving the names of the owners, stockholders, and security holders, if any, contain not only the list of stockholders and security holders as they appear upon the books of the company but also, in cases where the stockholder or security holder appears upon the books of the company as trustee or in any other fiduciary relation, the name of the person or corporation for whom such trustee is acting, is given; also that the said two paragraphs contain statements embracing affiant's full knowledge and belief as to the circumstances and conditions under which stockholders and security holders who do not appear upon the books of the company as trustees, hold stock and securities in a capacity other than that of a bona fide owner; and this affiant has no reason to believe that any other person, association, or corporation has any interest direct or indirect in the said stock, bonds, or other securities than as so stated by him.

T. O'CONOR SLOANE,
Editor

Sworn to and subscribed before me this 25th day of March, 1930.
(Seal.)

Joseph H. Kraus,
(My commission expires March 30, 1931.)

"She is Yours, Master!"

SICK at heart the trembling girl shuddered at the words that delivered her to this terrible fate of the East. How could she escape from this Oriental monster into whose hands she had been given—this mysterious man of mighty power whose face none had yet seen?

Here is an *extraordinary situation.* What was to be the fate of this beautiful girl? Who was this strange emissary whom no one really knew?

To know the answer to this and the most exciting tales of Oriental adventure and mystery ever told, read on through the most thrilling, absorbing, entertaining and fascinating pages ever written.

Masterpieces of Oriental Mystery

11 Superb Volumes by SAX ROHMER
Written with his uncanny knowledge of things Oriental

HERE you are offered no ordinary mystery stories. In these books the hidden secrets, mysteries and intrigues of the Orient fairly leap from the pages. Before your very eyes spreads a swiftly moving panorama that takes you breathless from the high places of society—from homes of refinement and luxury to sinister underworlds of London and the Far East—from Piccadilly and Broadway to incredible scenes behind idol temples in far off China—to the jungles of Malay, along strange paths to the very seat of Hindu sorcery.

11 Mystery Volumes Packed With Thrills!

Be the first in your community to own these, the most wonderful Oriental mystery stories ever published—books that have sold by the hundred thousand at much higher prices—books you will enjoy reading over and over again. Handsomely bound in substantial cloth covers, a proud adornment for your table or shelf. These are the sort of stories that President Wilson, Roosevelt and other great men read to help them relax—to forget their burdens. To read these absorbing tales of the mysterious East is to cast your worries into oblivion—to increase your efficiency.

Priced for Quick Sale

Printing these volumes by the hundred thousand when paper was cheap makes this low price possible. Only a limited number left. *Don't lose a minute!*

Dept. 84 7-30

Complete Sets Free on Approval

You needn't send a cent. Simply mail the coupon and this amazing set will go to you immediately, all charges prepaid. If it fails to delight you, return it in ten days at our expense.

McKINLAY, STONE & MACKENZIE
114 E. 16th St., N. Y.

Please send me on approval, all charges prepaid, your special set of Masterpieces of Oriental Mystery, in 11 handsomely bound cloth volumes. If after 10 days' free examination I am delighted, I will send you $1.00 promptly and $1.00 a month for only 14 months; when you receive my first payment you are to send me the Gurkha Kukri without extra cost. Otherwise, I will return the set in 10 days at your expense, the examination to cost me nothing.

MAIL TODAY. YOU RISK NOTHING

Name .....

Street .....

City ..... State .....

Occupation .....

Age: Over 21? ..... Under 21? .....

FOR CASH DEDUCT 5%

This rare PREMIUM-YOURS for prompt! action

This famous Gurkha Kukri of solid brass, 6½" long, is an exact replica of that used by the Hindu soldiers in the World War and so graphically described by Kipling in his stirring story "The Drums of the Fore and Aft." Exquisitely wrought on both sides in an ancient symbolical design. A rare curio to have and useful as a letter-opener, a paper-weight or a protection on occasion. A limited quantity on hand will be given without added cost as a premium for promptness—but you must act today!

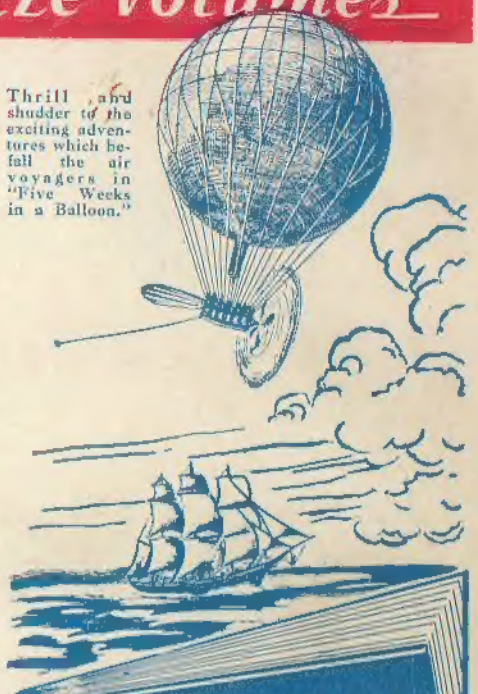
THE INSIDIOUS DR. FU MANCHU SAX ROHMER Vol. 1
THE RETURN DR. FU MANCHU SAX ROHMER Vol. 2
THE HAND OF FU MANCHU SAX ROHMER Vol. 3
DOPE SAX ROHMER Vol. 4
THE YELLOW CLAW SAX ROHMER Vol. 5
TALES OF SECRET EGYPT SAX ROHMER Vol. 6
QUEST OF THE SACRED SLIPPER SAX ROHMER Vol. 7
GREEN EYES OF BAST SAX ROHMER Vol. 8
THE GOLDEN SCORPION SAX ROHMER Vol. 9
BAT WING SAX ROHMER Vol. 10
FIRE TON

McKinlay, Stone & Mackenzie, Dept. 84, 114 E. 16th St. New York City, N. Y.

FREE "The SCIENTIFICTION LIBRARY" Complete in 6 Pocket-Size Volumes

A GIFT FROM AMAZING STORIES

This complete "SCIENTIFICTION LIBRARY" of six volumes will be shipped, prepaid, ABSOLUTELY FREE to everyone who promptly sends us a new, renewal or gift subscription to AMAZING STORIES at the special bargain price listed in the coupon below! Present subscribers may have their subscriptions extended from expiration.



Thrill and shudder to the exciting adventures which befall the air voyagers in "Five Weeks in a Balloon."

These 6 books have been especially chosen by AMAZING STORIES editors as the most interesting works of those three great authors—H. G. Wells, Jules Verne and Edgar Allan Poe. All six books have been compactly printed in attractive pocket-size volumes so that they can be conveniently read while traveling. Each book contains 64 pages and cover, and one long novel or a number of short stories of 11,000 words or more! The entire set consists of the following books:

A VOYAGE TO THE MOON

That world-famous, powerfully dramatic story by Jules Verne which every reader of AMAZING STORIES should enjoy regardless of what sacrifice might be necessary to obtain a copy. It is a story that began with a wager and ended with three men making a miraculous interstellar voyage to the Moon, around it and safely back to earth!

FIVE WEEKS IN A BALLOON

An astounding tale by Jules Verne of a daring balloon voyage across Central Africa, and the weird adventures which befell three strange air travelers!

TALES OF IMAGINATIVE SCIENCE

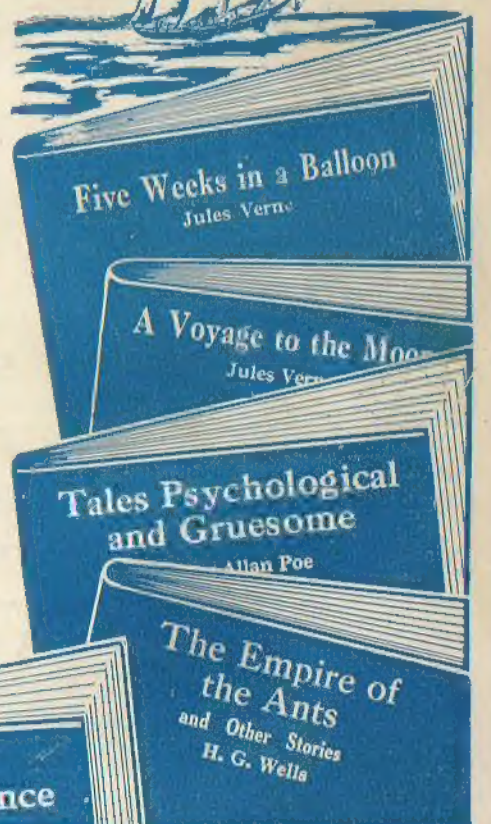
This book contains three of the best stories ever written by that inimitable genius—Edgar Allan Poe. The stories are "A Descent Into the Maelstrom"—"The Thousand-and-Second Tale of Scheherazade" and "Mellonta Tauta."

TALES PSYCHOLOGICAL AND GRUESOME

This pocket volume contains the three complete stories—"William Wilson"—"The Man of the Crowd" and "Berenice," all by Edgar Allan Poe. Here is a different type of Scientifiction, dealing not with ingenious mechanical contrivances, but with the phenomenal results of strange influences upon people's minds.

THE OBLITERATED MAN and THE EMPIRE OF THE ANTS
Both by H. G. Wells

Here are the fantastic fabrications that brought Wells overwhelming fame. Here are thoughts no mortal ever dared to think before. Here are stories so bizarre, so weird, so gruesomely real that only people with nerves of steel dare read them after dark! Here are, in our opinion, the greatest short stories Wells has ever written: "The Empire of the Ants"—"The Cone"—"The Remarkable Case of Davidson's Eyes"—"The Obliterated Man"—"The Plattner Story"—"The Red Room," and "A Vision of Judgment."



Send for Your FREE Complete "Scientifiction Library" NOW!

Because the publishers of AMAZING STORIES MAGAZINES want you to enjoy the very best fiction masterpieces, in addition to those printed in the magazine itself, we have had these greatest stories of Wells, Poe and Jules Verne compactly printed in 6 convenient pocket volumes as a remarkable FREE GIFT for you!

This complete 6-volume "SCIENTIFICTION LIBRARY" will be shipped to you, prepaid, ENTIRELY FREE, on receipt of your order for an 11-months' subscription to AMAZING STORIES (almost a full year) at the special reduced price of only $2.00. You get $2.75 magazine value for only $2 and the "SCIENTIFICTION LIBRARY" ABSOLUTELY WITHOUT COST!

BUT—this is a test offer! We have ordered only a limited number of these remarkable GIFT SETS and cannot guarantee to ship them to subscribers whose orders arrive late. Act Now!

Mail Coupon TODAY!

AMAZING STORIES, Dept. 2208, 381 Fourth Ave., New York, N. Y.

Gentlemen: Please ship me ENTIRELY FREE the Complete "SCIENTIFICTION LIBRARY" (6 Pocket-Size Volumes) postpaid by return mail and enter my subscription to AMAZING STORIES for 11 Months at only $2. I save 75c on the regular price of the magazine and get the "SCIENTIFICTION LIBRARY" *FREE*. I enclose $2 in full payment with the understanding that if not more than satisfied my money will be promptly refunded.

Name .....

Address .....

City and State .....

Present subscriptions will be extended from expiration.